6 Lh. 1
6 Cc

THE

HISTORY

OF

NEW-ENGLAND

Containing an

IMPARTIAL ACCOUNT

OF THE

Civil and Eccleſiaſtical Affairs

Of the COUNTRY

To the YEAR of our LORD, 1700.

To which is added

The PRESENT STATE of *New-England.*

With a *New* and *Accurate* MAP of the *Country.*

AND AN

APPENDIX.

Containing their

Preſent Charter, *their* Eccleſiaſtical Diſcipline, *and their* Municipal-Laws.

By DANIEL NEAL.

VOL. II.

LONDON:

Printed for J. CLARK, *at the* Bible *&* Crown *in the* Poultry, R. FORD, *at the* Angel *in the* Poultry, *and* R. CRUTTENDEN, *at the* Bible *and* Three Crowns *in* Cheapſide.

M DCC XX.

2
1 1 1 30

MVSEVM
BRITAN
NICVM

THE CONTENTS OF THE SECOND VOLUME.

Chap. VIII. THE *Colonies addreſs* K. Charles II. *on his Reſtoration. The Submiſſion of* Alexander *King of the* Wompanoags. *Determinations of a Synod about Baptiſm of Infants. A Liſt of ſilenced Miniſters, that ſettled in* New England *after the Act of Uniformity in* 1662. *The Deaths and Characters of the Revd. Mr.* John Norton, *and* Samuel Newman. *The Expedition of the* Engliſh *Fleet againſt the* Dutch *Settlements on* Hudſon's *River. The Deaths and Characters of* John Endicott, *Eſq; and of the Reverend Mr.* John Wilſon, *and Mr.* Jonathan Mitchel. *A Continuation of the Sufferings of the* Anabaptiſts, *and a Letter of the Nonconformiſt Miniſters in* England *upon that Head. The Complaint of the* Quakers, *with the* New England *Miniſters Reply to them. The Deaths and Characters of the Revd. Mr.* Richard Mather, John Davenport, *and Mr.* Charles Chauncy, *Preſident of the College.* Harvard *College enlarged. Execution of Pyrates. Death and Character of* Thomas Prince, *Eſq;* pag. 331

Chap. IX. *The Riſe and Progreſs of the War with* Philip *King of the* Wompanoags. *He is beſieged in a Swamp, but eſcapes. The* Nipmuck Indians *join him, and rout the* Engliſh *near* Quaboag. *The* Connecticut Indians *riſe, and deſtroy the Frontier-Garriſons. The* Narrhaganſet Indians *break the Peace. The* Engliſh *beſiege their Fort, and after a bloody Fight take it by ſtorm.* Philip's *Stratagem to engage the* Maquas *in the War, accidentally diſcover'd; which brought that powerful Nation upon himſelf. His Men are diſpirited, and deſert.* Philip *betray'd, and kill'd. His Character. War with the Eaſtern* Indians. *The* Engliſh *make a diſhonourable Peace with them. The Fidelity of the* Indian *Converts. The Deaths, and Characters of ſome Conſiderable Perſons in Church and State. King* Charles *takes away their Charter.* p. 376

Chap. X. *Captain* Phips's *Expedition to the* Spaniſh *Wreck. The Riſe of the War between the* Engliſh *and* Indians, *in which the* French *take Part. The Revolution of the Government of* New England. *The Progreſs of the War. Examples of the deplorable Circumſtances of the Priſoners taken by the* Indians. *The Reduction of* L'Acadie *or* New Scotland. *Sir* William Phips's *unfortunate Expedition againſt* Quebec. *The* French *and* Indians *fright away the Frontier-Garriſons, and ravage the Country. The* Engliſh *defeated at* Wheelwright-*Pond. A Truce concluded. The Death and Character of the Reverend Mr.* John Eliot, *the Apoſtle of the* Indians. p. 418

C. 3 X

The Contents.

Chap XI. *Sir* William Phips *returns to* England, *and joins with the* New England *Agents at the Court of King* William *and Queen* Mary, *in ſolliciting the Reſtoration of their Charter. They obtain a New one, not ſo agreeable to the People as their Old one. Sir* William Phips *appointed Governour The War renewed: The memorable Siege of* Wells *Mr.* Increaſe Mather *created Doctor of Divinity.* Pemmaquid-*Fort built. A Peace concluded with the* Indians p 472

Chap. XII. *Of the ſuſpected Witchcrafts of* New England: *The Circumſtances of the Afflicted. Tryals of ſeveral of the Accuſed,* (viz.) *of the Reverend Mr.* George Burroughs, *Clerk,* Bridget Biſhop, *and* Suſanna Martin; *the Number of the Condemned, and of thoſe that were Executed, with their Dying Behaviour. Several of the Accuſed make their Eſcape. Indirect Methods uſed to promote Accuſations. The Recantation of ſome of the Confeſſing Witches; and of the Jurors.* p 495

Chap. XIII. *Sir* William Phips *recalled. His Death and Character. The War with the* Indians *renewed.* Pemmaquid-*Fort taken, and demoliſhed. The Bravery of Mr.* Dunſtan *and his Wife. The Death and Character of* Simon Bradſtreet, *Eſq; The Earl of* Bellamont *arrives Governour, and concludes a Peace with the* Indians. p 542

The Present State of *NEW ENGLAND.*

Chap. XIV. *A General Deſcription of the Country. Of the Climate, Soil, and Product of it. A Deſcription of the Town, and Harbour of* Boſton; *with an Account of the moſt conſiderable Towns and Villages in the ſeveral Counties of* New England. *Of the Inhabitants, their Number, their Religion, their Civil Government, their Cuſtoms, and Manners, their Trade, and Political Intereſts.* p 563

In the *APPENDIX.*

Numb I. *The Charter granted by their Majeſties King* William *and Queen* Mary. p 617

Numb. II. *An Abridgment of the Platform of Church-Diſcipline, agreed upon by the Elders and Meſſengers of the Churches aſſembled in the Synod of* Cambridge *in* New England; *to be preſented to the Churches and General Court, for their Conſideration and Acceptance, in the Year* 1648. p 643

Numb. III. *Heads of Agreement, aſſented to by the United Miniſters, formerly called Presbyterian and Congregational.* p 656

Numb. IV. *An Abridgment of the Laws, and Ordinances of* New England, *to the Year* 1700. p 664

Numb. V. *A Liſt of the Council and General Aſſembly of the Province of the* Maſſachuſet-*Bay, for the Year* 1719. p 710

CHAP. VIII.

The Colonies addreſs King Charles *the Second on his Reſtoration. The Submiſſion of* Alexander *King of the* Wompanoags. *Determinations of a Synod about Baptiſm of Infants. A Liſt of ſilenc'd Miniſters that ſettled in* New-England *after the* Act of Uniformity *in* 1662. *The Deaths and Characters of the Reverend Mr.* John Norton, *and* Samuel Newman. *The Expedition of the* Engliſh *Fleets againſt the* Dutch *Settlements on* Hudſon's *River. The Deaths and Characters of* John Endicott, *Eſq; and of the Reverend Mr.* John Wilſon, *and Mr.* Jonathan Mitchel. *A Continuation of the Sufferings of the* Anabaptiſts, *and a Letter of the Non-Conformiſt Miniſters in* England *upon that Head. The Complaints of the* Quakers, *with the* New-England *Miniſters Reply to them. The Deaths and Characters of the Reverend Mr.* Richard Mather, John Davenport, *and Mr.* Charles Chauncy, *Preſident of the College.* Harvard-College *enlarged. Execution of Pyrates. Death and Character of* Thomas Prince, *Eſq;*

THE Government of *New-England* submitted to all the Changes that were in *England* for the laſt Twenty Years; they owned the Parliament, acquieſced in the Commonwealth, ſubmitted to the Protector, and now at laſt, upon the *Anno* 1661

Anno 1661 the Reſtoration of King *Charles* the Second, they ſent over *Simon Bradſtreet*, Eſq; Secretary of the *Maſſachuſet* Colony, and the Reverend Mr. *John Norton*, with an Addreſs of Congratulation to his Majeſty, upon his Acceſſion to the Throne of his Anceſtors, in which, after Expreſſions of their Loyalty, and Endeavours to juſtify their Conduct towards the *Quakers*, as the Reader has obſerved in the laſt Chapter; they go on to implore his Majeſty's Protection of them in the free Exerciſe of their Religion. "We ſupplicate "your Majeſty (*ſay they*) for your gracious "Protection of us, in the Continuance both of "our Civil and Religious Liberties, according "to the Grantees known End of ſuing for the "Patent conferr'd upon this Plantation by your "Royal Father. Our Liberty to walk in the "Way of the Goſpel, with all good Conſcience "according to the Order of the Goſpel, was the "Cauſe of our tranſporting ourſelves with our "Wives, our little ones, and our Subſtance, "from that pleaſant Land, over the *Atlantick* "Ocean into the vaſt Wilderneſs, chooſing "rather the pure Scripture-Worſhip with a "good Conſcience in this remote Wilderneſs, "than the Pleaſures of *England*, with "Submiſſion to the Impoſitions of the then "ſo diſpoſed, and ſo far prevailing Hierarchy, "which we could not do without an evil Con-"ſcience. —— We are not ſeditious, as to the "Intereſts of *Cæſar*, nor ſchiſmatical, as to "Matters of Religion. We diſtinguiſh between "Churches and their Impurities. —— We could "not live without the publick Worſhip of God, "nor be permitted the publick Worſhip, with-"out ſuch a Yoke of Subſcription and Confor-"mity, as we could not conſent unto without "Sin. That we might therefore enjoy Divine "Worſhip without humane Mixtures, without

"Offence

" Offence to God, Man, and our own Conſci- *Anno*
" ences, We with Leave, but not without 1661
" Tears departed from our Country, Kindred,
" and Father's Houſes into this *Patmos*". Dr. *Mather* ſays, the King received their Addreſs very graciouſly, and ſent back Letters to the *Colony*, ſignifying, that the Expreſſions of their Loyalty and Affection to him were very acceptable; that he would confirm their Privileges, and give them all manner of Encouragement and Protection; but it's plain the Country was not ſatisfied with the Conduct of their Agents; whether they flatter'd the Court too much, or promiſed more for their Country than they ought is uncertain; but when Mr. *Norton* came home about the Month of *September*, his Friends were ſhy of him, and ſome of the People told him to his Face, that he had laid the Foundation of the Ruin of their Liberties, which ſtruck him to the Heart, and brought him into ſuch a melancholy Habit of Body, as haſtned his Death.

Old *Maſſaſoiet* being dead, his two Sons *Wam-* *Anno*
ſutta and *Metacomet* came to the Court of *Pli-* 1662
mouth, deſiring to have *Engliſh* Names given them, whereupon the Court named the elder Brother *Alexander*, and the younger *Philip*. But notwithſtanding their high Pretenſions of Friendſhip to the *Engliſh* at this Time, the Court had Information a few Months after, that *Alexander* the elder Brother was ſoliciting the *Narrhaganſets* to make War upon them, whereupon Major General *Winſlow* was ſent to bring him to *Plimouth*; the Major uſed ſuch Expedition, and Courage in the Affair, that with the Aſſiſtance of no more than ten men, he ſurprized *Alexander* in the midſt of a Croud of Attendants at one of his Hunting-Houſes, and clapping a Piſtol to his Breaſt, commanded him to ſurrender on Pain of Death, and go with him to *Plimouth*; the *Sa-*

chem

Anno 1662. *chem* ſeeing no Remedy, was forced to ſubmit, only requeſting that he might go like a Prince, with his Attendants and Followers, which was granted him: The Major offered him a Horſe, but his *Squaw* and other *Indian* Women being on Foot, he refuſed it. The Governor treated him with great Humanity and Reſpect, but his great Spirit ſwelling with Revenge for the Diſgrace he was under, threw him into a ſlow Fever, which in a little Time coſt him his Life.

HIS Brother *Philip* ſucceeded him, a bold and daring young Man, who thought it his Intereſt nevertheleſs to comply with the Demands of the *Engliſh* at preſent, and accordingly made his Appearance at the Court held at *Plimouth*, *Auguſt* the 6th, and earneſtly deſired the Continuance of that Amity and Friendſhip that had been between the Governor of *Plimouth* * and his deceaſed Father and Brother, "Promiſing at "the ſame Time, for himſelf and his Succeſſors, "to remain Subjects to the King of *England*, "his Heirs and Succeſſors, and truly and exactly "to obſerve and keep inviolable ſuch Conditions "as formerly have been by his Predeceſſors "made, and particularly that he will not at any "Time needleſsly or unjuſtly provoke or raiſe "War with any of the Natives, nor at any "Time give, ſell or diſpoſe, of any Lands (to "him or them appertaining) to any Strangers, "or to any without our Privity or Apppointment, "but will in all Things endeavour to carry "peaceably and inoffenſively towards the *Engliſh*: And the ſaid Court did then alſo expreſs "their Willingneſs to continue with him and "his the aboveſaid Friendſhip, and did on their "Part promiſe, that they would afford them "ſuch friendly Aſſiſtance, by Advice, or other-

* New-England *Mem.* p. 160.

"wiſe

" wife, as they juſtly might: and would require " the *Engliſh* at all Times to carry friendly to- " wards them."

In Witneſs whereof the ſaid *Philip* the *Sachem* hath ſet to his Hand, as alſo his Uncle, and ſundry other of his chief Men witneſſed it.

Witneſs John Sauſaman *The Mark* ⊏ *of* Philip
The Mark ⊏ *of* Francis *alias* Metacom.
the Sachem of Nauſet.

ON the 26th of *January* this Year there was a great Earthquake in *New-England* about the Cloſe of the Evening, and on the 28th of the ſame Month there was another about Nine in the Morning, but neither of them did any conſiderable Damage.

GREAT Debates aroſe about this Time among the *New-England* Miniſters concerning the Right of the Grandchildren of Church Members to the Sacrament of Baptiſm, whoſe immediate Parents had not entred into the Communion: The Importance of this Debate aroſe from hence, Becauſe the Miniſters baptized none but the Children of thoſe of their Communion; ſo that if either thro' Fear, or any other Motive, they did not become actual Church Members when they were of Age, none of their Poſterity could be admitted to Baptiſm: And this was become a very common Caſe, ſince the Grandchildren of the firſt Planters began to riſe up in the World. The Diſpute began in the Colony of *Connecticut*, but quickly ſpread thro' the whole Province. The Magiſtrates hereupon at their General Court the laſt Summer publiſh'd an Order and Requeſt, for convening a Synod of the Elders and Meſſengers of all the Churches in the *Maſſachuſet* Colony at *Boſton* in the preſent Spring. When they were met together the Ge-

Anno 1662. neral Court propoſed this Queſtion among others to be debated by them.

Q. *Who are the Subjects of Baptiſm?*

* The Anſwer which the Synod agreed upon was this:

"*Firſt*, THAT all Members of a particular "viſible Church are the Subjects of Baptiſm, and "their Infant Seed, *i. e.* Children in Minority, "whoſe next Parents one or both are in Co-"venant.

"*Secondly*, THE Infant Seed of Confederate "viſible Believers are Members of the ſame "Church with their Parents, and are perſonal-"ly under the Watch, Diſcipline and Govern-"ment of it, when grown up, though they are "not to be admitted to full Communion, un-"leſs they underſtand the Doctrine of Faith, "and publickly profeſs their Aſſent to it, are of "a ſober Life, and ſolemnly own the Covenant "before the Church, wherein they give up "themſelves and their Children to the Lord, "and ſubject themſelves to the Government of "Chriſt in his Church, and then their Children "may be baptiz'd.

"*Thirdly*, SUCH Church-Members (*i. e.* ba-"ptized Perſons) who either by Death, or ſome "other extraordinary Providence, have been in-"evitably hindred from publickly acting as afore-"ſaid, and yet have given the Church Cauſe, in "Judgment of Charity, to look upon them as "ſo qualified, their Children are to be ba-"ptized.

THESE were the Sentiments of the Majority of the Synod, but ſeveral learned Men entred their Proteſt, as Mr. *Charles Chauncy*, Preſident

* Mather, B. v. p. 64.

of

of the College, and Mr. *John Davenport*, who writ againſt the Synod: Nor could the Churches of *New-England* agree in their Practice, ſome being for receiving their Determinations, and others for rejecting them; there were great Diviſions and Contentions in the Church of *Boſton* upon this Head. The major Part was for the Synod, and proceeded to paſs Eccleſiaſtical Cenſures upon ſeveral of the adult Children of their Communicants for Scandals, tho' they were not of the Communion: but a conſiderable Number of the Brethren were diſſatisfy'd with their Proceedings. However Things went on pretty quietly while Mr. *Wilſon* lived; but upon his Death, the Majority of the Church inviting Mr. *Davenport* who had writ againſt the Synod, to ſucceed him, Thirty of the Brethren entred their Proteſt againſt it, and after ſome time withdrew from the Communion, and ſet up another Church in the Town, which has ſince proved one of the moſt flouriſhing of the whole Country. Almoſt all the Churches of *New-England* were divided upon this Article; and I muſt confeſs for my own part, that it looks but like an odd Aſſertion to me, To call a Perſon a Member of a Church, who has no Right to any of its Privileges, and yet remains expoſed to its Cenſures. But 'tis now agreed, that Perſons of a ſober Life, and Converſation, profeſſing their ſerious Belief of the Chriſtian Faith, and promiſing to walk according to the Rules of it; tho' they are not fully ſatisfied in their Qualifications for the Lord's Table, may be baptiz'd themſelves and their Children. Anno 1662

IN *England* the Spirit of the Church ran very high againſt the Presbyterians and Independants; the Biſhops would come to no Terms with them, but by an Act of Uniformity which

Anno 1662 took Place on St. *Bartholomew* Day, about two Thouſand Miniſters were turned out of their Benefices without the leaſt Proviſion for themſelves or Families: They were afterwards baniſh'd Five Miles out of every Corporation in *England*, and ſeveral at laſt died in Priſon, for exerciſing their Miniſtry in private contrary to Law; but ſome of them being willing to get out of the Storm, removed to *New-England*: Among theſe the moſt conſiderable were,

1. The Rev. Mr. *James Allen* ſettled at *Boſton*.
2. ——— *John Baily* at *Water Town*.
3. ——— *Barnet* at *New London*.
4. ——— *James Brown* at *Swanzey*.
5. ——— *Thomas Gilbert* at *Topſfield*.
6. ——— *Thomas Baily* at *Water Town*.
7. ——— *James Keith* at *Bridgewater*.
8. ——— *Samuel Lee* at *Briſtol*.
9. ——— *Charles Morton* at *Charles Town*.
10. ——— *Charles Nicolet* at *Salem*.
11. ——— *John Oxenbridge* at *Boſton*.
12. ——— *Thomas Thornton* at *Yarmouth*.
13. ——— *Thomas Walley* at *Barnſtable*.
14. ——— *William Woodrop* at *Lancaſter*.

Who all ſpent the Remainder of their Lives in the Country, except one or two, who came back again at the Revolution.

We might add to theſe * the Learned Dr. *John Owen*, who had been Dean of Chriſt-Church, and Vice-Chancellour of the Univerſity of *Oxford* under the Protectorſhip of *Cromwell*: He was univerſally reſpected as a Gentleman, a Scholar, and a Divine, and was better verſed in Oriental and *Jewiſh* Learning than moſt of

* Calamy's *Abridgment*, V. II. p. 53.

his

his Age; after the *Bartholomew-Act* took Place, whereby he was ſilenced with the reſt of his Brethren, he was invited to the Chair of Profeſſor of Divinity in one of the Univerſities of *Holland*, but refuſed it: He was afterwards invited to be Preſident of *Harvard-College* in *New-England*, and was ſhipping his Effects for that Country, when he was forbid to leave the Kingdom, by expreſs Orders from King *Charles* himſelf. *Anno* 1662

ONE Mrs. *Greenſmith* was executed this Year for Acts of Witchcraft upon the Body of *Anne Cole*, a virtuous young Woman, who lived with her Father at *Hertford*, and was taken with ſtrange Fits, in which ſhe expreſs'd Things unknown to herſelf at another Time, as, that ſuch and ſuch Perſons were conſulting how to carry on miſchievous Deſigns againſt her, &c. ſeveral Eminent Miniſters wrote her Speeches, and one of the Perſons accuſed being this *Greenſmith*, who was then in Priſon on Suſpicion of Witchcraft, ſhe was brought before the Magiſtrates, and having heard the Miniſters Allegations againſt her, ſhe confeſſed her Guilt; that the Devil had appear'd to her firſt in the Shape of a Deer skipping about her, that ſhe had talked with him, tho' not made a formal Covenant with him, and that the Devil had had carnal Knowledge of her, for which ſhe was executed.*

SIX or ſeven violent Shocks of an Earthquake were felt this Year in *New-England* within the Space of three Days, on *January* 26, 27, and 28, which ſpread an univerſal Conſternation among the People; but no conſiderable Damage enſued. *Anno* 1663

* Mather. Book vi. p. 67.

Anno 1663

ON the 5th of *April* this Year died the Reverend Mr. *John Norton*, one of the Miniſters of *Boſton*, and one of the moſt learned Men of the Country. He was born at *Storford* in *Hartfordſhire*, *May* 6, 1606, and educated at *Peter-Houſe*; but his Father falling to Decay before he had finiſhed his Studies, he was obliged to leave the Univerſity after he had taken his firſt Degree, and become Uſher of the School, and Curate of the Church of *Storford*; he was an admired Preacher, but being a *Puritan*, no Preferment in the Church could be obtained for him, whereupon he reſolved to remove to *New-England*; he came over in the Year 1634, and ſettled at *Ipſwich*, but upon the Death of Mr. *Cotton* in the Year 1652, he was called to *Boſton*, and there ſpent the Remainder of his Life: He was undoubtedly a very good Scholar, as well as a great Divine, as appears by the Works he has publiſhed both in *Latin* and *Engliſh*. The Magiſtrates of *Boſton* had ſuch an Opinion of his Abilities, that they join'd him in Commiſſion with *Simon Bradſtreet*, Eſq; to manage their Concerns at the Court of *England* after the Reſtoration of King *Charles*, but upon his Return he grew melancholy and diſcontented, and at laſt died of a Fit of an Apoplexy, as he was preparing to preach his weekly Lecture; he was certainly a Man of warm Paſſions, and of a cholerick Temper; he was at the Head of all the Hardſhips the Quakers ſuffered, which made them in their Repreſentation to the King, wherein they inſert certain remarkable Judgments of God upon their Perſecutors, relate this among others. "*John* "*Norton* chief Prieſt in *Boſton*, by the immediate "Power of the Lord was ſmitten, and as he "was ſinking down by the Fire-ſide, being un-"der juſt Judgment, he confeſſed the Hand of "the Lord was upon him, and ſo he dyed."

Tho'

Tho' this Reflection of the *Quakers* is very unjuſt, it being impoſſible for us to diſtinguiſh between a natural and judicial Death, yet I heartily wiſh that neither he nor any Body elſe by their unchriſtian Severities had given them Occaſion to make it. *Anno* 1663

SOON after him died the Reverend Mr. *Samuel Newman*, Paſtor of a Church at *Rehoboth*, and Author of that *Concordance of the Bible* that bears his Name; he was born at *Banbury* in the Year 1600, educated at *Oxford*; and afterwards ordained a Presbyter of the Church of *England*, but being a *Nonconformiſt*, was forced to remove no leſs than ſeven Times, to avoid the Fury of the Biſhops, 'till at laſt he reſolved to get out of their Reach. He came over to *New-England* in the Year 1638, and ſettled firſt at *Weymouth*, and afterwards at *Rehoboth* in *Plimouth*-Colony, where he ended his Days; he was a Perſon of invincible Patience and Conſtancy, and went thro' a great many Straits, when the *Antinomian* Spirit prevailed in that Colony ſo far as to drive away almoſt all the regular Miniſters out of the Juriſdiction; he was a hard Student, a lively Preacher, and very charitable to the Poor out of that little he had. He died with a great deal of Joy and Tranſport in the 63d Year of his Age.

THE Colonies of *Connecticut* and *Newhaven* being under a great Concern for want of a Charter, without which they were ſenſible they had no legal Title to their Lands, prevailed with *John Winthrop*, Eſq; Son of the late Governour of the *Maſſachuſets*, to go over to the Court of *England*, to ſolicit for ſuch an one as might unite both Colonies, and make them *one* Body corporate, which accordingly he obtain'd; 'tis ſaid, that he procured the King's Favour, by preſenting him with a Ring, which King *Charles* *Anno* 1664

Anno 1664 the First had on ſome Occaſion or other given to Mr. *Winthrop*'s Grandfather. Upon his Return to *New-England* the *United Colonies* choſe him annually their Governour as long as he lived, Mr. *Webſter* Governour of *Connecticut*, and Mr. *Lee*, Governour of *Newhaven* resign ng their Charges into his Hands. There were ſome diſaffected Perſons in each Colony that oppoſed the Union at firſt, but were ſoon ſatisfied and reconciled.

THE War between the *Engliſh* and *Dutch* breaking out * about this Time, King *Charles* reſolv'd to diſpoſeſs the *Dutch* of their Settlements upon *Hudſon*'s River. This Part of the Country was firſt diſcovered by Captain *Hudſon*, an *Engliſh* Man, who ſold it to the *Dutch* about the Year 1608; but doing it without the King's Licence it was reckon'd invalid; the *Engliſh* who ſailed from *Holland* to the *Weſt-Indies*, and ſettled at *Plimouth*, deſigned to have taken Poſſeſſion of thoſe Parts, but the Commander of the Ship being a *Dutch* Man, and bribed by ſome of his Countrymen, landed them further to the North. The *Dutch* took Poſſeſſion of the Country ſoon after, and began a Plantation in the Year 1623, but were driven thence by Sir *Samuel Argall*, Governour of *Virginia*; they then applied to King *James*, who being a ſlothful Prince, gave them Leave to build ſome Cottages for the Convenience of their Ships touching there for freſh Water in their Paſſage to and from *Brazil*: Under this Pretence they built the City of *New Amſterdam*, in an Iſland called *Mahanatoes* at the Mouth of *Hudſon*'s River, and a Fort about 80 Miles up the River, which they called *Orange-Fort*; from whence they traded with the

* Oldmixon's Britiſh *Empire in* America. *Vol.* I. *p.* 117.

Indians

Indians over Land as far as *Quebec*. Whether the *Engliſh* or the *Dutch* had the beſt Title to this Part of the Country is of no great Importance now, ſince it was taken from them in Time of War, and yielded up by the Peace. 'Tis plain however, that King *Charles* the Second looked upon them as Intruders, becauſe on the 12th of *March* this Year, he made a Grant of the whole Country called *Nova Belgia* to his Brother the Duke of *York*, who gave it the Name of *New-York*, and ſent a Squadron of Men of War, with ſome Land-Forces under the Command of Sir *Robert Carr* to reduce it. Sir *Robert* arrived there in the latter End of the Year 1664, landed 3000 Men upon *Mahanatoes-Iſland*, and marched directly to *New-Amſterdam*, the Governour of the Town was an old Soldier that had loſt his Leg in the Service of the *States*, but being ſurprized at the unexpected Attack of a formidable Enemy, he was prevailed upon by the Inhabitants to ſurrender. Thus this Place fell into the Hands of the *Engliſh*; 'twas handſomely built by the *Dutch* of Brick and Stone cover'd with red and black Tile, and the Land being high, it affords an agreeable Proſpect at a Diſtance. Above half the *Dutch* Inhabitants remained, and took the Oath of Allegiance to the King, the reſt had Liberty to remove with their Effects. Anno 1664

THIRTEEN Days after the Surrender of *Amſterdam*, a Detachment was ſent under Colonel *Nichols*, to reduce *Orange-Fort*, which he eaſily accompliſhed, and called it *New Albany*, the Duke of *York*'s *Scotch* Title, and ſo the whole Country fell into the Hands of the *Engliſh*.

BUT Sir *Robert Carre* was not only commiſſioned to reduce the *Dutch* at *Mahanatoes*, but he with Col. *Richard Nichols*, *George Carturight*, Eſq; and *Samuel Maverick*, Eſq; were commiſſioned to

Anno 1664 call at *New-England*, to hear and determine ſuch Differences as might be amongſt the Colonies, with reſpect to their Juriſdictions, which they accordingly did, not very much to the Satisfaction of *Plimouth*; they brought with them likewiſe his Majeſty's gracious Letter to the Governour and Council of *New Plimouth*, which is as follows.*

To our Truſty and Well-beloved our Governour and Council of *New-Plimouth* greeting.

CHARLES R.

"TRUSTY and Well-beloved, we greet you "well; we need not enlarge upon our "Care of, and Affection to that our Plantation "of *New Plimouth*, when we give you ſuch a "Teſtimony and Manifeſtation of it, in the "ſending of theſe Gentlemen, Perſons well "known unto us, and deſerving from us, our "truſty and well-beloved Col. *Richard Nichols*, "Sir *Robert Carre*, Knt. *George Cartwright*, Eſq; "and *Samuel Maverick*, Eſq; our Commiſſioners "to viſit you, and other our Plantations in thoſe "Parts of *New-England*, and to give us a full "and particular Information and Account of "your preſent State and Condition, and how "the ſame may be advanced and improved by "any further Acts of Grace and Favour from us "towards you; and that both you and all the "World may know, and take Notice that we "take you into our immediate Protection, and "will no more ſuffer you to be oppreſſed, or in-"jured by any foreign Power, or ill Neighbours,

* New-England *Memorial*. p. 73.

"than

" than we would ſuffer our other Subjects that 1664
" live upon the ſame Continent with us, to be
" ſo injured or oppreſſed. And as our Care and
" Protection will (we doubt not) be ſufficient
" with God's Bleſſing to defend you from fo-
" reign Force, ſo our Care and Circumſpection
" is no leſs, that you may live in Peace among
" yourſelves, and with thoſe our other Subjects
" who have planted themſelves in your Neigh-
" bour Colonies, with that Juſtice, Affection,
" and brotherly Love, which becomes Subjects
" born under the ſame Prince, and in the ſame
" Country, and of the ſame Faith, and Hope in
" the Mercies of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt; and to
" the End there may be no Contentions and
" Differences among you, in reſpect of the
" Bounds and Juriſdictions of your ſeveral Co-
" lonies, the hearing and determining whereof
" we have refer'd to our Commiſſioners, as the
" Right appears by clear Evidence and Teſti-
" mony before them, or that they can ſettle it
" by your mutual Conſent and Agreement;
" otherwiſe in caſe of Difficulties they ſhall pre-
" ſent the ſame to us, who will determine ac-
" cording to our own Wiſdom and Juſtice. The
" Addreſs you formerly made to us gave us ſo
" good Satisfaction of your Duty, Loyalty and
" Affection to us, that we have not the leaſt
" Doubt that you will receive thoſe Commiſſio-
" ners in ſuch Mannner as becomes you, and
" as may manifeſt your Reſpect and Affection
" towards us, from whom they are ſent. They
" will let you know the Reſolution we have to
" preſerve all your Liberties and Privileges, both
" Eccleſiaſtical and Civil, without the leaſt Vi-
" olation, which we preſume will diſpoſe you to
" manifeſt by all Ways in your Power, Loyalty
" and Affection to us, that all the World may
" know, that you look upon yourſelves as being

" as

Anno 1664 "as much our Subjects, and living under the "ſame Obedience under us, as if you continu'd "in your natural Country. And ſo we bid you "Farewell.

Given at our Court at *Whitehall*, *April* the 23d. 1664. In the Sixteenth Year of our Reign. By His Majeſty's ſpecial Command.

Henry Benet.

Anno 1665 IN the Beginning of this Year there was a *Comet* viſible in *New-England*; it appeared in the Months of *November*, *December*, *January* and *February*, and roſe conſtantly about one of the Clock in the Morning in the South-Eaſt Part of the Heavens. It was ſeen likewiſe in *England*, and in moſt other Parts of the World, at the ſame Time; the People looked upon it as a Sign of ſome approaching Judgment; but their Expectations were happily diſappointed, for the Country continued in Peace and Tranquillity for ſeveral Years after.

ON the 23d of *March* died Mr. *John Endicott*, Governour of the Juriſdiction of the *Maſſachuſets*; he arrived at *Salem* in the Year 1628, and had the chief Command of thoſe that firſt ſettled there, and ſhared with them in all their Hardſhips: He continued at *Salem*, till the Magiſtrates deſired him to remove to *Boſton* for the more convenient Adminiſtration of Juſtice, as Governour of the Juriſdiction, to which he was frequently elected for many Years together; he was a great Enemy of the Sectaries, and was too ſevere in executing the Penal Laws againſt the *Quakers* and *Anabaptiſts* during the Time of his Adminiſtration; he lived to a good old Age, and was interred at *Boſton* with great Honour and Solemnity.

IN

IN the Month of *July* Capt. *Davenport*, Governour of the Caſtle in the *Maſſachuſets*, was killed as he lay in his Bed, with a Clap of Thunder, he was a valiant Man, and his Death was very much lamented. *Anno* 1665

THE Summer after, there was an Accident of the like Kind in the Juriſdiction of *Plimouth*; three Perſons were ſtruck dead in the Town of *Marſhfield*, by a Flaſh of * Lightning, a Man, a Woman, and a Child. Tis obſervable concerning the Man *William Shertliffe*, that he had his Wife by the Hand, and one of his Children in his Arms, when he was ſtruck dead and neither the Woman nor the Child hurt. *New-England* is a Country famous for Miſchiefs done by Thunder and Lightning; rarely a Summer paſſes without ſome remarkable Accidents of this Kind, either upon Men, Houſes or Cattle. *Anno* 1666

THE next Summer put a Period to the Life of Reverend old Mr. *John Wilſon*, M. A. Fellow of *King's College*, *Cambridge*, and firſt Paſtor of the Church of *Boſton*. He was born at *Windſor*, in the Year 1588, and was third Son of Dr. *William Wilſon*, Prebendary of St. *Paul's*, of *Rocheſter*, and of *Windſor*, and Rector of *Cliff*; having finiſhed his Grammar-Learning at *Eaton*-School, he was admitted into *King's College* in *Cambridge* in the Year 1602, and after ſome Years was choſen *Fellow*; but by reading the Books of the moſt celebrated *Puritans* of thoſe Times, he became a *Nonconformiſt*, and refuſed to comply with ſome of the Ceremonies; for which the Biſhop of *Lincoln* at the next Viſitation pronounced the Sentence of *Quindenum* upon him, whereby he was forced to reſign his Fellowſhip, and leave the College. After this *Anno* 1667

* New-England *Memoria'*. *p.* 178.

he

Anno 1667. he came to *London*, and ſtudied the Law at one of the Inns of Court for three Years; but having a ſtrong Propenſity to the Miniſtry, he returned to *Cambridge*, and by the Favour of the Earl of *Northampton* got Admiſſion into *Emanuel-College* without Subſcription, and proceeded Maſter of Arts: When he left the Univerſity, he lived firſt as a Chaplain in ſeveral honourable Families, but was afterwards choſen Miniſter of *Suabury* in the County of *Suffolk*, where he preached the Goſpel with univerſal Acceptance and Applauſe for ſeveral Years, 'till at laſt by the Information of one *Bird*, Dr. *Harſnet* Biſhop of *Norwich*, firſt ſuſpended, and then ſilenc'd him: The Earl of *Warwick* interceded for him to the Biſhop, and with great Difficulty obtained the Liberty of his Miniſtry again; but being in continual Danger, he reſolved to get out of the Way, and therefore embarked with ſome of his Neighbours, in the Fleet that came to *New-England* in the Year 1630. He ſettled firſt at *Charles-Town*, but ſoon after removed to *Boſton*, where he ſpent the reſt of his Life. He was an exact Preacher in his younger Days, and admired by Dr. *Goodwin*, Mr. *Burroughs*, and Mr. *Bridge*; but as he grew into Years, he took a greater Liberty; his Sermons being made up chiefly of Exhortations, Admonitions, and Counſels to the People, without much Order or Method, but delivered with a great deal of affecting Warmth and Fervency. He was a very charitable Man, employing all his Eſtate for the Service of the poor, and being of a ſweet natural Diſpoſition he was univerſally beloved, and looked upon as the Father of the Plantation. Once when the whole Town was gathered together to a general Muſter, a Gentleman that ſtood by ſaid to Mr. *Wilſon*, *Sir, here is a mighty Body of People, and there is not ſeven of them all but*

but loves Mr. Wilſon. To which he replied, *Sir, I'll tell you ſomething as ſtrange, there is not one of them all but Mr.* Wilſon *loves.* He was a vigorous Oppoſer of the *Antinomian* Errors in the Synod of 1637, and favoured too much the Proſecutions of the *Quakers* and *Anabaptiſts*, by encouraging the Magiſtrates to put the Laws in Execution againſt them, which was the common Error of the Times in which he lived. In his laſt Sickneſs he was viſited by all the neighbouring Miniſters, who took their laſt Farewell of him with Tears, and the Elders of his own Church coming to ſee him, the venerable old Man, after a ſhort Prayer, lifted up his Hands and bleſſed them, ſaying, "I am not like long "to be with you, the Lord pardon us and heal "us, and make us more heavenly, and take us "off from the World, and make us burning "and ſhining Lights by our heavenly Doctrine "and Example: And I beſeech the Lord with "all my Heart to bleſs you, and to bleſs his "Churches, and to bleſs all his People, and to "bleſs all your Families, and to bleſs your "Wives, and to bleſs all your Children, and "your Childrens Children, and make us all "more and more meet for our Inheritance, and "bring us all to it in his good Time." When he drew towards his End, he lift up his Hands and ſaid, "I ſhall now e'er long be with my "old Friends, Dr. *Preſton*, Dr. *Gouge*, Dr. *Sibs*, "Dr. *Taylor*, Dr. *Gouge*, Dr. *Ames*, Mr. *Cotton*, "Mr. *Norton*, and my Children and Grandchil-"dren in the Kingdom of God." So having made a ſhort, but moſt affectionate Prayer he died *Auguſt* the 7th, 1667, in the 79th Year of his Age, having been Paſtor of the Church of *Boſton* 37 Years, 3 Years before Mr. *Cotton*, 20 Years with him; 10 Years with Mr. *Norton*, and 4 Years after him.

Anno 1667

IN

Anno 1668. IN the beginning of *March* * there appeared a Meteor in the Heavens, in the Form of a Spear, of a bright Colour, ſomething thicker in the midſt than at either End; it was ſeen ſeveral Nights together in the Weſt about half an Hour within Night, it ſtood ſtooping, one End pointing towards the ſetting of the Sun; and moved downwards by little and little, 'till it deſcended beneath the *Horizon*. This, and ſome other Incidents put the Magiſtrates upon promoting a *Reformation of Manners*, for it was obſerved, that the Youth of the preſent Age had degenerated very much from the Strictneſs of their Fathers, which ſome imputed to a Neglect of the Determinations of the late Synod, relating to the Churches watching over the Children of Church Members; and others, to the Miniſters not viſiting and inſtructing the Families of their Hearers as they ought. The following Letter was therefore printed, and ſent to every Miniſter in the *Maſſachuſet-Colony*.

To the Elders and Miniſters of every Town within the Juriſdiction of the Maſſachuſets *in* New-England. *The Governour and Council ſendeth greeting.*

Reverend and Beloved in the Lord,

"WE find in the Examples of Holy Scrip-
" ture, that Magiſtrates have not only
" excited and commanded all the People under
" their Government *to ſeek the Lord God of their*
" *Fathers, and do the Law and Commandment*, but
" alſo ſent forth their *Levites*, accompanied with
" other principal Men, *to teach the good Know-*

* New-England *Memorial*, p. 182.

" *ledge*

"*ledge of the Lord throughout all the Cities,* which "Endeavours have been crowned with the Bleſ- "ſing of God. Anno 1668

"ALSO we find, that our Brethren of the "Congregational Perſwaſion in *England,* have "made a good Profeſſion in their Book enti- "tuled, *A Declaration of their Faith and Order* "(p. 59. Sect. 14.) where they ſay, *That altho' "Paſtors and Teachers ſtand eſpecially related unto "their particular Churches, yet they ought not to "neglect others living within their Parochial Bounds, "but beſides their conſtant preaching to them, they "ought to enquire after their profiting by the Word, "inſtructing them in, and preſſing upon them (whe- "ther young or old) the great Doctrines of the Goſpel "even perſonally and particularly, ſo far as their "Strength and Time will permit.*

"WE hope that ſundry of you need not a "Spur in theſe Things, but are conſcientiouſly "careful to do your Duty, yet foraſmuch as we "have Cauſe to fear, that there is too much "Neglect in many Places, notwithſtanding the "Laws long ſince provided therein, we do there- "fore think it our Duty to emit this Declara- "tion unto you, earneſtly deſiring, and in the "Bowels of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt requiring "you, to be very diligent and careful to cate- "chiſe and inſtruct all People (eſpecially the "Youth) under your Charge in the ſound Prin- "ciples of the Chriſtian Religion, and that not "only in publick, but privately from Houſe to "Houſe, as Bleſſed *Paul* did, or at leaſt three, "four, or more Families together, as Time and "Strength may permit, taking to your Aſſiſtance "ſuch godly and grave Perſons as to your may "ſeem moſt expedient; and alſo, that you la- "bour to inform yourſelves (as much as may be "meet) how your Hearers do profit by the "Word of God, and how their Converſations

"do

Anno 1668 "do agree therewith, and whether the Youth "are taught to read the *English* Tongue, taking "all Occasions to apply suitable Exhortation "particularly unto them, *for the Rebuke of those "that do Evil, and the Encouragement of them "that do well.*

"THE effectual and constant Prosecution "hereof we hope will have a Tendency to pro-"mote the Salvation of Souls, to suppress the "Growth of Sin and Prophaneness, to beget "more Love and Unity among the People, and "more Reverence and Esteem of the Ministry, "and it will assuredly be to the Enlargement of "your Crown, and Recompence in eternal "Glory.

Given at *Boston*, *March* 10th, 1668, by the Governour and Council, and by them ordered to be printed, and sent accordingly.

Edward Rawson, Secretary.

THIS Concern of the Magistrates for the Youth of the Country was very commendable, and with the Blessing of God prov'd effectual, not only for the restraining Vice and Immorality; but for keeping alive the dying Power of Religion among the rising Generation.

New-England lost one of her most considerable Divines this Year, namely, the Reverend Mr. *Jonathan Mitchel* Pastor of the Church of *Cambridge*. He was born at *Hallifax* in *Yorkshire*, in 1624; when he was ten Years old, he had a malignant Fever, which settled in one of his Arms, and rendred it lame to his dying Day; he came over with his Father to *New-England* in the Year 1635, but by the Losses that befell the Family, was diverted from his Studies for some

ſome Years, which was the true Reaſon of his not being entred into *Harvard-College* 'till the 21ſt Year of his Age; but he made ſuch a quick Progreſs in the liberal Arts and Sciences afterwards, that he was qualified for the Pulpit within the Space of four Years, and immediately choſen Paſtor of the Church of *Cambridge*, in the Room of the Reverend Mr. *Sheppard* deceaſed: He was certainly an incomparable Preacher, and had a very agreeable Manner, which all the Students affected to imitate; he was a Man of exemplary Holineſs, and Catholick Charity and Moderation. Tho' he was a thorough *Independant* in his Judgment, yet he was for inlarging the Bounds of Church-Communion, and took a great deal of Pains for this End in the Synod of 1662; Mr. *Baxter* uſed to ſay of him, *That if there was an Oecumenical Council to be held, Mr.* Mitchel *were worthy to be its Moderator.* All the Students of the College had a great Value and Eſteem for him; but it pleaſed God to deprive the Country of this uſeful Man in the midſt of his Days, for he was ſeized with a malignant Fever, as he came out of the Pulpit in very hot Weather, which put an End to his Life, *July* the 9th, 1668, in the 43d Year of his Age, after he had been Paſtor of the Church of *Cambridge* 18 Years. *Anno* 1669

THE Diſpleaſure of the Government ran very high againſt the *Anabaptiſts* and *Quakers* at this Time; the *Anabaptiſts* had gathered one Church at *Swanzey*, and another at *Boſton*; but the general Court was very ſevere in putting the Laws in Execution againſt them, whereby many honeſt People were ruined by Fines, Impriſonment and Baniſhment, which was the more extraordinary, becauſe their Brethren in *England* were groaning under Perſecution from the Church of *England* at the ſame Time. Sad Complaints were ſent

Anno 1669 over to *England* every Summer of the Severity of the Government againſt the *Anabaptiſts*, which obliged the Diſſenting Miniſters of *London* to appear at length in their Favour. A Letter was accordingly ſent over to the Governour of the *Maſſachuſets*, ſigned by Dr. *Goodwin*, Dr. *Owen*, Mr. *Nye*, Mr. *Caryl*, and nine other Miniſters, beſeeching him to make Uſe of his Authority and Intereſt, for the reſtoring ſuch to their Liberty as were in Priſon on the Account of Religion, and that their ſanguinary Laws might not be put in Execution for the future. Dr. *Mather* has preſerved the Subſtance of this Excellent Letter, which I have tranſcribed for the Reader's Peruſal.

" WE ſhall not here undertake * in the leaſt " (*ſay they*) to make any Apology for " the Perſons, Opinions, and Practices of thoſe " who are cenſured among you; you know our " Judgment and Practice to be contrary to " theirs, even as yours, wherein God aſſiſting, " we ſhall continue to the End; neither ſhall we " return any Anſwer to the Reaſons of the Re- " verend Elders for the Juſtification of your " Proceedings, not being willing to engage in " the Management of any the leaſt Difference " with Perſons whom we ſo much love and ho- " nour in the Lord. But the Sum of all which " we ſhall offer to you at preſent is, that tho' " the Court might apprehend that they had " Grounds in general warranting their Proce- " dure (in ſuch Caſes) in the Way wherein " they have proceeded; yet that they have any " Rule or Command rendring their ſo proceed- " ing indiſpenſably neceſſary under all Circum-

* Mather, *Book* VII. page 28.

" ſtances

" ſtances of Times or Places, we are altogether unſatisfied: And we need not repreſent to you how the Caſe ſtands with ourſelves, and all your Brethren and Companions in the Services of theſe latter Days in theſe Nations. We are ſure you would not be willing to put an Advantage into the Hands of ſome who ſeek Pretences and Occaſions againſt our Liberty, and to reinforce the former Rigour. Now we cannot deny but this hath in ſome Meaſure been done, in that it has been vogued, that Perſons of our Way, Principles and Spirit cannot bear with Diſſenters from them; and as this greatly reflects upon us, ſo ſome of us have obſerved how already it has turned to your own Diſadvantage. ——— We leave it to your Wiſdom to determine, whether under all theſe Circumſtances, and ſundry others of the like Nature that might be added, it be not adviſeable, at preſent to put an End to the Sufferings and Confinements of the Perſons cenſured, and to reſtore them to their former Liberty; you have the Advantage of Truth and Order, you have the Gifts and Learning of an able Miniſtry to manage and defend them; you have the Care and Vigilancy of a very worthy Magiſtracy to countenance and protect them, and to preſerve the Peace. And above all, you have a bleſſed Lord and Maſter, who has the Keys of *David*, who openeth, and no Man ſhutteth, living for ever to take Care of his own Concernments among his Saints; and aſſuredly you need not be diſquieted, tho' ſome Perſons (thro' their own Infirmity and Weakneſs, or thro' their Ignorance, Darkneſs and Prejudices) ſhould to their Diſadvantage turn out of the Way in ſome leſſer Matters into By-Paths of their own; we only make it our hearty Requeſt

Anno 1669

Anno 1669 "to you, that you will truſt God with his "Truths and Ways, ſo far as to ſuſpend all ri-"gorous Proceedings in corporal Reſtraints or "Puniſhments on Perſons that diſſent from you, "and practiſe the Principle of their Diſſent "without Danger or Diſturbance to the Civil "Peace of the Place."

Dated *March* the 25th, 1669.

BUT this excellent Letter made no Impreſſion upon them; the Priſoners were not releaſed, nor the Execution of the Laws ſuſpended, nay, ſo far from this, that ten Years after, in the Year 1679, a general Synod being called to enquire into the Evils that provoked the Lord to bring his Judgments on *New-England*. They mention theſe among the reſt. ——— * "Men have ſet "up their Threſholds by God's Threſhold, and "their Poſts by God's Poſt. *Quakers* are falſe "Worſhippers; and ſuch *Anabaptiſts* as have "riſen up among us, in Oppoſition to the "Churches of the Lord Jeſus, receiving into "their Society thoſe that have been for Scandal "delivered unto Satan; yea, and improving "thoſe as Adminiſtrators of holy Things, who "have been (as does appear) juſtly under "Church-Cenſures, do no better than ſet up an "Altar againſt the Lord's Altar: Wherefore it "muſt needs be provoking to God, if theſe "Things be not duly and fully teſtified againſt "by every one in their ſeveral Capacities re-"ſpectively."

THE *Anabaptiſts* in both *Englands* were certainly in very low Repute at this Time; their Enemies did not think it worth their while

* Mather *Book* V. *p.* 89.

to

to confute them with Arguments; but took a ſhorter Way to ruin them, by as unparalell'd a Piece of Villany as ever was heard of. A Pamphlet was publiſhed in the Year 1673, entituled, *Mr.* BAXTER *Baptized in Blood; or, a ſad Hiſtory of the unparalell'd Cruelty of the* ANABAPTISTS *in* NEW-ENGLAND: *Faithfully relating the cruel, barbarous and bloody Murther of Mr.* J. BAXTER, *an Orthodox Miniſter, who was kill'd by the* ANABAPTISTS, *and his Skin moſt cruelly flea'd off from his Body.* Publiſhed by his mournful Brother *Benjamin Baxter*, living in *Fenchurch-ſtreet, London.* This Pamphlet was licens'd by Dr. *Parker*, the Arch-Biſhop's Chaplain, and cried about Streets by the Hawkers. The Author repreſents his Brother, as worſting the *Anabaptiſts* in a publick Diſputation at *Boſton*; for which, by Way of Revenge, they ſent four Ruffians in Vizors to his Houſe a little Way out of Town, who after they had bound his Wife and three Children, firſt whipp'd, and then flea'd him alive: The Author concludes, I have publiſh'd this Narrative, *in perpetuam rei memoriam*, that the World may ſee the Spirit and Temper of thoſe Men, and that it may ſtand as an eternal Memorial of their Cruelty and Hatred to all Orthodox Miniſters. *Anno* 1669

WHEN the *Anabaptiſts* came to examine into this Story, they found it a pure Piece of Forgery, contrived on Purpoſe to ſet the Mob upon them; there was no ſuch Perſon to be found as *Benjamin Baxter* of *Fenchurch-ſtreet*; nor was there any ſuch Man as *Joſiah Baxter* of *New-England*: The Paſſengers who came over in the firſt Ships after the Date of the Fact, made Oath before the Lord Mayor, that they never heard of the Fact, tho' they were at *Boſton* 22 Days after it was ſaid to be committed: The Publiſhers of it were one *Savil* and *Seymour*, who impos'd

Anno 1669 upon Dr. *Parker* by forged Letters, as himſelf own'd by a publick *Advertiſement* under his Hand; nay, the King and Council, after an Examination of the whole Affair, did them ſo much Juſtice, as to declare in the *Gazette*, that the whole Story was falſe and fictitious: But to ſuch Extravagancies do Men ſometimes proceed, who will ſupport their Cauſe by other Methods than the Goſpel preſcribes.

THE *Quakers* likewiſe made heavy Complaints about this Time of the Sufferings of their Friends in *New-England*, tho' 'tis certain that none of the *Penal Laws* had been put in Execution againſt them ſince the King's Letter in 1661, except that which relates to *Vagabonds*; nor can I find any Examples of thoſe that ſuffer'd under that Character, except a few itinerant Men and Women, who made it their Buſineſs to travel thro' the Country, and alarm the Peoples Minds with Predictions of approaching Judgments on the Province. But the *Quakers* in *England* were ſo vain, as to expect Relief for their Friends from a Court and Parliament, who were proſecuting them at the ſame Time, in common with all others that diſſented from the Eſtabliſhed Church of *England* with the utmoſt Severities. They therefore drew up the Caſe of their Friends, under the Title of

> *A Short Summary of ſome of the Sufferings of the People of God, called* QUAKERS, *in* New-England, *both former and latter*, as repreſented in a Broadſide to the King and Parliament, in the Year 1669.

Wherein after they had in the moſt moving Language revived the Memory of the Hardſhips their Friends had ſuffered, not only from the Government, but from the Under-Officers and Gaolers

Gaolers under the Protectorſhip of *Oliver Cromwell*; they go on in the ſame Strain thus:—— Anno 1669

—*"AND now, O King, ſince the very
"Day the Lord brought thee into
"this Land again, and gave unto thee thy Re-
"gal Power, have they in thy Name made
"ſtrange and cruel Havock of thy true Subjects,
"in putting to Death, and baniſhing; and in
"thy Name with many torturing Whippings of
"Old and Young at Poſts, and at Wheels of
"great Guns, and at Carts Tails, dragging the
"naked Bodies of Parents and Children thro'
"divers long Towns, thro' the Dirt and Filth of
"their Channels and Cart-Ways; and in thy
"Name commanding one Friend and Brother
"to help impriſon the other; yea, in thy Name
"they have lately preſs'd the Son to help to
"force his tender Father and Mother to Gaol,
"ſundry Miles in the Extremity of Winter-Sea-
"ſon, to the Hazard of their Lives; and ſuch
"as refuſed to obey their unnatural and abo-
"minable Commands they have fined at their
"Courts; and thus from Court to Court do
"theſe Monſters of Men, in thy Name, fine
"and break open the Houſes of the *Quakers*,
"and rob them of their Goods, and take away
"that they ſhould eat in, and that they ſhould
"drink in, yea, the very Cloaths from their
"Backs in the Winter, and the Bed they ſhould
"lye on, while they keep the Body ſundry
"Miles off in Priſon, driving Husbands and
"Wives divers Miles to Priſon, in Times of
"great Froſt and Snow, keeping them cloſe
"Priſoners in a very cold Room, to the en-
"dangering of their Lives, and to the Ruin of

* New-England *judg'd*. p. 478.

Anno 1669 "their Families, had not the Lord preſerved "them. All this, and much more, too tedious "to mention at this Time, have they done to "the Servants of the Lord in *New-England*, in "thy Name, ſaying, that thou owneſt their "Doings, and eſteemeſt their Laws as thy "Laws; and theſe hard Things have the Ser-"vants of the Lord patiently ſuffered, and ſuſ-"tained at their Hands for no other Cauſe, but "for their faithful Obedience to the Spirit of "the Lord in their Hearts, which Spirit of Ho-"lineſs teacheth them, that forced Worſhips "and Worſhippers are both an Abomination to "the Lord. Theſe few Lines are written not "from any Deſire of the leaſt Revenge from thy "Hand upon them, but that thou mayeſt know "it, and make known thy Diſlike of their Wic-"kedneſs, that ſo the Blood of the Innocent "there, if poſſible, might not be laid to your "Charge in the terrible Day of the Lord, in "which both high and low muſt come to Judg-"ment, and receive according to their Deeds "done in the Body, in which Day the Lord "will make known in the Sight of all his Ene-"mies, his mighty Power for the ſaving of his "beloved Ones, and for the delivering and help-"ing of them, who had no Helper in the "Earth."

ONE would be apt to think from this *Declaration*, that the Government of *New-England* continued ſtill to hang the *Quakers*, or baniſh them upon Pain of Death; whereas no Inſtances of this Kind are produced: 'Tis true, the Government treated their Itinerants as Vagabonds, and whipp'd them out of the Country; but all the other Laws againſt them were ſuſpended; and therefore this *Declaration*

is

is ſo far from being a plain State of the Caſe, Anno 1659
that it appears to me, to be nothing but an artful Addreſs to the Paſſions of Men, painting out, the impriſoning of a Man, and whipping him at the Cart's Tail, in ſuch frightful Colours as might ſtrike the Reader's Mind with Indignation and Horror; nor do I find the King or Parliament took the leaſt Notice of it.

THEY inveighed likewiſe againſt the Diſſenting Miniſters of *London*, becauſe when they wrote to *New-England* in Favour of the *Anabaptiſts*, they made no Mention of *their Friends*; but the Reaſon of this might be, becauſe the *Quakers* did not think it worth their while to apply to them, for we find afterwards, in the Beginning of the Reign of Queen *Anne*, when ſome of the leading *Quakers* complained to the Diſſenting Miniſters of *London*, of ſome ſevere Laws of a long ſtanding againſt their Friends in *New-England*, and deſired their kind Interpoſition to skreen them from the Execution of them, they immediately wrote to *New-England* in their Behalf. The Complaint and Requeſt of the *Quakers* to the Miniſters was this, ——— that

"THERE being ſeveral ſevere Laws "made by your Brethren in *New-* "*England*, in the *Maſſachuſet*-Bay Province, "againſt our Friends the People called *Qua-* "*kers*, only for their conſcientious Diſſent "from the National Way there, if you are "for Liberty of Conſcience to thoſe that "diſſent from you, and are willing our "Friends in *New-England* ſhould enjoy the like "Liberty of Conſcience there, as you with us "do here; we requeſt you to manifeſt your "Sincerity herein, not only by ſhewing your "Diſlike hereof to your Brethren there, but

"alſo

Anno 1669 "also by your concurrent Application with us "to the Queen, that she would be favourably "pleased to disallow all such Laws."

Signed

William Crouch,
William Mackett,
Theodore Eccleſtone,
John Whiting,
John Field,
George Whitehead.

THE Letter which the Diſſenting Miniſters of *London* wrote in their Behalf to one of the chief Miniſters of *Boſton*, to be communicated to his Brethren, was as follows.

Reverend and Dear Brethren,

"YOU may from the incloſed gather the "Occaſion of our giving you this "Trouble. As for an Application to the Queen "therein deſired, we could by no Means count "it agreeable to the Reſpect we have for our "Brethren of *New-England*, had we thought it "never ſo ſuitable to our more private Station "and Miniſterial Character; we pretend not to "form a Judgment in the preſent Caſe, which "would not be juſt, without a full Hearing of "both Sides; much leſs would we preſume to "dictate Meaſures to you about it.

"We cannot reaſonably ſuppoſe, but you as "well as we are for Liberty of Conſcience, as "full as it is here eſtabliſhed and enjoyed, ſince "you are not ſo much as charged with having "lately executed thoſe Laws among you which "might now appear to infringe it; whatever "peculiar Reaſons your Anceſtors had for firſt "enacting them.

"We

"WE conclude, you agree with us, that the "Truth is not to be propagated or maintained "by external Force or Violence againſt Errors "or Miſtakes, but by the gentle Methods of Ar- "gument and Perſuaſion; and we cannot but "judge it diſagreeing with the Spirit and Prin- "ciples of the Goſpel, and an Encroachment "upon the Divine Prerogative, and the un- "doubted Rights of Mankind, to puniſh any "for their conſcientious and peaceable Diſſent "from the Eſtabliſhed Way of Religion, whilſt "they are not juſtly chargeable with any Im- "moralities, or what is plainly deſtructive of "Civil Society. Anno 1669

"SINCE this is our real Sentiments, and "we are called upon to own it, we think our "ſelves obliged thus to expreſs it, for the "avoiding that odious Imputation of denying "to others what we claim ourſelves. And that "we may not give any Handle or Colour for "the undermining your and our common Li- "berties, we would alſo do whatever may be "done with Chriſtian Prudence to engage the "Affections of thoſe who differ from us; and "at the ſame Time teſtify our Abhorrence of "the Popiſh pretended Infallibility and *French* "Perſecution.

"WE cannot think the Truth to be betray- "ed, or any Way injured, by the avowing ſuch "Principles as ſecure it the Liberty to ſpeak "for itſelf, and which, if univerſally eſpous'd, "muſt open it a Way into all Parts and Places "of the World.

"THEREFORE upon the whole, we con- "ceive, that the Honour of God and the Inte- "reſt of our Redeemer engage us, thus to ap- "pear for Liberty of Conſcience; and we per- "ſuade ourſelves, you will look upon our "laying this Matter ſo freely before you, as an

"Inſtance

Anno 1669 " Inſtance of our brotherly Affection to you; " nor is it the wide Diſtance of Place, or any " little Difference of Sentiment, that may poſ- " ſibly be, which can leſſen our Concern for " Members of the ſame myſtical Body of " Chriſt.

" WE therefore humbly offer it to the ſeri- " ous Conſideration of yourſelves, and by you " to your Fellow-Labourers in the Miniſtry, to- " gether with other Chriſtian Brethren, what " farther Aſſurance may be prudently and fitly " given, that in the preſent Affair you are like- " minded with us, and are not to be out-done " by any in the Evidence and Exerciſe of a truly " Chriſtian Charity; and that you will ra- " ther employ your own Intereſt for the pro- " curing ſome ſuch Liberty as is here allowed, " than that others ſhould be left to try what " their Endeavours can do, which we would " gladly divert them from, in Expectation of " what this Letter may produce.

" FINALLY, Brethren, you will not forget " that the Apoſtle tells us, after the mentioning " of Faith, Hope and Charity, that the greateſt " of theſe is Charity; ſince you are (we doubt " not) guided by that Wiſdom from above, " which is not only pure, but peaceable, gentle, " and eaſy to be entreated, full of Mercy and " good Fruits, without Partiality, and without " Hypocriſy, *&c.*

Signed by Eleven of the Chief Diſſenting Miniſters of the Three Denominations in London.

I have now by me Dr. *Increaſe Mather*'s Anſwer to this Letter, but his Son Dr. *Cotton Mather* having entred into the Merits of the Cauſe, and given a particular Reply to the ſeveral Grie-

Grievances of the *Quakers*, I'll preſent the Reader with an Abſtract of his Manuſcript now before me. It is impoſſible, ſays he, that there ſhould be any ſevere Laws in Force againſt the *Quakers*, on the Account of their Religion, becauſe the *Royal Charter* expreſly provides, "*That* "*for ever there ſhall be a Liberty of Conſcience al-*"*lowed in the Worſhip of God unto all Chriſtians,* "*except* Papiſts, *inhabiting, or which ſhall inhabit,* "*or be reſident within the ſaid Province or Terri-*"*tory.*" And if the general Aſſembly of the Province ſhould enact any Laws contrary to theſe expreſs Words of the Charter, they muſt be brought over to *England*, and have the Royal Aſſent before they can be put in Execution; ſo that to complain of ſuch Laws, is in Effect to complain of King *William* and Queen *Anne*, for giving the Royal Aſſent to them. Anno 1669

BUT what are theſe ſevere Laws which the *Quakers* complain of? Why, the firſt is that *which requires all Sorts of Perſons of a proper Age, Quality, and Condition to attend the military Exerciſes on four training Days in a Year, as alſo to be furniſhed with Arms and Ammunition fit for Service, on the Penalty of a moderate Fine therein expreſſed.* Now the Government do not inſiſt upon the *Quakers* perſonal Appearance, but upon their paying the Fine, in caſe of Default, as many other Gentlemen and Inhabitants of the Country chooſe to do, but the *Quakers* will do neither; tho' they enjoy the Protection of the Government, they will do nothing towards the Security and Defence of it, which is the more extraordinary, ſince all the World knows, that the *Quakers* in *Penſilvania*, in the Year 1692, on Occaſion of a Pyracy, hired Men with Money, and ſupplied them with Ammunition and Fire-Arms, to recover their Sloop from the Privateers.

ANO-

Anno 1669 ANOTHER Branch of the Law provides, *That there be military Watches kept in every Town at ſuch Times, in ſuch Places, and in ſuch Numbers, and under ſuch Regulations as the chief Officer in each Town ſhall appoint, and that all Perſons able of Body, or that are of Eſtates (not exempt by Law) ſhall by themſelves, or ſome meet Perſon in their Stead, attend the ſame, on the Penalty therein expreſſed.*" But the *Quakers*, tho' the Country was then at War with the *French* and *Indians*, would neither provide Arms and Ammunition, nor Watch and Ward; they would neither march out againſt the Enemy, nor keep Garriſon at home, nor pay the Penalty which the Law provides for Defaulters. 'Tis true, the *Quakers* pay the Taxes raiſed by the General Aſſembly for the Maintenance of the Army, but refuſe to ſubmit to the Penalty which the Law inflicts on perſonal Defaulters in the Train-Bands, which has obliged the Officers ſometimes to diſtrain their Goods; but the *Quakers* have no more Reaſon to complain of this, than of the Practices of their own Friends in *Penſilvania*, who have not only fined their Brethren, for declining to ſerve on Juries, but have violently taken away their Goods for Non-payment, tho' they pleaded the Laws of *England*, which exempts *Quakers* from ſerving on Juries. *

THE other ſevere Law which the *Quakers* complain of, is that which obliges them, *as well as the other Inhabitants, to pay their Proportion of Aſſeſſment for the Maintenance of the Miniſters legally choſen and ſettled.* This Law extends only to ſuch Places where the Miniſters Salary is raiſed by Aſſeſſment, for in *Boſton*, and ſome

* *Trumpet ſounding in the Wilderneſs*, Chap. 10.

other

other Places, 'tis raiſed by a voluntary Contribution, and there nothing is demanded of them. But if this Law was univerſal, 'tis no greater a Hardſhip, than they are under from the National Church of *England*; and yet the *Governours* of *New-England* have ſomething more to ſay for themſelves; for in a conſiderable Part of the Province the original Grants of the Lands were made with this Condition, that there ſhould be certain Taxes paid out of them, as a Sort of *Quit-Rent*, towards the Maintenance of the Eſtabliſhed Miniſtry: Now tho' the *Quakers* are in Poſſeſſion of ſome of thoſe Lands, and have raiſed Eſtates upon them, yet they deny to pay the Quit-Rent, becauſe 'tis to ſupport a Miniſtry they don't approve of. *Anno* 1669

Now if this be a true State of the Caſe, I leave the Reader to judge, whether the *Quakers* had Reaſon to raiſe ſuch a Cry of Perſecution againſt the *New-Engliſh* Government, or to prefer a Supplication to Queen *Anne* againſt them, when they enjoyed the ſame Privileges with the reſt of their Fellow-Subjects of that Country.

The Inhabitants of the Town of *Boſton* were now grown ſo numerous, that the two Meeting-Houſes would not hold them, and therefore in the Month of *May* this Year, a third Church was gathered out of the firſt, and the Reverend Mr. *Thacher* was ordained Paſtor of it the 16th of *February* following. This Mr. *Thacher* was both a good Divine, and an excellent Phyſician; and did a great deal of Good in both Capacities; he was firſt Miniſter of *Weymouth*, and from thence removed to the New Church of *Boſton*, among whom he ſpent the reſt of his Days; he dyed *October* the 13th, 1678, in the 59th Year of his Age, and was ſucceeded by the Reverend Mr. *Willard*, ſometime Vice-Preſident of *Harvard-College*.

Anno 1669 A LITTLE before the erecting of this new Church at *Boſton* died the Reverend Mr. *Richard Mather*, Paſtor of the Church at *Dorcheſter*: He was born at *Lowton* in *Lancaſhire* in the Year 1596, and educated at *Brazen Noſe* College in *Oxford*; afterwards he became Miniſter and Schoolmaſter at *Toxteth Park* in *Lancaſhire*; but in the Year 1634, he was ſuſpended and ſilenced for Nonconformity, after he had been a Preacher there for fifteen Years, in all which time he never wore a Surplice. Upon this, he reſolved to remove with his Family to *New-England*, and arrived there *Auguſt* 17, 1635. The next Year he ſettled at *Dorcheſter*, and continued there till he died. He was a Man of an exemplary Life and Converſation, a good Scholar, and a plain, ſolid, practical Preacher: He writ ſeveral Treatiſes which were well accepted in thoſe Times, and was generally conſulted in all Difficulties relating to Church Government; but at laſt as he was attending the *Synod* at *Boſton*, of which he was choſen Moderator, he was taken with a Fit of the Stone, which cauſed a total Suppreſſion of Urine, and in four or five Days put an End to his Life, on the 22*d* of *April* 1669. He left behind him four Sons all educated for the Miniſtry, Mr. *Samuel Mather*, firſt Fellow of *Harvard College* in *New-England*, and the firſt Preacher of the *North Church* in *Boſton*, where his Brother and Nephew are now his Succeſſors; he came over to *England* in *Cromwell*'s Time, and was choſen one of the Chaplains in *Magdalen*-College, *Oxon*; he afterwards went over to *Ireland*, and was one of the Senior Fellows of *Trinity* College in *Dublin*; Upon the Uniformity Act in 1662. He left all his Preferments in the Church, and became Paſtor of a Diſſenting Congregation in *Dublin*, where he died in the Year 1671.

1671. He was a good Scholar, and a generous ſpirited Man. He is the Author of a very valuable Treatiſe *of the Figures and Types of the Old Teſtament conſidered and improved*, publiſhed by his Brother after his Death. *Anno* 1670

Mr. *Nathaniel Mather*, who ſucceeded his Brother in *Dublin*, but about the Time of the Revolution came over to *England*, and was choſen Paſtor of a Diſſenting Congregation in *London*, where he dy'd *Anno* 1697, in great Eſteem among his Brethren for Learning and Piety.

Mr. *Eleazar Mather* of *Northampton* in *New-England*, who dy'd young; and Dr. *Increaſe Mather*, Father of Dr. *Cotton Mather*, Author of the Eccleſiaſtical Hiſtory of *New-England*.

THIS Year the Reverend Mr. *John Davenport*, M. A. and B. D. exchanged this Life for a better: He was born at *Coventry* in the Year 1597, and educated at *Brazen Noſe* College in *Oxford*. When he left the Univerſity, he came to *London*, and after ſome time was choſen Miniſter of *Coleman-ſtreet Pariſh* within the City, where he continued till he began to be obnoxious to his Dioceſan for Nonconformity, and then with the Leave of his Pariſhioners he reſigned, and went over to *Holland* in the Year 1633. He preached occaſionally to the *Engliſh* Church at *Amſterdam* for about three Years but not liking the Country, he came back to *England* in Diſguiſe, and embarked with ſeveral of his Friends and Acquaintance for *New-England* in the Year 1637. Having refreſhed themſelves at *Boſton*, they travelled to the Weſtern Parts of the Country, and ſetled at a Place which they called *Newhaven*: Here Mr. *Davenport* continued till the Year 1667, bearing his Part in all the Hardſhips of the new Plantation, and then removed to *Boſton* to ſucceed the Reverend Mr. *Willſon*, where he died of a Fit of an Apoplexy, *March* the 15th

Anno 1670 1670, in the 73d Year of his Age. He was a great Scholar, an admirable Preacher, and a Man of exemplary Piety and Virtue, he was entruſted by Dr. *Preſton* in Conjunction with Dr. *Sibs*, with the Publication of his poſthumous Works; but his Notions of Church-Diſcipline were very rigid, as appears by his Book entitled, *The Power of Congregational Churches:* He was a *Millenarian* being fully perſuaded in his own Mind of the Thouſand Years Perſonal Reign of Chriſt upon Earth; but notwithſtanding this or any other ſingular Notions he might entertain, he was one of the greateſt Men that *New-England* ever enjoy'd.

THE *Indians* having been pretty quiet for the laſt ſeven Years, began now to enter into a Confederacy againſt the *Engliſh*, under the Protection of *Philip*, Brother of *Alexander*, late Sachem of the *Wompanoags*. *Philip* obſerv'd with Regret the growing Power of the *Engliſh*, and waited but a convenient Opportunity to break with them; It was obſerv'd about this Time that he kept at a greater Diſtance from the *Engliſh* than uſual, and treated them with Contempt; which made the Magiſtrates of *Plimouth* ſend for him to *Taunton*. *Philip* was in doubt what to do; but his Affairs being not yet ripe, he ſubmitted. The Commiſſioners accus'd him of Perfidiouſneſs and Breach of Covenant; which he confeſs'd, and promis'd for Time to come to be ſubject to the Government of *Plimouth*; to pay 100 *l.* Damages; to ſend five Wolves Heads every Year in Token of his Fealty; not to make War without Approbation of the Government; not to attack the *Engliſh* without firſt endeavouring to accomodate Differences in a peaceable Way; nor to ſell any of his Lands without Approbation of the *Engliſh* Government:

But

But how he perform'd this Contract the next Chapter will declare. *Anno* 1671

HARVARD-College ſuſtained a very great Loſs this Year in the Death of the Reverend Mr. *Charles Chauncy*, the Preſident of it: He was born in *Hertfordſhire* in the Year 1589 bred up at *Weſtminſter*-School, and from thence ſent to *Trinity*-College in *Cambridge*, where he proceeded Batchellor of Divinity, and was choſen *Greek* Profeſſor. When he left the Univerſity, he was choſen firſt Miniſter of *Marſtow*, and afterwards of *Ware*, his Miniſtry having been bleſſed in both thoſe Places, for the Converſion of many Souls; but refuſing to read the Book of Sports, he was ſuſpended by Biſhop *Laud*, and ſilenced. Mr. *Chauncey* had been in the High Commiſſion Court ſeveral Years before, according to Mr. *Ruſhworth*, who in his Collections for the Year 1629. gives this Account of him. "Mr. *Charles* "*Chauncey*, *ſays he*, Miniſter of *Ware*, uſing ſome "Expreſſions in his Sermon, *That Idolatry was* "*admitted into the Church*; *That the Preaching of the* "*Goſpel would be ſuppreſſed*; *That there is much* "*Atheiſm*, *Popery*, *Arminianiſm and Hereſy crept* "*into the Church*: And theſe being look'd upon to "raiſe a Fear among the People that ſome Al- "teration of Religion would enſue, he was que- "ſtion'd in the High Commiſſion, and by Or- "der of that Court the Cauſe was referr'd to "the Biſhop of *London*, being his Ordinary, "who order'd him to make a Submiſſion in *La-* "*tin*." Which he accordingly did, tho' after- wards he repented bitterly of it. Dr. *Mather* obſerves that there were but few that ſuffer'd more for *Nonconformity* than he, by Fines, by Goals, by Neceſſity to abſcond, and at laſt by an Exile from his Native Country. He arrived at *New-England* a few Days before the great Earthquake, which happen'd *January* the 1ſt,

Anno 1671 1638. and ſettled at *Scituate* in *Plimouth* Colony, where he continued twelve Years; but the Epiſcopal Power being deſtroy'd in *England*, and his People of *Ware* inviting him to return home, he was come as far as *Boſton* in his Way to *England*, when the *Curators* of *Harvard*-College, being very unwilling the Country ſhould loſe ſo valuable a Perſon, preſs'd his Acceptance of the Preſidentſhip of the College, in the room of Mr. *Dunſtar* removed for *Antipædobaptiſm*. Mr. *Chauncey* at length yielded to their Importunities, and ſpent the reſt of his Days in the Education of the Youth of the Country. He was an excellent Scholar, and an hard Student, even in his Old Age: It was his conſtant Cuſtom to riſe at Four of the Clock in the Morning Winter and Summer, and having ſpent about an Hour in his Cloſet he viſited the College Hall, and after a ſhort Prayer expounded a Chapter of the Old Teſtament, which one of the Students conſtrued out of the *Hebrew*, and in the Evening he did the like with one out of the New Teſtament. His natural Temper was haſty and paſſionate, but he endeavoured by Watching and Prayer to correct it as much as poſſible. He continued his Labours to the very laſt, even when his Years and Infirmities required a Receſs: When his Friends deſired him to ſpare himſelf, he replied with the Emperor, *Oportet Imperatorem ſtantem mori.* But at laſt, on the Day of Commencement, in the Year 1671. finding himſelf almoſt worn out, he made a Farewel Oration to the College, wherein he took a ſolemn Leave of his Friends, and on the 2d of *February* following he died, in the 82d Year of his Age, after he had been Preſident of the College almoſt Seventeen Years. When he was drawing towards his End Mr. *Urian Oakes*, who had been praying by his Bedſide, deſired him to give ſome Sign of his

Aſſurance

Anno 1672

Aſſurance of entring into Eternal Glory; upon which the ſpeechleſs Old Man lifted up both his Hands as high towards Heaven as he could, and ſo expired. He left behind him ſix Sons, all bred up to the Miniſtry in *Harvard*-College, the Eldeſt of which was the Reverend Mr. *Iſaac Chauncey*, M. D. and late Paſtor of a Congregational Church in *London*.

TOWARD the latter End of this Year died Mr. *Richard Bellingham*, Governor of the *Maſſachuſet* Colony: He was bred a Lawyer, and was a Gentleman of ſevere Principles againſt the *Anabaptiſts* and *Quakers*, but of uncorruped Integrity, being noted for his perpetual Hatred of a Bribe. He lived 'till he was above Eighty Years of Age; and was ſucceeded in his Government by Mr. *John Leverett*.

UPON the Death of Mr. *Chauncey* the *Curators* choſe Dr. *Leonard Hoar* Preſident. This Gentleman after his Education in *Harvard*-College travelled into *England*, and commenced Doctor of Phyſick in the Univerſity of *Cambridge*; but being invited to be Paſtor of the South Church in *Boſton*, he returned to *New-England* with a Deſign to ſettle with them; but Mr. *Chauncey* dying juſt after his Arrival, Dr. *Hoar* was thought the fitteſt Perſon to ſucceed him in the College, which he accordingly did, and gave up his Pretenſions to the Church at *Boſton*: But tho' the Doctor was an excellent Scholar, and a good Chriſtian, he wanted the Art of Government, which made the Students ſo uneaſy under him, as at laſt to deſert the College in a Body. Their Complaints being laid before ſome conſiderable Perſons in the Neighbourhood, they gave their Opinions in favour of the Students, and the Preſident fell under their Diſpleaſure ſo far as to be obliged to reſign his Place in the Year 1675. the Grief of which

Anno 1672 threw him into a Conſumption, and in ſix Months put an End to his Life.

IN his Time the Number of Students was ſo conſiderably encreaſed, that it was judged neceſſary to enlarge the College, the preſent Buildings not being ſufficient to receive them, and Contribution was accordingly made thro'out the whole Colony for this Work, which in the whole amounted to 1895 *l.* 2 *s.* 9 *d.* Eight Hundred of which was gather'd out of *Boſton*. With this Money, and a few other Aſſiſtances, a new College was built, wearing ſtill the Name of the old One, tho' the old One is now quite demoliſh'd and deſtroy'd.

Anno 1673 THERE was a remarkable Execution this Summer at *Boſton* of ſome *Engliſh* Pirates belonging to a Veſſel bound from the *Streights* to *London* *, who having entred into a Conſpiracy to ſeize the Ship, took occaſion to quarrel with the Maſter and ſome of his Officers, and turn'd them out into the Long-Boat with a ſmall Quantity of Proviſions, about an hundred Leagues to the Weſtward of the *Spaniſh* Coaſt, and then tack'd about with the Ship for *New-England*. The Maſter and his Company in the Long-Boat were forc'd to drive before the Wind, and the Providence of God ſo order'd it, that they likewiſe made the *New-England* Shore, and arriv'd all ſafe at *Boſton*, except one Man, who died of the Hardſhips that he ſuffer'd in the Way. Both the Maſter and his Ship's Crew were ſurpriz'd to ſee each others Faces again; but the former making his Application to the Government, got them arreſted, and the Ringleaders of them hang'd. The Chief of theſe Pirates was one *Foreſt*, who, tho' a brave and ſtout Man, yet

* Mather, B. vi. *p.* 39.

when

when he came to dye, utter'd theſe Words: *I have been among drawn Swords, flying Bullets and roaring Cannons, amongſt all which I knew not what Fear meant; but now I have dreadful Apprehenſions of the dreadful Wrath of God in the other World which I am going into; my Soul within me is amaz'd at it.* Anno 1673

IN the Spring of this Year died Mr. *Thomas Prince*, Governor of *Plimouth* Colony: He was the greateſt Patron of Learning that the Colony ever had, and took a great deal of Pains to procure Revenues for the ſetting up Grammar-Schools in all Parts of the Country: He was ſometimes choſen Governor during Mr. *Bradford*'s Life, but conſtantly after his Death as long as he liv'd: He was a Man of uncorrupted Honeſty and Integrity, greatly beloved by his Country, and univerſally lamented when he died, which was *March* the 29th, 1673. about the 73d Year of his Age.

CHAP.

CHAP. IX.

The Riſe and Progreſs of the War with Philip *King of the* Wompanoags. *He is beſieged in a* Swamp, *but eſcapes. The* Nipmuck-Indians *joyn him, and rout the* Engliſh *near* Quaboag. *The* Connecticut-Indians *riſe, and deſtroy the Frontier-Garriſons. The* Narrhaganſet-Indians *break the Peace. The* Engliſh *beſiege their Fort, and after a bloody Fight take it by Storm.* Philip's *Stratagem to engage the* Maquas *in the War, accidentally diſcover'd; which brought that powerful Nation upon himſelf. His Men are diſpirited, and deſert.* Philip *betray'd, and kill'd. His Character. War with the* Eaſtern-Indians. *The* Engliſh *make a Diſhonourable Peace with them. The Fidelity of the* Indian *Converts. The Deaths, and Characters of ſome conſiderable Perſons in Church and State. King* Charles *takes away their* Charter.

Anno 1674

NEW ENGLAND had now enjoyed a profound Tranquillity for almoſt 40 Years; in which Time the *Engliſh* perfected all their Settlements, and began to appear formidable to their Neighbours. The Natives might eaſily have cruſhed them at the Beginning, and preſerved to

to themſelves the Sovereignty of their own Country, but they were a diſconcerted Body; and the *Engliſh* were ſo wiſe as to play them one againſt the other. The *Pequots* firſt declared War with the *Narrhaganſets*; theſe to be reveng'd of their Enemies, made an Alliance with the *Engliſh* to deſtroy their own Countrymen, 'till at laſt both were ſwallowed up by the Conqueror; The *Narrhagunſets* preſerved themſelves the longeſt, by their Adherence to the *Engliſh*, who frequently aſſiſted them againſt their Enemies; but at the ſame Time kept them ſo much in Awe, as to oblige them, upon any Cauſe of Complaint againſt the *Engliſh*, to repair to the *Governour*, and endeavour to compoſe Matters in an amicable Way, before they pretended to do themſelves Juſtice by any open Acts of Hoſtility. The *Indians* began to ſee their Error when it was too late, for no ſingle Nation of them was now a Match for the *Engliſh*, nor could they make Alliances with one another without being diſcovered by the Miſſionaries. Anno 1674

BUT notwithſtanding all this, *Philip* King of the *Wompanoags*, a Nation bordering on the County of *Plimouth*, a bold and daring Prince, having a mortal Hatred to the *Engliſh*, and fearing to be brought under their Yoke, reſolved to oppoſe their growing Power; for this End, he invited as many of the Subjects of other *Indian* Princes as were willing to come to him, and gave them Arms. He ſent a ſecret Embaſſy to the *Narrhaganſets*, to offer them an Offenſive and Defenſive Alliance; but they as well as the other *Indian* Nations were afraid to declare openly for him, 'till they ſaw the Succeſs of his Arms.

IN the mean Time *Philip*'s Preparations were diſcovered to the *Engliſh* by *John Sauſaman*, the Son of an *Indian* Convert, who had been educated in the Chriſtian Faith, but when he came

to

Anno 1674 to judge for himſelf, returned to the Religion of his Anceſtors, and became Secretary to *Philip*. After ſome Time he deſerted his Maſter, and returning to the *Engliſh* he changed his Religion again, and gave ſuch Signs of Sincerity, that he was admitted to the *Communion* in one of the *Indian* Churches, and commiſſioned to be a Preacher and Miſſionary, for the Converſion of his Countrymen to Chriſtianity: As this *Sauſaman* was travelling up and down the Country upon his Miſſionary Work, he got Information of *Philip*'s Deſigns, and went immediately to the Governor of *Plimouth*, and made a full Diſcovery of them. *Philip* was quickly informed both of the Treaſon and Traytor, and took ſuch Meaſures upon it as quickly coſt the poor Man his Life; for, as he was travelling the Country alone, in the Winter-time, two or three of *Philip*'s Men lay in Ambuſh for him, and murder'd him, as he was going over a Pond, and to conceal the Fact, cut a Hole in the Ice, and thruſt his Body into it, leaving his Hat and Gun on the Out-ſide, that the World might think he had ſlip'd in and drowned himſelf. When it was rumoured abroad that *Sauſaman* was miſſing, ſome of his Neighbours went out in Search of him, and finding his Hat and Gun by the Pond, they drew out his Body, and buried it; but the Government of *Plimouth* ſuſpecting that he was murdered, order'd his Body to be dug up, and impannel'd a Jury to ſit upon it, who, upon examining the Body, found the Neck broke, the Head very much ſwelled, and Bruizes in ſeveral other Parts, whereupon they gave it as their Opinion, that he was murder'd. Dr. *Mather* ſays, that when *Tobias*, one of King *Philip*'s Counſellors, who was ſuſpected of the Murder, approached the Body it fell a bleeding, and that upon repeating the Experi-

periment ſeveral Times, it always bled afreſh; but the Juſtice of Peace did not think fit to commit him upon this Evidence, 'till one *Patuckſon* an *Indian* came in and ſwore, that he ſaw him with his Son, and another *Indian* called *Mattaſhinnamy* kill *Sauſaman*; upon this they were all three apprehended, and after a fair Trial for their Lives by a Jury, conſiſting half of *Engliſh*, and half of *Indians*, were found guilty; and tho' they denied the Fact upon the Ladder, yet the laſt of them happening to break or ſlip the Rope, confeſſed before he was turned off the ſecond Time, that the other two *Indians* who had ſuffered, did really murder *Sauſaman*, but himſelf was only a Spectator of it. * Anno 1675

Philip's Reſentments boiled in his Breaſt at theſe Proceedings of the *Engliſh*, for tho' he did not immediately break with them, yet he allowed his People to gather together in a tumultuous Manner, and inſult them as they were at Work in the Field, and when Complaint was made of the Diſorders of his People, and Meſſengers ſent to deſire him to prevent the like for the future; he received them with Diſdain, and ſent them home with a ſurly Anſwer. Things continued in this uncertain Poſture 'till the Month of *June*, when ſome of *Philip*'s Men rifled ſeveral Houſes in the Plantation near *Mount Hope*, the Place of *Philip*'s chief Reſidence; upon which one of the *Engliſh* fired his Gun, and wounded an *Indian*. The Governour of *Plimouth* hearing of theſe Diſorders, ſent out a Party of Men for the Defence of thoſe Parts, and proclaimed a Faſt to be obſerved throughout the whole Colony on the 24th of *June*; but

* Hubbart's *Narrative of the Troubles with the* Indians. *p.* 16.

as

Anno 1675 as the Inhabitants of *Swanzy* were going home from their Prayers, a Party of *Indians* that lay in Ambuſcade, fired upon them out of the Woods, killed one of their Company, and wounded another; the frighted People immediately diſpatched two Men for a Surgeon, but as they were haſtning to the Town the Meſſengers were intercepted by another Party of *Indians*, and killed; the ſame Night the *Indians* entred the Town of *Swanzy*, killed ſix Men, and then retired into the Woods.

THE War being thus begun, the Governour of *Plimouth* ſent Advice of it to the *Maſſachuſets*, and the other *United Colonies*, demanding their Aſſiſtance, according to the Articles of Union between them: The *Maſſachuſet-Colony* diſpatched away * Capt. *Thomas Prentice* with a Troop of Horſe, and Capt. *Daniel Henchman* with a Company of Foot who were followed by a Company of Volunteers under the Command of Capt. *Samuel Moſely*. They joyned the *Plimouth* Forces under Capt. *Cudworth* at *Swanzy*, on the 28th of *June*; and that very Evening a Party of twelve Men were ſent toward *Mount Hope* to look out the Enemy, who after they have made one Diſcharge at them from behind the Buſhes, whereby they killed one of the *Engliſh*, and wounded another, took to their Heels, and fled out of Sight. Next Morning the whole Army marched towards the Head-Quarters of the Enemy, and offered them Battle, but as ſoon as they had received one of our Fires, they abandoned their whole Territory to our juſt Revenge. The Army immediately took Poſſeſſion of *Mount Hope*, and ravaged the adjacent Country; in their March they found the mangled

* *Ibid.* p. 17.

Car-

Carcaſſes of ſome of their Countrymen, whoſe Heads were ſtuck upon Poles, Bibles torn in Pieces, empty *Wigwams*, or Cottages, and in a Word, all the Marks of a haſty Retreat; they purſued the Enemy ſeveral Days together, and skirmiſhed with them in the Woods till they cleared that Part of the Country pretty well of them. *Anno* 1675

WE have already obſerved, that *Philip* had been tampering with the *Narrhaganſets*, and the *Engliſh* were very jealous of *them*, for tho' they had not appeared openly in Arms; yet they had ſecretly encouraged *Philip* in his Deſigns, and by their unuſual Carriage towards the *Engliſh* at this Time gave Ground to believe, that they waited but a convenient Opportunity to declare themſelves: All the *Maſſachuſet*-Forces therefore were ordered to march over into their Country, not to commit any Acts of Hoſtility, but to demand peremptorily their renouncing all Alliances with *Philip*, and their entring into an offenſive and defenſive Alliance with the *Engliſh*; this wiſe Piece of Conduct frightned the *Sachems* of the *Narrhaganſets* into a thorough Submiſſion for the preſent, inſomuch that on the 15th of *July* they ſigned and ſealed Articles of Peace, wherein they promiſed, not only to forbear all Acts of Hoſtility againſt the *Engliſh*, but to aſſiſt them to their uttermoſt in deſtroying *Philip* and his Adherents, to ſeize and deliver up all the Subjects of *Philip* that ſhould come into their Territories, and to reſtore all ſtollen Goods; for the Performance of which they delivered up ſome of the *Sachem*'s near Kinſmen for Hoſtages. The *Engliſh* to encourage them in the Proſecution of the War, promiſed them twenty good Coats for *Philip*'s Head, and for every one of his Subjects that they ſhould deliver up to the *Engliſh* alive two

Coats,

Anno 1675 Coats, and dead one Coat; theſe Articles were ſigned by ſeven *Engliſh* and four *Indians* in the Name of *Canonicus*, and five other *Sachems* of the *Narrhaganſet* Country.

WHILE theſe Things were doing, Captain *Cudworth* with the *Plimouth* Forces was ſent to ſecure the *Pocaſſet-Indians*, but when he came into their Country he found them in Arms; Capt. *Fuller* and Capt. *Church* with two ſmall Detachments had been ſcouring the Woods, but were overpowered by an Army of *Indians* twenty Times ſuperior in Number to themſelves: *Fuller* and his Men fled to a little Houſe by the Water-ſide, which they made a ſhift to defend till a Sloop from *Rhode-Iſland* fetched them off; Capt. *Church* with fifteen Men was ſurrounded in a Peaſe-field by two hundred of the Enemy, where notwithſtanding the Inequality of Numbers he fought with invincible Reſolution and Bravery for a great while; at laſt he got to the Water-ſide, and defended himſelf behind a Barricado of Stones till he was brought off in a Sloop to *Rhode-Iſland* without the Loſs of one of his Men: When he had refreſhed his Men a few Days in the Iſland he paſſed over again to the Continent, and borrowing three Files of Men from the *Maſſachuſet*-Forces he engaged the *Pocaſſet-Indians* again, and ſlew fourteen or fifteen of them upon the Spot, which ſtruck ſuch a Terrour into the reſt that they fled into the Woods, and appeared no more in a Body in the open Country.

THE Detachments that were ſent againſt the *Pocaſſets* joyn'd the Army again as ſoon as the Treaty with the *Narrhaganſets* was finiſh'd, and Information being given at the ſame Time by ſome Deſerters that *Philip* and his Men were in a certain Swamp upon *Pocaſſet*-Neck, about 18 Miles diſtant, it was determin'd in a Council of War

War to beſiege him in it. The Army broke up immediately from *Taunton July* the 18th, and march'd directly to the Place. The Soldiers bravely entred the Thicket, but the Enemy was prepar'd to receive them, for no ſooner were they entred a few Paces but the *Indians* fir'd upon them from behind the Buſhes, and at one Diſcharge kill'd five of the *Engliſh*, and mortally wounded ſix or ſeven more. They then deſerted their Wigwams and retired deeper into the Swamp, the *Engliſh* likewiſe retreated out of Danger, finding it impoſſible to attack them in the Swamp without hazarding the Loſs of the whole Army; it was reſolved therefore to reduce them by a Blockade, and accordingly two hundred Men were poſted at the ſeveral Avenues of the Thicket, and the reſt of the Forces ſent away to the Relief of *Mendham*, where the *Nipmuck-Indians* were making terrible Spoil and Havock; *Philip* himſelf was in the Thicket, and muſt have ſurrendered if the *Engliſh* durſt have ventured in to attack him, but they were willing to ſpare the Lives of their Men, not doubting but they ſhould have him when his Proviſions were ſpent. *Philip* indeed was in great Perplexity, but being made deſperate, he formed a Stratagem, whereby he and ſome of his beſt fighting Men gave his Enemies the Slip; there was a large River which ran by the Side of the Thicket, which a Party of *Engliſh* poſted on the other Side were to obſerve, but *Philip* and his Men having cut down ſome Rafts of Timber out of the Woods, took the Advantage of a low Tide, and in the dead of the Night ſwam croſs the River upon them without being obſerved, and eſcaped into the *Nipmuck* Country: About one hundred poor Wretches that were left behind came out the next Day, and ſurrendred at Diſcretion. But the *Anno* 1675

Engliſh

Anno 1675. *English* knew nothing of *Philip*'s Eſcape 'till the Morning, when a Party was ſent out after him, who by the Direction of the *Monhegin-Indians* purſued him till Night, but could not come up with him, only they ſlew about thirty of his Men, who being fatigued with their laſt Night's Expedition were dropp'd by the Way.

THE Seat of the War was now carried into the *Nipmuck* Country, who inhabited the Inland Parts between the Sea-Coaſt and *Connecticut*-River, within the Juriſdiction of the *Maſſachuſet*-Colony. The *Nipmuck-Indians* had killed four or five of the Inhabitants of *Mendham*, *July* 14, which was the firſt Act of Hoſtility within the *Maſſachuſet*-Patent; Capt. *Hutchinſon* and Capt. *Wheeler* were ſent hereupon to prevent further Miſchief, and invite the Natives to a Treaty. They ſeemed at firſt inclinable to Peace, and fixed a Time for ſigning it; but *Philip* and his Men coming into theſe Parts before-hand ſpirited them up to a general Revolt, inſomuch that none of them came to the Place of Treaty; but when Capt. *Hutchinſon* with a ſmall Party rid up into the Country to ſee if he could learn the Meaning of it, they diſcharged a Volley of Shot upon him from an Ambuſcade, whereby the Captain himſelf was mortally wounded, and eight of his Men ſhot dead upon the Spot; the reſt fled back to *Quaboag*, or *Brookfield*, a little Village about 60 or 70 Miles from *Boſton* on the Road to *Connecticut*, and put the Inhabitants into ſuch a Conſternation, that they all to the Number of about 70 retired into one Houſe reſolving to live and dye together. *Philip* with his new-raiſed Army purſued them at the Heels, and coming to the Village ſet all the Houſes on Fire, and aſſaulted that in which all the Inhabitants were incloſed; they poured in Shot continually upon

upon the Beſieged for two Days together, and attempted ſix ſeveral Times to burn the Houſe, one while they threw Fire-brands into it, made of Rags tied to the End of Poles, and dipp'd in burning Brimſtone; another Time they filled a Cart with Flax, Hemp, and other combuſtible Matter, and puſhed it on with long Poles ſpliced one to another: This Device would certainly have taken Effect, if a great Storm of Rain had not ſuddenly extinguiſhed the Fire in the Machine before it took the Houſe; the beſieged behaved themſelves with the utmoſt Bravery, and were at laſt relieved by Major *Willard*, who hearing by Accident of their Diſtreſs, at 30 Miles Diſtance marched immediately with a Company of forty eight Men, and falling upon the *Indians* in the Night, killed about 80 of them, drove the reſt back into the Woods, and ſo raiſed the Siege of this little *Hovel*, for it deſerved no better a Name. Anno 1675

Philip with his Tawnies retired ſtill to the Weſtward, whereupon Capt. *Lathrop*, and Capt. *Beers* being joyned with the *Connecticut*-Forces under Major *Treat*, went out to obſerve him; and the Governour who heard that the Savages upon that River were in Motion, ſent a Party of Soldiers with an Officer to demand Hoſtages for their peaceable Behaviour; but *Philip* had been there beforehand, and prevailed with the *Indians* not only to mutiny againſt their King, but upon his peremptory Refuſal to declare againſt the *Engliſh*, to kill him, after which they abandon'd their Houſes, with a Deſign to joyn *Philip* and the *Nipmuck-Indians*; the Captains *Lathrop* and *Beers* purſued and overtook them at a Place called *Sugar-Loaf-Hill* ten Miles above *Hatfield*, where they ſkirmiſhed with them, and killed 26 of their Number with the Loſs of 9 or 10 of their own, but the reſt of them eſcaped to *Philip*.

Anno 1675

THUS this bloody War ſpread over all *New-England*, the *Indians* in all the ſeveral Colonies being now in Arms; *September* the firſt they laid all the Houſes of *Deerfield*-Plantation in Aſhes, and forced the Inhabitants to ſhut themſelves up within the Fortification of a poor Work which they had raiſed for their Defence: Two or three Days after they ſlew eight Men in the Woods at *Squakheag*, without attempting the Town; upon which Capt. *Beers* with 36 Men was ſent to fetch off that, and ſome other Frontier Garriſons, but he was intercepted by a large Troop of Savages, and himſelf with 20 of his Men cut in Pieces after they had fought to the laſt, with the utmoſt Reſolution and Bravery; the reſt eſcaped to *Hadly*, the barbarous Savages having cut off the Heads of the ſlain, ſtuck ſome of them on Poles by the High-way, and hung up others by the Jaws on Boughs of Trees. Major *Treat* with a larger Body of Men being ſent a few Days after to perform what Capt. *Beers* had undertaken was entertained with this melancholy Sight in his March.

BUT tho' the Inhabitants of theſe Plantations were brought off, their Retreat was ſo ſudden that they could not carry their Harveſt along with them, Capt. *Lathrop* therefore with about 80 Men went with Carts to fetch off the Corn that lay threſhed in *Deerfield*; but on *September* the 18th they were ſurrounded by a Body of 800 *Indians*; the Captain thinking he ſhould ſucceed beſt by fighting after the Manner of the Savages, ſheltring his Men behind Trees, expoſed them to inevitable Ruin, for the *Indians* being good Marks-men ſhot them down one after another; whereas if he had kept his Men together in a Body they might have broke thro' to ſome of the neighbouring Garriſons; but this fatal Miſtake of the Captain's coſt him not only his

his own Life, but the Lives of above 70 of his Followers, the Flower of the County of *Eſſex*, and as brave young Men as ever drew a Sword; this was the greateſt Loſs that ever befell the *New-England* Chriſtians till that Time. Capt. *Moſely* hearing the Noiſe of the Fire haſtned to relieve *Lathrop*, but came too late; however he charged thro' and thro' the Barbarians five or ſix Times, and with a Handful of Men killed above 100 of them, loſing no more than two of his own, and kept the Field till he had buried the ſlain. Anno 1675

The *Indians* encouraged with this Succeſs fell upon *Springfield* (the Hoſtages which they had given for their preſerving the Peace, having firſt made their Eſcape) and burned 32 Houſes, amongſt which was Mr. *Glover*'s the Miniſter's with his well-furniſh'd Library; they had infallibly maſſacred all the Inhabitants if an honeſt *Indian* called *Toto* had not diſcover'd their Deſign juſt Time enough for them to retire into the fortified Parts of the Town, where they made a ſhift to defend themſelves till Major *Treat*, Major *Pinchon*, and Capt. *Appleby* came in with their Forces, and put a Stop to the Fury of the inſulting Enemy.

It was now Time for the Council of *New-England* to conſider of the State of the War, and enter upon ſuch Meaſures, as by the Bleſſing of God might put a ſpeedy End to it; they appointed therefore a Committee of Miniſters and Gentlemen to enquire into the crying Sins of the Land, and draw up a Scheme for the Reformation of Manners; the Magiſtrates in the mean Time ordered all their Forces in the *Connecticut*-Colony to rendezvous about *Hadly*, *Northampton* and *Hatfield*, for the Security of thoſe Places; of which the *Indians* having no Notice, 800 of them breaking in

Anno 1675 upon *Hatfield*, *October* the 19th, met with such a warm Reception, that they were not only beat out of the Town, but puſhed into the River, where a great many of them loſt their Lives. This reſolute Repulſe gave ſuch a Check to the Enemies Courage, that they appeared no more in a Body in the Weſtern Plantations for a conſiderable Time, but as the Winter came on they took Shelter among the *Narhaganſets*, who were ſo far from delivering them up to the *Engliſh*, as they were bound to do by their late Treaty, that they received them with open Arms, and gave them the beſt Entertainment they were capable of.

THIS Conduct of the *Narrhaganſet-Indians* was voted by the Commiſſioners of the United Colonies at *Boſton* a Breach of the Peace; and certain Information being given, that they intended to begin a War in the Spring, the Commiſſioners reſolved to be beforehand with them, and accordingly ordered *Joſiah Winſlow* Governour of *Plimouth*-Colony with a thouſand Men, 527 of which were the *Maſſachuſet*-Forces, the reſt *Plimouth* and *Connecticut*, to march immediately into their Country, and deſtroy it with Fire and Sword. *

December the 12th the General paſs'd over *Patuxet*-River with the *Plimouth* and *Maſſachuſet*-Forces, and took 36 Priſoners, among whom was one *Peter*, who having received ſome Diſguſt from his Countrymen liſted himſelf among the *Engliſh*, and undertook to be their Guide: *December* the 14th they burnt 150 Wigwams, killed ſeven of the Enemy, and took eight Priſoners: On the 16th Capt. *Prentice* with his Troop being ſent to *Petequamſot*, brought back

* Hubbard, *p.* 47.

News,

News, that the Enemy had burnt *Jerry Bull*'s Garriſon-Houſe, killed ten Men, and five Women and Children; the ſame Day the *Connecticut*-Forces joyn'd the Army to the Number of 300 *Engliſh*, and 150 *Mohegin-Indians*: *December* the 18th they marched 16 Miles up into the Country to a Fort which the *Indians* had raiſed upon an Iſland of about five or ſix Acres in the midſt of an horrid Swamp, and fortify'd with Paliſadoes, and a Wall of about a Rod thick; * the Entrance into the Fort was over a long Tree laid a-croſs the Water, over which but one Man could paſs at a Time: It was thought impracticable to attack the Fort at this narrow Paſſage, but they could find no other, till *Peter* who was acquainted with all the Avenues ſhewed them a large Breach, which was only filled up with long Trees to the Height of four or five Foot from the Ground, and here the Enemy had built a *Block-Houſe* which commanded the Breach, from whence they could pour in Vollies of Shot upon ſuch as ſhould venture to mount it: However the *Engliſh* found they muſt ſtorm the Fort in this Place, or not at all, and having agreed upon it in a Council of War, the Army was marſhall'd in the following Order; Capt. *Moſely* and Capt. *Davenport* led up the Van of the *Maſſachuſet*-Forces, Capt. *Gardner* and Capt. *Johnſon* were in the Centre, Major *Appleton* and Capt. *Oliver* brought up the Rear. General *Winſlow* with the *Plimouth*-Forces marched in the Centre, and Major *Treat*, the Captains *Sielly*, *Gallop*, *Maſon*, *Watts*, and *Marſhall* with the *Connecticut*-Forces brought up the Rear of the whole Body. They entred the Swamp, or Anno 1675

* Hubbard, *p.* 52.

Anno 1675 Thicket about one a-Clock, and preſſed forward to the Breach which they mounted with great Bravery and Reſolution, receiving the Fire of the Enemy from the Block-Houſe all the while; ſix valiant Captains dyed in the Breach, namely, *Davenport*, *Gardner*, *Johnſon*, *Gallop*, *Sielly* and *Marſhal*; but the Fall of theſe Men ſerved only to enrage the Soldiers, who leap'd boldly over the Trees into that Spot of Ground where Death with all its Terrors was to be faced; they beat the Enemy from one cover'd Way to another till they had driven them out of all their Fences, and made them fly into a vaſt Cedar Swamp at ſome Diſtance off; after which they ſet Fire to the Fort, and levell'd the Fortifications; 700 fighting *Indians* periſhed in this Action, among whom was above twenty of their chief Captains, beſides 300 which dyed of their Wounds, and a vaſt Number of old Men, Women and Children, who had crouded into the Fort, as thinking it impregnable; and it muſt be allowed to have been the beſt Fortification the *Indians* were ever Maſters of, and the Loſs of it gave them ſuch a terrible Blow, as they were never able to recover; the *Engliſh* loſt in this Gallant Action ſix Captains, and 85 Soldiers, beſides 150 wounded: As ſoon as the Action was over, which was a little before Night, the General rallied all his Forces together without Loſs of Time, and having taken Care of his wounded Men, he marched back his whole Army in a froſty Night 16 Miles to their Head-Quarters; where they refreſhed themſelves for ſome Days, and then went into Winter-Quarters.

THE Winter was ſpent in fruitleſs Treaties about a Peace which came to nothing, the *Engliſh* in the mean Time ſcoured the Woods as well as they could, but the *Indians* who were

ſwift

ſwift of Foot, and capable of enduring the Hardſhips of a Winter-Campaign, did a great deal of Miſchief * to the Frontier-Towns, in in the froſty Weather; eſpecially after they had received Recruits from the *French* at *Canada*; for tho' the two Kings of *England* and *France* were at Peace, yet the Governour of *Canada* thought it for his Maſter's Intereſt to ſupport the *Indians* againſt the *Engliſh*, in Order to prevent their growing too powerful, even with the Breach of the publick Faith. With theſe Recruits they burnt the Town of *Mendham*, and laid it in Aſhes after the Inhabitants had deſerted it. *January* the 27th they carried off 200 Sheep, 50 Head of Neat Cattle, and 15 Horſes from Mr. *Carpenter*'s Farm. On *February* the 10th they plunder'd the Town of *Lancaſter*, burned ſeveral Houſes, killed and carried into Captivity 42 Perſons, among whom was the Miniſter Mr. *Rolandſon*'s Wife and Children, who was then at *Boſton* ſoliciting Succours, but upon his Return found his Houſe and Library in Aſhes, and which was worſe, all his Family carried into Slavery by the *Barbarians*, who had been compelled to quit the Place ſome Days before by Capt. *Wadſworth*: From hence they went to *Marlborough*, *Sudbury* and *Chelmsford*, and did all the Miſchief that their haſty March would allow. *February* the 21ſt, 2 or 300 of them ſurprized *Medfield*, about 20 Miles from *Boſton*, burnt half the Town, and killed 20 of the Inhabitants; the like Damage they did to *Weymouth*: In the Beginning of *March* they burnt the whole Town of *Groton* to the Ground, and called out inſolently to the *Engliſh* in the Garriſon, *What will you do for an Houſe to*

Anno 1676

* *Ibid.* p. 17.

Anno 1675 *pray in, now we have burnt your Meeting Houſe?* *March* the 14th they broke through the Palliſadoes which were made for the Defence of *Northampton*, burn'd five Houſes, and killed five Perſons, but were prevented from doing further Miſchief by the ſeaſonable Arrival of Major *Thomas Savage*, with a ſtrong Party of *Engliſh* under his Command. Upon this the Enemy left this Part of the Country for the preſent, and croſs'd over into the Colony of *Plimouth*, where the Seat of the War was at firſt: Here they ſurprized Part of the Town of *Plimouth* itſelf, and murdered two Families in the Night: On the 17th of *March* they laid the whole Town of *Warwick* in Aſhes, except one Houſe, and then retired into the *Woods*.

THESE Excurſions of the Enemy alarm'd the whole *Colony*, ſo that they ordered out Capt. *Pierce* immediately with 50 *Engliſh* and 20 Chriſtian *Indians* to purſue the Incendiaries; but on the 26th of *March* he fell into an Ambuſcade, at which the *Indians* are very dextrous; and after a bloody Fight wherein he killed 140 of the Enemy, being overpowered with Numbers, himſelf and his whole Army were cut off, except one *Engliſhman* and twelve *Indians*. The ſame Day another Party of Savages laid the Town of *Marlborough* in Aſhes; on the 28th they burnt 40 Houſes at *Rehoboth*, and the next Day about 30 more at *Providence*, for the Inhabitants of theſe Towns not being ſtrong enough to reſiſt the Fury of the Enemy, retired into their Garriſons, and ſo left their Houſes open to their Inſults. In the Beginning of *April* they committed terrible Cruelties at *Chelmsford* and *Andover*; and tho' 140 of the Inhabitants of *Sudbury* ſallied out upon them, and killed 30 out of 300 in one Night, yet upon the 18th of this Month they renewed their Attack upon

upon the Place, burnt ſeveral Houſes, and cut off 12 Men who were coming from *Concord* to their Aſſiſtance: The Captains *Wadſworth* and *Brattlebank* hearing of theſe Murders and Devaſtations, made a long March with 70 Men for their Relief, but the *Indians* having Notice of it, ſurrounded them in the Woods with 500 Men, and after an obſtinate Fight wherein they loſt 120 Men, killed the Captains, and 50 of their Men on the Spot, and took five or ſix Priſoners, whom they put to Death with moſt exquiſite Torments, making them firſt run the Gantlet, after which they threw hot Aſhes upon them, and cutting out Pieces of their Fleſh, put fire into their Wounds, and roaſted them alive. *Anno* 1676

THUS the *Indians* continued proſperous during the whole Winter, wherein the Cold was ſo extream, that the *Engliſh* durſt hardly look out of their Quarters; many Days of Faſting and Prayer were kept both in *New* and *Old England* by the Diſſenters for their diſtreſſed Brethren; and as the Spring advanced it pleaſed Almighty God to give a remarkable Turn to their Affairs. The firſt Blow that was given them was by Capt. *Denniſon*, who at the Head of *66 Engliſh*, and about 100 Confederate-*Indians* took and ſlew 76 of the Enemy in the Month of *April*, among whom was ſome of their chief Princes; and about the ſame Time a Party of *Connecticut* Soldiers took and ſlew 44 of the Enemy without any Loſs: Among the Priſoners was *Canonchet* Son of *Miantonimo* firſt Sachem of the *Narrhaganſets*, and Heir of all his Father's Pride; he came to *Boſton* in *October* laſt, under Pretence of concluding a Peace with the *Engliſh*, but as ſoon as he got home ſpread the Flames of War all over his Country; the *Engliſh* therefore wiſely deliver'd him up to their *Indian* Auxiliaries the *Mohawks* to cut off his Head, that ſo the Enmity

Anno 1676 mity between the two Nations might become incurable.

BUT that which effectually deſtroyed the Force of the *Indian* Arms, and broke all their Meaſures, * was a Difference that happened among themſelves which broke out about this Time into an open War. *Philip* had retired laſt Winter into the Territories of *Maquas*, a potent *Indian* Nation in the Weſt, and had been civilly received and entertained by them, but could not by any Arguments or Perſwaſions draw them into the War againſt the *Engliſh*: At laſt he reſolved to try the following Stratagem; he walk'd out into the *Woods* alone, and meeting with ſome of the *Maquas* at a Diſtance from one another, he murdered them with his own Hands, and as ſoon as he had done, ran in great Haſte to the Prince of the *Maquas*, and told him, that a Party of *Plimouth*-Soldiers had invaded his Country, and killed ſeveral of his Subjects in the *Woods*. This raiſed a mighty Ferment among the People, and would effectually have anſwered *Philip*'s End, if it had not happened unluckily for him, that one of the Men whom he thought he had killed, recover'd ſo far of his Wounds, as to crawl home to his Friends, and inform them of the Truth of the Matter before he dyed: Upon this the Nation conceived ſuch an implacable Hatred againſt *Philip*, that they reſolved not only to continue their Alliance with the *Engliſh*, but to act ſeparately againſt him and his Confederates, and drive them out of the Country with Fire and Sword. Accordingly in the Spring they broke in upon thoſe Nations that were in Confederacy with *Philip*, and gave them ſuch a powerful Diver-

* C. Mather *Book* VII. *p.* 83.

ſion,

ſion, that they were not able any longer to make Head againſt the *Engliſh*. They purſued them thro' the *Woods*, beat up their Quarters continually, and carried away their Wives and Children into Captivity which broke their Courage, and made many of *Philip*'s own Men reproach his Conduct, and deſert him. There were ſome ſmall Parties of *Indians* after this that frighten'd the Inhabitants of *Plimouth*, *Taunton*, *Chelmsford*, *Concord*, *Haverfield*, *Bradford*, and *Woburn*, by their Excurſions, but did them no great Damage; they attempted to fire the Town of *Bridgwater*, but the Inhabitants ſallying out upon them, and a great Shower of Rain falling at the ſame Time ſaved that Place. *Anno* 1676

THE *Engliſh* on the other Hand killed ſeveral of the *Indians* near *Medfield* and *Plimouth*, and having Notice by two Boys who had made their Eſcape from them, that a Body of the Enemy were ſecurely clanning together near the *Upper Falls* of *Connecticut*-River, Capt. *Turner* with 180 Men haſtned thither, killed 100 of them upon the Spot, and puſhed as many more into the River, but the Captain paid dear for this Victory afterwards, for in his Retreat he fell into an Ambuſcade of the Enemy, and after a brave Reſiſtance was himſelf killed with 38 of his Men. *May* the 30th the *Indians* made an Aſſault upon the Town of *Hatfield*, but were repulſed with the Loſs of 25 Men. At *Rehoboth* they loſt 12 more. *June* the 12th 700 *Indians* attacked the Town of *Hadley*, but were repuls'd with conſiderable Loſs. On the other Hand, a Party of the *Maſſachuſet*-Forces took and killed 40 *Indians*; the *Connecticut*-Forces in one March deſtroyed 100, and in another which they made into the *Narrhaganſet*-Country under the Command of the brave Major *Tolcot* 360 more.

Anno 1676

IT would tire the Reader's Patience ſhould I ſet down all the Excurſions of the ſeveral ſmall Parties of *Engliſh* againſt the Enemy, with the Heroick Valour of ſeveral private Perſons, which yet deſerve to be remembred and praiſed; but 'tis obſervable that the *Engliſh* Colonies did not unite their Forces this Summer, as they did laſt Winter in the Expedition againſt the *Narrhaganſets*, becauſe the Enemy had now no Forts or Caſtles left, but lived in the Woods, and ranged up and down the Country in flying Parties, burning and plundering ſuch Villages as they could ſurprize on a ſudden, and then retiring into the Woods again; it was in vain to follow ſuch an Enemy with a numerous Army; each *Colony* therefore acted ſeparately, guarding their own Frontiers, and joyning their Allies as Occaſion requir'd: The Deſign of the *Engliſh* was to beat up the Enemies Quarters as often as they could, in Order to prevent their planting their Corn in the Spring, and their fiſhing in the Summer, for want of which they were now reduced to very diſtreſſing Circumſtances; for the Famine began to rage amongſt them, inſomuch that ſome of them were almoſt ſtarved, and the reſt were forced to feed upon unwholſome Diet, which threw them into Fevers, Fluxes, and other epidemical Diſtempers; theſe Conſiderations, together with a Proclamation from the *Maſſachuſet*-Government, that ſuch *Indians* as ſhould ſubmit themſelves to the *Engliſh* within 14 Days might hope for Mercy, induced 200 of the Enemy to come to *Plimouth*, and lay down their Arms; being abſolutely reduced to this Dilemma, either of periſhing by Famine, or throwing themſelves upon the Mercy of the *Engliſh*; the Government accepted of their Submiſſion, and pardoned them all but three, who were convicted by one of their own Company of

a

a cruel Murther, and a villanous Aſſault upon Mr. *Clarke*'s Houſe of *Plimouth*. Anno 1676

SOON after this 200 of the Enemy with *Philip* at their Head fell upon the Town of *Taunton*, but met with a warm Reception, their Deſign having been diſcovered by a *Negro* who made his Eſcape from them, Time enough for the Inhabitants to put themſelves into a Poſture of Defence. *July* the 22d, the *Maſſachuſet*-Forces returned home, having taken and killed about 150 ſtragling *Indians* with the Loſs of but one of their own Number; for *Philip* and his Followers being now diſtreſſed on every Side left the *Maſſachuſet*-Juriſdiction, and returned to their old Quarters about *Mount Hope* in the Juriſdiction of *Plimouth*, which made that *Colony* the chief Stage of Action the remaining Part of the Summer. Here he had like to have ſurpriſed Major *Bradford* in an Ambuſh, but the Major happily diſengaged himſelf without the Loſs of one of his Men, and marched into the Territory of the *Saconets*, the Queen of which Country at the Head of 90 of her Subjects came to the Major, laid down her Arms, and ſubmitted to Mercy. Capt. *Church* going out with a Party of no more than 18 *Engliſh* and 22 Confederate-*Indians*, had the good Fortune to kill 76 Savages in four ſeveral Engagements, without the Loſs of one of his Men.* At *Dedham* a Party of 26 *Engliſh* and 10 Confederate-*Indians* purſued and took 50 of the Enemy, among whom was *Pomham* a mighty Sachem of the *Narrhaganſets*, who though he was mortally wounded, and left for dead, yet when one of the *Engliſh* came to rifle him, the dying Savage got Hold of the Hair of his Head, and

* Hubbard. *p.* 100.

would

Anno 1676 would have killed him if ſome of his Friends had not immediately come to his Reſcue. *July* 27th, *John* a *Segamore*, or Lord of the *Nipmuck-Indians* with 180 of his Men laid down his Arms, and ſubmitted to Mercy, and to ingratiate himſelf with the *Engliſh* brought in Priſoner *Matoonas* and his Son, who was the firſt Man that appeared in Arms in the *Maſſachuſet-Colony* the laſt Summer; they ſpared the Son's Life, but ordered *Segamore John* to ſhoot the Father dead, which he did. *July* the 31ſt a ſmall Party marching out of *Bridgwater* fell in with a Company of *Indians* with *Philip* at their Head: *Philip* commanded his Men to fire, but their Pieces being wet would not go off, upon which they took to their Heels and ran away as faſt as they could; the *Engliſh* killed ten in the Purſuit, and took fifteen Priſoners with a great deal of Booty. *Auguſt* the firſt Capt. *Church* with about thirty *Engliſh* and twenty Confederate-*Indians* took twenty three of the Enemy, and the next Morning ſurpriſed *Philip* in his Head-Quarters, killed 130 of his Men, and took his Wife and Son Priſoners, himſelf hardly eſcaping.

Auguſt the 6th an *Indian* Deſerter informed the Inhabitants of *Taunton* of a Body of the Enemy who were ſecurely clanning in the neighbouring Woods, whereupon they immediately ſallied out upon them, and brought in 26 Priſoners; the brave Queen of *Pocaſſet Philip*'s near Kinſwoman and Confederate loſt her Life upon this Occaſion; ſhe animated her Men with her Preſence as long as there was any Hopes of Succeſs, but when they traiterouſly deſerted her ſhe fled to her Canoe, hoping to paſs the River in it, but not finding it ready ſhe attempted to croſs upon a Piece of Timber, and was drowned; her Body was thrown aſhore ſometime after at *Metapoiſet*, where the *Engliſh* finding it, cut

off

off the Head, not knowing whoſe it was, and ſet it upon a Pole in *Taunton*, which the *Indians* ſeeing made hideous Howlings and Lamentations for her. *Anno* 1676

SOON after this, *Philip* himſelf was betrayed by one of his own Friends and Counſellors, who being diſguſted at him for killing an *Indian* who only ventured to mention to him an Expedient for making Peace with the *Engliſh*, ran away to *Rhode-Iſland*, and informed Capt. *Church* where he was, and how he might be ſurpriſed: *Philip* was ſtrangely dejected at the Deſertion of his Friend, his Head was diſturbed that Night with frightful and terrifying Dreams of his falling into the Hands of the *Engliſh*, and therefore early in the Morning he called his Friends together, and was telling them the ſad Apprehenſions he had from the Villain that was gone from them, when Capt. *Church* with a ſmall Party of *Engliſh* and *Indians* ſurpriſed and diſperſed them. *Philip* attempted to eſcape out of the *Swamp*, but an *Engliſh* Man and an *Indian* firing at him, the former's Piece being wet would not go off, but the latter ſhot him through the Heart, *Auguſt* the 12th, 1676: His Body was quartered, and ſet upon Poles, and his Head was carried in Triumph to *Plimouth*, where his Skull is preſerved as a Curioſity to be ſeen at this Day.

THUS dyed *Philip* Grandſon of Old *Maſſaſoiet* Sachem of the *Wompanoags*; an implacable Enemy of the *Engliſh* Nation, he was a bold and daring Prince, having all the Pride, Fierceneſs and Cruelty of a Savage in his Diſpoſition, with a Mixture of deep Cunning and Deſign; being reſolved to make a Stand againſt the growing Power of the *Engliſh*; he was Maſter of ſo much Intrigue, as to engage all the *Indian* Nations in his Neighbourhood in the War with him,

Anno 1676 him, and when his Affairs grew deſperate he choſe rather to dye than ſubmit, or hearken to any Terms of Accommodation: He was no leſs an Enemy to the Chriſtian Religion, and would never ſuffer it to be preached to his People; when the Reverend Mr. *Eliot* offered to reaſon with him upon this Head, he received him with Contempt, and taking Hold of the Button of his Coat told him, that he cared for his Goſpel no more than for that Button. *Philip*'s Death was attended with the diſperſing of all his Followers, who fled ſome to *Albany*, and others to *Piſcataqua*, many of the Straglers were taken by the *Engliſh*, and their Chiefs put to Death, the reſt ſubmitted to ſuch Terms as the Conquerors were pleaſed to impoſe upon them: And thus the War ended in the Weſtern Parts of *New-England*, which broke the Strength of the ſeveral *Indian* Nations in thoſe Parts ſo effectually, that ſince that Time they have never been capable of giving the *Engliſh* any Diſturbance.

In the Eaſt, the *Indians* bordering on the Provinces of *Main* and *New-Hampſhire* lying beyond *Piſcataqua*-River had driven a very profitable Trade with the *Engliſh*, who had ſettled there from the *Maſſachuſets*; * they were without the Line of the *Maſſachuſet*-Charter, and conſequently a diſtinct Government by themſelves, tho' the Proprietors never obtained a Charter from the Crown; theſe *Europeans* were ſo intent upon their Trade, that they had no Time to build Towns or Garriſons, but lived in Houſes ſcattered up and down the open Country; they cheated the Natives in the moſt open and bare-faced Manner imaginable, and treated them

* Mather *Book* VII. *p.* 55.

like

like Slaves. Once when there was a very great Drought in the Country, insomuch that the *Indian* Corn was parch'd up, and the Apple-Trees wither'd, they would not furnish them with a little Powder and Shot to save them from perishing: The *Indians* were not insensible of this Usage, but were afraid to do themselves Justice, 'till they heard that all *New-England* was involv'd in a bloody War with *Philip*. *Anno* 1676

WITHIN a Month after the breaking out of that War, the *Indians* in these Parts took Heart, and meeting with the *English*, told them plainly they would bear their Insults no longer. Each Party at first gave the other hard Words, from whence they proceeded to Scuffling and Blows. Several little Skirmishes past between them in the first three or four Months of the War, wherein the *English* lost 50, and the *Indians* 90 of their People; but these were but the Beginnings of greater Desolations, for in the Spring of this Year the *Indians* came down out of the Woods in vast Numbers, and broke up all the *English* Plantations to the North of *Wells*, destroying all the Country with Fire and Sword; they burnt Captain *Boniton*'s House to the Ground, and besieged Major *Philips*'s, but the Major with 10 Men defended his House so bravely, that the Enemy, after 24 Hours Siege, retired with the Loss of 20 or 30 Men. From thence they went to *Casco*, and murther'd Mr. *Wakely*, his Wife, his Son, and Daughter-in-Law with Child, and two Grandchildren, and carried away three more into Captivity. This honest old Man was often heard to say with Tears, that he believed God was angry with him, because when he came over into *New-England* for the Sake of Religion, he had left those Parts where he might have enjoy'd it, for a Place where there was neither Church, nor Ministry, nor so much as the Show

Anno 1676 of any Religion at all. On the 14th of *Auguſt* they invaded *Arrowſick* Iſland in *Kennebeck* River, deſtroy'd every thing that was valuable in it, and murther'd Captain *Thomas Lake*, and as many more *Engliſh* as came in their Way. In *September* they burnt the two *Cheſlies* Houſes about *Oyſter* River, and kill'd two Men. *October* 16, One hundred of them aſſaulted *Newechewannick*, and kill'd two Men. Lieutenant *Plaiſted* hearing of their Danger, ſent ſeven Men from the next Garriſon to their Relief, who falling into an Ambuſcade loſt three of their Number, the reſt being hardly able to make good their Retreat. The Lieutenant marching out next Morning with 28 Men to fetch off the dead Bodies, was ſurrounded by 150 *Indians*; and tho' the greateſt Part of his Men got off, yet himſelf, with ſome of the braveſt of his Followers, loſt their Lives. *October* the 12th they made an Aſſault upon *Black Point*, which was ſurrender'd to them upon Condition the Inhabitants might depart with their Goods, which the greateſt Part of them took care to do while the Governor was in Treaty with them: But theſe Excurſions of the Enemy alarm'd the whole Province, and oblig'd the Inhabitants of *Sheepſcoat* River, *Kennebeck* River, *Sagadehock* and the adjacent Parts, to deſert the open Country, and retire within the Government of the *Maſſachuſets*.

IN the mean Time Application being made to *Boſton* for Aſſiſtance, the *Maſſachuſets* Colony ſent out a Body of Men under the Command of Captain *Thomas Hawthorn*, Captain *Syll*, and others, for the Subduing theſe *Indians*, but they found it impracticable; for there being no Towns or Forts for the *Engliſh* to garriſon, the *Indians* could make their Excurſions into the open Country, and retire again into the Woods before it was poſſible for the Army to overtake them: How-

However the *Maſſachuſet* Forces, after ſeveral ſmart Skirmiſhes with various Succeſs, on the 6th of *September* * ſurprized about 400 *Indians* as they were plundering Major *Walderen*'s Houſe at *Quochecho*, and took them all Priſoners: Thoſe that were taken in Arms, which were about 200, were ſold for Slaves; the reſt, upon Promiſe of living peaceably and quietly with the *Engliſh* for the future, were ſent home, ſome few only who had been guilty of Murther being put to death. *Anno* 1676

BUT notwithſtanding this, and ſome other little Advantages that they gain'd over the Enemy, 'tis certain the *Engliſh* were ſick of the War, and glad to embrace the firſt Offers of Peace; and accordingly when *Mugg*, a chief Leader among them, but a known Villain, made ſome Propoſals, they agreed with him on the following Articles.

Covenants and Agreements, made and concluded by and between the Governor and Council of the *Maſſachuſet*'s Colony in *New-England* on the one Part; and *Mugg Indian*, in the Name and on the Behalf of *Madockawando* and *Chebartina*, Sachems of *Penobſcot*, on the other Part.

(1.) "WHEREAS the ſaid *Mugg* hath "been ſent and employ'd by the "ſaid Sachems upon a Treaty with the ſaid "Governor and Council relating to a Concluſion "of Peace, doth hereby covenant and engage "for himſelf, and in Behalf of the ſaid Sachems, "that from henceforth they will ceaſe all Acts "of Hoſtility, and hold an entire and firm Union and Peace with all the *Engliſh* of the Colo-"nies of *New-England*.

* Hubbard, *Part II. p.* 28.

Anno 1676 (2.) "THAT immediately on the ſaid *Mugg's* "Return, the ſaid Sachems ſhall deliver up to ſuch "*Engliſhman* or Men, as ſhall by Order of the "ſaid Governor and Council be ſent with him, "all ſuch *Engliſh* Captives, Veſſels, and Goods "whatſoever, Arms and great Artillery belong-"ing to the *Engliſh*, as are in their Cuſtody, or "under their Power, as have been taken from "them during the Time of the late Hoſtility.

(3.) "THAT they will uſe their utmoſt En-"deavour with all poſſible ſpeed to procure pay, "wherewith to make full Satisfaction to the "*Engliſh*, for all ſuch Injuries, Loſſes and Da-"mages, as they have ſuſtain'd by them in their "Houſing, Cattle, or other Eſtate, during the "Time of the late Hoſtility, or elſe to pay ſuch "a Number of *Beaver* Skins yearly in order "thereunto, as ſhall be agreed on between the "ſaid Sachems, and ſuch Perſon or Perſons as "ſhall be ſent to them from the ſaid Governor "and Council for the Ratification hereof, to "be paid at ſuch Time and Place, as ſhall be "then agreed upon.

(4.) "THAT upon Conſideration of the "*Engliſh* furniſhing of them with Powder and "Ammunition for their neceſſary Supplies and "Maintenance, they do covenant and promiſe "not to trade for or buy any Powder or Am-"munition, but of ſuch Perſons as ſhall from "Time to Time be deputed by the Governor "for that End.

(5.) "THAT if it appear that *Walter Gendal*, "and the Men ſent with him in the Veſſel from "*Piſcataqua*, (with Goods from Mr. *Fryer* for "the Redemption of the Captives, according "to Agreement) or any of them are ſurpriz'd, "and ſlain by any of their *Indians*, or any others "whom they can bring under their Power, that "they ſhall forthwith execute ſuch Murtherer

or

" or Murtherers, or otherwiſe deliver them up " into the Hands of the *Engliſh*. *Anno* 1676.

(6.) " THAT if the *Amonoſcoggin*, or any o- " ther *Indians* in the Eaſtern Parts that are in " Hoſtility with the *Engliſh*, ſhall not fully con- " ſent to theſe Covenants and Agreements, but " ſhall perſiſt in Acts of Hoſtility againſt the " *Engliſh*, that then the ſaid Sachems ſhall, and " will hold all ſuch *Indians* to be their Enemies, " and take up Arms againſt them, and engage " them as ſuch.

(*Laſtly*,) " THE ſaid *Mugg*, as a Pledge and " Aſſurance of his own Fidelity, and that he is " empower'd by the ſaid Sachems for the End " aboveſaid, and for the Performance of the a- " bovemention'd Agreements, doth freely and " willingly depoſite himſelf and his Life in the " Hands of the *Engliſh*, to remain with them " as a Hoſtage, until the ſaid Captives, Goods " and Veſſels ſhall be deliver'd up."

Boſton, Nov. 13. 1676.

Signed in the Preſence of
John Earthy,
Richard Oliver,
Iſaac Addington.

The Mark of
Mugg W *Indian*.

Madockawando perform'd his Part of the Treaty, and deliver'd up his Captives, but could not perſwade his Countrymen to ſubmit: The *Maſſachuſets* therefore diſpatch'd 200 Men, under the Command of Major *Walderen*, to oblige them to it. The Major met with a Body of *Indians* at *Penobſcot*, and would have treated with them for the Releaſe of the Captives on both Sides, but finding them treacherous, he fir'd upon them, and took ſeveral of them Priſoners, with a conſiderable Booty: But after all, the Major could neither conquer the Eaſtern *Indians*, nor

Anno 1676 nor obtain the Releaſe of the Priſoners, but return'd to *Boſton* with no other Lawrel than that he loſt none of his Men. Soon after this a Sort of Peace was concluded, not very honourable to the *Engliſh*, for among other Articles that were agreed to this was one, *That the* Engliſh *ſhould allow the* Indians *a certain Quantity of Corn yearly, as a kind of Quit Rent for their Lands.* Upon the Signing of the Peace the *Engliſh* return'd to their Plantations again, Trade began to flouriſh, and the Number of Inhabitants encreas'd to ſuch a degree, that within a few Years there were ten or twelve little Towns built within the Provinces of *Main* and *New-Hampſhire*.

THUS within the Compaſs of two Years ended the *Philippick* War, wherein all the *Indian* Nations that took part in it were ſubdued and brought under the Power of the *Engliſh*, except thoſe in the North Eaſt, who not only maintained their Ground, but gained ſuch Advantages as made them in a Manner Maſters of the Peace. And tho' the Actions of this War are not ſo important as thoſe of *Flanders* and *Spain*, which have lately raiſed the Wonder of the World; yet the Valour of theſe *Engliſh* Captains in *America*, who died in the Bed of Honour, and ſaved their Country from the Miſery and Ruin that a barbarous Enemy would have brought upon it, ought to be remembred and praiſed by Poſterity.

THERE is one Thing which deſerves to be taken particular Notice of, and that is, The unſhaken Fidelity of the *Indian Converts* during the whole Courſe of this War, whom neither the Perſwaſions nor Threatnings of their Countrymen could draw from their Allegiance to the *Engliſh*. The Government kept a watchful Eye over them at firſt; and the Mob, being incenſed againſt the *Indian Savages*, could hardly be reſtrained

ſtrained from ſacrificing the *Converts* to their Fury; for they demanded of the Governor of *Martha's* Vineyard the diſarming of all the *Indians* upon the Iſland, and in caſe of a Refuſal, they threatned to oblige them to it by Force of Arms, tho' the others were Twenty to One in Number. Hereupon Mr. *Mayhew* ordered Capt. *Richard Sarſon* to march with a ſmall Party to the Weſt End of the Iſland, and make this Propoſition to the *Indian Converts*, * only as an Expedient for the Quieting the Minds of the People; but the Anſwer they received was this: "That the delivering up of their Arms would "expoſe them to the Rage and Anger of their "Countrymen engaged in the preſent War, who "were no leſs theirs than the Enemies of the "*Engliſh*: That they had never given the leaſt "Occaſion for the Diſtruſt the People had en-"tertained; but that if in any thing, conſiſtent "with their own Safety, they could give any "further Proofs of their Fidelity, they would "readily comply with what ſhould be demanded, "but they were unwilling to deliver up their "Arms, unleſs the *Engliſh* could propoſe ſome "other Way for their Safety and Livelihood." With this Anſwer they delivered the Captain a Writing in their own Language, wherein they declare, "That as they had already ſubmitted "to the Crown of *England*, ſo they were deter-"mined to aſſiſt the *Engliſh* on theſe Iſlands "againſt their Enemies, whom they eſteemed "equally their own, as being Subjects of the "ſame King." The Governor was ſo well ſatisfied with this Anſwer, that he gave them no farther Trouble; but inſtead of diſarming them, ſupplied them with all Sorts of Ammunition,

Anno 1676.

* C. Mather, Book vi. p. 57.

Anno 1676 and committed the Defence of the Iſland to their Care; and ſo faithful were they to their Truſt, that all Perſons that landed upon the Iſland during the Courſe of the War were without Diſtinction, brought before the Governor to be examined.

ON the 5th of *April* this Year died *John Winthrop*, jun. Eſq; Governor of the United Colonies of *Connecticut* and *Newhaven*, and Fellow of the Royal Society: He was Son of *John Winthrop*, Eſq; firſt Governor of the *Maſſachuſets*, and was born at *Groton* in *Suffolk*, 1605. He was educated at *Cambridge*, and came over with his Father to *New-England*, 1631, where he was immediately choſen into the Magiſtracy. He returned to *England* in the Year 1634. and came over again the Year following with Powers from the Lord *Say* and *Brook* to begin a Plantation on *Connecticut* River, and a Commiſſion for himſelf to be Governor of it. Here he built *Say-Brook* Fort, the beſt Security againſt the Incurſions of the *Indians* that the *Engliſh* in thoſe Parts were ever Maſters of. Upon the Reſtoration of King *Charles* the Second he undertook a Voyage to *England*, and obtained a Charter for the two Colonies of *Connecticut* and *Newhaven*, whereby they were inveſted with greater Privileges than any of their Neighbours. The United Colonies for this extraordinary Piece of Service choſe him their Governor every Year after as long as he lived. When the Government was diſtreſſed by the War with *Philip*, and the Affairs of the Country required the Advice of the moſt experienced Counſellors, Mr. *Winthrop* travelled to *Boſton*, to aſſiſt as a Commiſſioner of the General Court, where he was ſeized with a Fever, and died in the 22d Year of his Age. He was a fine Gentleman: A good Natural Philoſopher and Phyſician. His Cloſet was always

ways furniſhed with the beſt Medicines, which he charitably diſtributed to ſuch of his poor Neighbours as had need of them. *Anno* 1678

ON the 16th of *March* died Mr. *John Leverett*, Governor of the *Maſſachuſet* Colony. He had been a Soldier, and ſignalized himſelf in ſeveral conſiderable Actions abroad in his younger Years, but of late had applied himſelf wholly to the Art of Government; and was ſo well beloved by the Colony, that his Election as Governor was never conteſted from the Death of Mr. *Bellingham* to his own. He died of the Stone in an advanced Age; and was ſucceeded by *Simon Bradſtreet*, Eſq; in whoſe Time their Charter was taken from them.

WHILE the *New-England* Forces were in the Field, Days of Faſting and Prayer had been frequently obſerved by the Churches, for the Succeſs of their Arms; but when the War was over, theſe Solemnities were diſcontinued, and the People began to grow intolerably licentious in their Morals: Devout People obſerved, that tho' they were delivered from the Hands of their Enemies, yet the Judgments of God ſeemed to follow them; for the Fruits of the Earth were blaſted two or three Years ſucceſſively, inſomuch that the Labour of the Husbandman began to fail, Epidemical Diſeaſes carried off great Numbers of People, and the Trade of the Country fell to decay, by uncommon Loſſes both by Sea and Land. The General Court of the *Maſſachuſets* taking theſe Things into Conſideration, called a Synod to meet at *Boſton*, and examine into the State of Religion, and prevent the further Growth of Impiety and Prophaneneſs: The Synod agreed, That there was not only a general Decay of Piety among the Inhabitants, but that *Pride*, *Intemperance*, *Swearing*, *Sabbath-breaking* and *Covetouſneſs*, were at an uncommon Height; and therefore adviſed *Anno* 1679

Anno 1679 ſed, that for the reforming theſe Vices, the Miniſters ſhould be exhorted to preach againſt them in their Pulpits, and the Magiſtrates to put the Laws in Execution againſt them, as far as they came under their Cognizance.

IN this Synod there was a Debate about the Right of *Laymen* to a Place in the Synod, occaſioned by the Practice of ſome Churches, who would only ſend their Miniſters to the Aſſembly: But it was agreed that not only Miniſters, but other Lay-Meſſengers were the proper Members of a Synod, and had a Right to their Suffrage in it, as the Churches Repreſentatives.*

IN the ſame Synod the Platform of Church Diſcipline, drawn up in the Year 1648 was recognized and confirmed by the following Vote; "A Synod of the Churches of the Colony of "the *Maſſachuſets* being called to meet at *Boſton* "*September* 1679, having read and conſidered "a Platform of Church Diſcipline agreed upon "by the Synod, aſſembled at *Cambridge* 1648, do "unanimouſly approve of the ſame Platform as "to the Subſtance of it, deſiring that the Churches "may continue ſtedfaſt in the Order of the "Goſpel, according to what is therein declared "from the Word of God."

Anno 1680 NEXT Year another Synod met at *Boſton*, and having reviſed the *Savoy Confeſſion of Faith*, ordered it to be printed by Authority; with ſome few Variations, as the Faith of the Churches of *New-England*: This Confeſſion of Faith, to which is annex'd a Chapter of Diſcipline, was drawn up by an Aſſembly of the Elders and Meſſengers of the ſeveral Congregational Churches throughout *England*, who met at the *Savoy* the 12th of *October* 1658, and ad-

* Mather, B. v. p. 86.

journ'd

journ'd themſelves from time to time till they had finiſhed it; the Confeſſion of Faith differs but very little from that of the Aſſembly at *Weſtminſter*, and the Chapter of Diſcipline agrees very much with the Platform. The firſt Churches of *New-England* were all built on the Foot of this Diſcipline as the Reader has already obſerved in this Hiſtory, and though ſince that Time ſome Churches of the Presbyterian Perſuaſion are planted among them, yet their Diſcipline has not been received in the Country according to the Models of *Geneva* or *Scotland*: However they have as much Liberty as they can deſire, and an equal Share in the Government with their Neighbours, and the Churches live in Love and Communion with each other. *Anno* 1680

SOME Attempts were made by the Presbyterian and Congregational Miniſters in *England*, for compremiſing the Differences between theſe two Parties among themſelves, and Heads of Agreement were drawn up, and aſſented to on both ſides, in the Year 1692, but Diſputes ariſing upon ſome high Points of Divinity, in which the Heads of each Denomination took a different Part, they proceeded at length to ſuch Heats as alienated their Affections, and diſſolved the Union, after it had ſubſiſted about three Years. But the *New-England* Miniſters received theſe Articles with an Univerſal Approbation, and continue to act agreeably to them to this Day. Dr. *Mather* * ſays 'tis not poſſible to give the World a juſter Idea of the Eccleſiaſtical Conſtitution of *New England*, than is to be had from theſe Articles; and therefore I have given them a Place in the Appendix. †

* *Book*, v. *p.* 59. † *Appendix* Numb. III.

Anno 1680 AT the Cloſe of this Year died *Joſiah Winſlow*, Eſq; Governour of *Plimouth*, and the firſt *New-Engliſh* Man that was ever advanced to that Honour; he was Son of *Edward Winſlow*, Eſq; and ſucceeded Mr. *Prince* in the Government of the Colony. In the *Indian* War he was made General of the *Plimouth*-Forces, and got immortal Honour at the Fort of the *Narrhaganſets*; he was a fine Gentleman, a brave Soldier, and an excellent Governour: He was ſucceeded by Mr. *Robert Treat*, in whoſe Time the Charter of the Country was taken away.

Anno 1681 ABOUT Midſummer following dyed Mr. *Urian Oakes*, Paſtor of the Church of *Cambridge*, and Preſident of *Harvard-College*, he was born in *England*, but educated in *Harvard-College* in *New-England*, and preached his firſt Sermon for Mr. *Eliot* at *Roxbury*. In the Time of the Civil Wars he returned to his native Country, and became Miniſter of *Titchfield*, where he continued till he was ſilenced with the reſt of the Nonconformiſt-Miniſters in 1662. He was afterwards Schoolmaſter at *Southick* in *Hampſhire*, but upon the Death of Mr. *Mitchel*, the Church of *Cambridge* in *New-England* inviting him to the Paſtoral Office among them, he accepted their Call, and ſoon after became Preſident of the College, which he governed with univerſal Satisfaction to his Death, which happen'd *July* the 18th, 1681, in the 50th Year of his Age; he was a good Scholar, an excellent Preacher, and of a ſweet natural Diſpoſition.

Anno 1682 THE Governours of the College would have appointed the Reverend Mr. *Increaſe Mather* to ſucceed him, but his Church at *Boſton* not being willing to part with him, Mr. *John Rogers* was preferr'd to the Place; Mr. *Rogers* came over to *New-England* at ſix Years of Age, and was educated in *Harvard-College*; he was firſt a Preacher

at

at *Ipſwich*, but applied himſelf afterwards to the Study of Phyſick; he governed the College but two Years, and dyed univerſally lamented by all the Students. *Anno* 1682

UPON his Death Mr. *Mather* was again choſen to ſucceed him, and to ſatisfy the Objections of his Church, was allowed to preach at *Boſton* on Lord's-Days, and to attend the Buſineſs of the College in the Week; he governed with great Reputation till his advanced Years requir'd a Receſs, and had the Welfare of the College ſo much at Heart, that the Univerſity decreed him the higheſt Honours. This good old Gentleman is yet alive, and in high Eſteem among his Country-men for his eminent Services both to the Church and Commonwealth.

REMARKABLY Pious and Chriſtian was the Death of *Mitark*, Prince of the *Gay-Head* on *Martha's-Vineyard*; who was converted to the Chriſtian Religion by Mr. *Mayhew*, and like a good Prince, encouraged the ſpreading of it among his Subjects, even to the Hazard of his very Crown; for the People were ſo bigotted to their old Religion that they threatned to depoſe him, unleſs he baniſh'd the *Engliſh* Miſſionaries, the *Prince* hereupon with a few of his Friends prudently retired to the Eaſt-End of the Iſland, 'till the Ferment was over, and his Subjects agreed to give Liberty to the Miniſters to preach the Goſpel to as many of the People as were willing to hear it: And then after three Years he returned, and became himſelf a Preacher of Chriſtianity to his Subjects, ſo that the whole Iſland in a little Time became Chriſtian. The Day before his Death Mr. *Mayhew* viſited him, and enquiring into his Hopes of a future Happineſs; he replied, *Anno* 1683

"*I have Hope in God, that when my Soul departs*
"*out of this Body, God will ſend his Meſſengers who*
ſhall

Anno 1683 " *ſhall conduct it to himſelf to be with Jeſus Chriſt* " *where that everlaſting Glory is. As for my Rea-* " *ſons*, ſaid he, *I myſelf have had many Wrongs of* " *Enemies, of whom I have ſought no Revenge, nor* " *retained Evil in Thought, Word, or Deed, and* " *I alſo expect the ſame from God. But I proceed* " *no further, for God is very merciful.* Mr. *May-hew* then asking him concerning his Willing-neſs to dye; he anſwered, " *It is now ſeven* " *Nights ſince I was taken ſick, and I have not yet* " *asked of God to live longer in the World; in this* " *World are ſome Benefits to be enjoyed, alſo* " *many Troubles to be endured, but with Reſpect to* " *the Hope I have in God, I am willing to dye;* " *here I am in Pain, there I ſhall be freed from all* " *Pain, and enjoy the reſt that never endeth.* Then pointing to his Daughter, he ſaid; " *And you* " *my Daughter, if you loſe your Father, mourn not* " *for me, but mourn for yourſelf, and for your* " *Sins; mourn not for me, for tho' you are unwilling* " *to ſpare me, and I might be helpful to you if* " *I ſhould live longer in this World, yet to dye* " *is better for me.*" He was a faithful Friend and Ally of the *Engliſh*, and dyed univerſally regretted by the whole Iſland, in the Month of *January*, 1683.

Anno 1684 *New-England* began now to take Breath after a bloody and expenſive War, Trade reviv'd, Peace and Plenty flowed in upon them; when, on a ſudden, the Affairs of the Country were thrown into the utmoſt Confuſion by the arbitrary Proceedings of the *Engliſh* Court. King *Charles* the Second had ordered a *Quo Warranto* to be iſſued out againſt the Charter of the City of *London*, upon Pretence of their illegal exacting of Tolls in the Markets, and framing a ſcandalous Petition, wherein they charged the King with obſtructing the Juſtice of the Nation: After a long Tryal at the Court of *King's-Bench*, wherein

wherein Council was heard on both Sides, Judge *Jones* declared it to be the unanimous Opinion of that Court, *That the Liberties and Franchiſes of the City of* London *be ſeized into the King's Hands*; and accordingly, *October* the 4th following the Attorney-General entred *Judgment of Seizure*, and the King nominated all the Magiſtrates of the City for the enſuing Year. The City of *London* having loſt its Charter, almoſt all the Corporations in *England* influenced either by Fear or Flattery complimented the King with a Surrender of theirs, and the King granted them new ones, reſerving always to himſelf the Power of confirming their Mayor, Aldermen, and other chief Officers. *Anno* 1684

IT may eaſily be imagined after this, that the Plantations could not long maintain their Privileges. The Province of *New-Hampſhire* never had a Charter, but the Proprietors finding themſelves continually expoſed to the Excurſions of the *French-Indians* on the Borders laid Hold of this Opportunity to make a free Surrender of their Government to the Crown reſerving the Soil to themſelves for ſuch Improvements as it was capable of, ſince which Time the Governour of *New-England* has had a ſpecial Commiſſion to govern that Province independently of the *Maſſachuſet-Bay*, and is repreſented in his Abſence by a Lieutenant-Governour appointed by the Crown, who, with a Council of Twelve of the Inhabitants appointed likewiſe by the Crown, directs all the Affairs of the Province.

THE *Maſſachuſet-Colony* had a *Quo Warranto* ſent them in the Year 1683, and in the Year 1684 a Writ of *Scire facias*, by which they were required to make their Appearance at *Weſtminſter* in *October* following, which they knew nothing of till a Month before, ſo that it was impoſſible

Anno 1684 poſſible for them to anſwer at the Time appointed, and yet Judgment was entred againſt them.

Plimouth-Colony underwent the ſame Fate, without ſo much as a Pretence of Miſgovernment alledged.

Rhode-Iſland ſubmitted peaceably to his Majeſty's Pleaſure.

Connecticut-Colony received a *Quo Warranto*, with Letters from the King ſignifying, that in Caſe they reſigned their Charter, they might take their Choice of being under *New-York* or *Boſton*; upon which ſeveral of the Magiſtrates returned a moſt humble and ſupplicatory Anſwer, praying, that their former Government might ſtill continue; but that if it muſt be taken from them, they had rather be under *Boſton* than *New-York*: This was interpreted by ſome at Court as a Reſignation of their Charter, and a Commiſſion was ſent to Sir *Edmund Androſs*, who went with ſome armed Attendants to *Hartford* the Capital of the Province, and declared their Charter and former Government void. Thus was the ancient Conſtitution of *New-England* deſtroyed, and the whole Country made an abſolute Province of the Crown of *England*.

A LIST

A LIST of the Governours of the ſeveral Colonies of *New-England*, according to the Order of their Succeſſion from the Beginning of the *Engliſh* Settlements to the Surrender of their Charters. *Anno* 1684

PLIMOUTH.	MASSACHUSET-BAY.
John Carver,	*Matthew Craddock,*
William Bradford,	*John Winthrop,*
Thomas Prince,	Sir *Henry Vane,* jun.
Edward Winſlow.	*Thomas Dudley,*
	John Endicott,
	Richard Bellingham,
	John Leverett,
	Simon Bradſtreet.

CONNECTICUT.	NEW-HAVEN.
Edward Hopkins,	*Theophilus Eaton,*
John Haynes,	*Francis Newman,*
George Willis,	*William Leet.*
Thomas Wells,	
John Webſter,	

After the UNION of the TWO COLONIES.

William Leet, | *Robert Treat.*

CHAP. X.

Captain Phips's *Expedition to the* Spaniſh *Wreck. The Riſe of the War between the* Engliſh *and* Indians, *in which the* French *take Part. The Revolution of the Government of* New-England. *The Progreſs of the War. Examples of the deplorable Circumſtances of the Priſoners taken by the* Indians. *The Reduction of* L'Acadie, *or* New-Scotland, *Sir* William Phips's *unfortunate Expedition againſt* Quebec. *The* French *and* Indians *fright away the Frontier-Garriſons, and ravage the Country. The* Engliſh *defeated at* Wheelwright-Pond. *A Truce concluded. The Death and Character of the Reverend Mr.* John Eliot, *the Apoſtle of the* Indians.

Anno 1685

OUR Hiſtories are full of Tragical Complaints of the Oppreſſions and Miſeries of the *Engliſh* Nation under the Government of King *James* the Second. King *Charles* had broke in upon the Conſtitution, and his Brother reſolved to overturn it, and had certainly accompliſhed

pliſhed his Deſigns, if his Miniſters had not precipitated him into raſh and violent Meaſures; had he flatter'd the Church, he had made himſelf abſolute Monarch of the State; but this muſt be ſaid for the Honour of that unhappy Prince, that he never diſguiſed his Principles; his Adminiſtration was all of a Piece, till within a Month or two of his Abdication, when the Fright of the Prince of *Orange*'s Invaſion made him undo in two or three Weeks what had been more than ſo many Years a doing. Anno 1685

THE King trod in his Brother's Steps, and purſued the very ſame Meaſures. He perſecuted the Diſſenters with the utmoſt Violence, inſomuch that ſome who had rid out all the Storms of King *Charles* the Second, now fled their native Country; among theſe the moſt eminent was the Reverend Mr. *Samuel Lee*, Miniſter of a Diſſenting Congregation in *London*, who fearing the Return of Popiſh Cruelties fled to *New-England* in the Year 1686, and preach'd to a Congregation at *New-Briſtol* till the Year 1691, when as he was returning home, he was taken by the *French*, and dyed in one of their Priſons. He was a Perſon of great Learning and Reputation, but of a timorous Spirit, which put him upon thoſe Meaſures, that brought him to the End he always feared.* The King reſtored none of the Charters either in *Old* or *New-England*, but nominated ſuch Magiſtrates in all the Corporations, as he and his Council thought moſt proper for their Purpoſes.

K. *Charles* II. upon the Seizure of the Charter of *New-England* had ſent over *Henry Cranfield*, Eſq; Governor, by Commiſſion from himſelf, but King

* Mather, *Book III.* page 22.

Anno 1686 *James* upon his Acceſſion to the Crown, diſplaced him, and appointed *Joſeph Dudley*, Eſq; Son of Mr. *Thomas Dudley* to ſucceed him; this Mr. *Dudley* was a Native of *New-England*, and generally beloved, on the Acccunt of his Father's Services and Merits, but his accepting a Commiſſion founded upon the Ruin of the Laws and Liberties of his Country created him a great many Enemies, who ventured at length to depoſe him, and ſend him Priſoner to *England*; the People at the ſame Time reſuming their Charter, and chooſing their own Magiſtrates, as formerly; but the King ſoon put a Stop to their Proceedings, by ſending over Sir *Edmund Andros*, a *Guernſey*-Man, with a Commiſſion bearing Date *June* 3. 1686, conſtituting him Governour of the whole Country, and impowering him with four of his Council to make Laws, and raiſe Money on the King's Subjects without any Parliament, Aſſembly, or Conſent of the People: Upon his Arrival he turn'd out all the Magiſtrates, Judges, and Officers of the Militia choſen by the People, and appointed others in their Room; he overturn'd by Degrees the whole Conſtitution, and ſtretch'd his Prerogative to ſuch an Height, as made it impoſſible for the People to live under him, which prepared the Way for the Revolution, which ſoon after followed.

Anno 1687 IT was in the Time of this Gentleman, that Captain *William Phips*, a Native of this Country, being informed of a *Spaniſh* Wreck, near the *Port de la Plata*, * wherein had been loſt a vaſt Treaſure of Silver, about fifty Years before, reſolved to attempt the Recovery of it; he had been at Court in the Year 1683, and made ſuch

* Mather *Book II. page* 40.

a Repreſentation of his Deſign to King *Charles*, that he made him Commander of the *Algier Roſe*, a Frigot of 18 Guns and 95 Men; in this Veſſel he ſail'd to *Hiſpaniola*, and got Information from an old *Spaniard* of the true Spot where the Wreck lay, but when he had fiſhed as long as the Patience of the Ship's Crew would hold out, he was forced to return home without any Proſpect of Succeſs. The Captain laid the Blame upon the Impatience of his Crew; but moſt Men looked upon the Project as impracticable, for which Reaſon it was a long Time before he could prevail with any conſiderable Perſons either in Court or City to be at the Charge of a ſecond Adventure. Anno 1687

But at laſt the Duke of *Albemarle* with ſome other Perſons of Quality fitted him out, and furniſhed him with all Neceſſaries for his Expedition; Upon his Arrival at the *Port de la Plata*, with his Ship and Tender, he went up into the Woods, and built a ſtout *Canoe* out of a Cotton-Tree, large enough to carry eight or ten Oars; this Canoe and Tender with ſome ſelect Men, and *Divers*, the Captain ſent out in Search of the Wreck, whilſt himſelf lay at Anchor in the Port; the Canoe kept busking up and down upon the Shallows, but could diſcover nothing but a Reef of riſing Shoals, called the *Boylers*, within two or three Foot of the Surface of the Water: The Sea was calm; every Eye was employed in looking down into it, and the *Divers* went down in ſeveral Places without making any Diſcovery; till at laſt, as they were returning back weary and dejected, one of the Sailors looking over the Side of the Canoe into the Sea, ſpied a Feather under Water, growing, as he imagin'd, out of the Side of a Rock: One of the *Divers* was immediately order'd down to fetch it up, and look out, if there was any thing

Anno 1687 of Value about it: He quickly brought up the Feather, and told them, that he had diſcovered ſeveral great Guns, whereupon he was ordered down again, and then brought up a Pig of Silver of two or three hundred Pounds Value; the Sight of which filled them with Tranſports, and convinced them ſufficiently, that they had found the Treaſure they had been ſo long looking for. When they had buoyed the Place they made Haſte to *Port*, and told the Captain the joyful News, who could hardly believe them till they ſhew'd him the Silver; and then, with Hands lift up to Heaven, he cried out, *Thanks be to God, we are all made!* All Hands were immediately ordered on Board, and ſailing to the Place, the *Divers* happen'd to fall firſt into the Room where the Bullion had been ſtored, and in a few Days they brought up 32 Tun of Silver without the Loſs of any Man's Life; when they had cleared the Store-Room, they ſearched the *Hold*, and among the Ballaſt of the Ship found a great many Bags of Pieces of Eight; tis obſervable that theſe Bags having lain ſo long under Water amongſt Ballaſt, were cruſted over with a hard Subſtance like Lime-ſtone, to the Thickneſs of ſeveral Inches, which being broken with Irons contrived for the Purpoſe, the ruſty Pieces of Eight tumbled out in prodigious Quantities, beſides theſe Things, they found vaſt Treaſures of Gold, Pearls, Jewels, and every thing that a *Spaniſh* Galleon us'd to be laden with. There was one *Adderly* of *Providence*, who had been with Captain *Phips* in his former Voyage to this Place, and promiſed to aſſiſt him again if ever he ſhould make a ſecond Adventure, who met him with a ſmall Veſſel at *Port de la Plata*, and with the few Hands he had on Board took up ſix Tun of Silver for themſelves; they both ſtaid till their Proviſions were ſpent, and then

the Captain obliging *Adderly* and his Men not to discover the Place of the Wreck, nor come to it himself till next Year, they weighed Anchor, and returned; the Reason of this Obligation was, because the last Day of their fishing the *Divers* brought up twenty Sows of Silver, which made the Captain imagine that there was a great deal of Treasure yet behind, though it afterwards appeared, that they had in a Manner quite cleared the Ship of her Bullion before they left her. The Captain steered directly away for *England*, without calling at any Port by the Way, and arrived the latter End of the Year, with about Three Hundred Thousand Pounds *Sterling*, Sixteen Thousand of which, after all Charges paid, and Gratuities to the Sailors, came to his own Share, besides which the Duke of *Albemarle* made his Wife a Present of a Golden Cup of a Thousand Pounds Value. *Anno* 1687

SOME of King *James*'s Courtiers would have perswaded him to have seized the Ship and its Cargoe, under Pretence, that the Captain had not rightly informed him of the Nature of his Project, when he was graciously pleased to grant him his Patent; but the King replied, that *Phips* was an honest Man, and that it was his Council's Fault that he had not employed him himself, and therefore he would give him no Disturbance in what he had got, but as a Mark of his Royal Favour, conferr'd upon him the Honour of Knighthood.

THE *Eastern-Indians*, * by the Instigation of the *French*, invaded the Frontiers this Summer, and commenced a War, which all the Powers of *New-England* could not extinguish in ten Years; *Anno* 1687

* Mather *Book VII. page 61.*

Anno 1688 'Tis hard to account for the Riſe of this War, each Party throwing it off from themſelves; the *Indians*, eſpecially thoſe of *Saco* and *Amnoſcoggin* complained,

Firſt, That the *Engliſh* refuſed to pay the yearly Tribute of Corn agreed upon in the Articles of Peace formerly concluded with them by the *Engliſh* Commiſſioners.

Secondly, That they were invaded in their Fiſhery at *Saco*-River, by certain Gentlemen who ſtopp'd the Fiſh from coming up the River with their *Nets* and *Sains*. This they were greatly affronted at, ſaying, they thought tho' the *Engliſh* had got away their Lands, yet the Fiſhery of the Rivers would have been left open to them.

Thirdly, That they were abuſed by the *Engliſh*, in ſuffering, if not turning their Cattle over to a certain *Iſland* to deſtroy their Corn.

Fourthly, That the *Governour* had granted or patenteed out their Lands to ſome *Engliſh*, at which they were ſo enraged, that they threatned to knock the Surveyor on the Head, if he came to lay out Lands there any more.

To theſe were added the common Abuſes in Trading, of Drunkenneſs, Cheating, *&c.* which thoſe that trade much with them are ſeldom innocent of.

THE *French* complained, That the *Engliſh* having unjuſtly ſeized a Parcel of Wines landed at a *French* Plantation to the Eaſtward, an Order was obtained from the King of *England*, by the Inſtances of the *French* Ambaſſador, for the reſtoring them; whereupon the *Engliſh*, by Way of Revenge, ran a new Line for the Bounds of the Province, which encloſed Monſieur *St. Caſteen*'s Plantation within the *Engliſh* Pale: Monſieur *St. Caſteen* leaving his Houſe upon this Occaſion, the *Engliſh* ſeized upon his Arms and Goods,

Goods, and brought them away to *Pemmaquid*: He, to do himſelf Juſtice, perſwaded the *Indians* to ſtand upon their Guard, and not ſuffer ſuch Encroachments upon their Country, and having married one of their *Segamore*'s Daughters, eaſily prevailed with them to begin Acts of Hoſtility againſt the *Engliſh*, promiſing them all the Aſſiſtance that the *French* at *Canada* could give them. Anno 1688

THE *Engliſh*, in anſwer to theſe Allegations of the *French* and *Indians*, complained of the inſulting Behaviour of the *Indians* upon the Frontiers; who, if they had received any Injuries, ought firſt (ſay they) to have demanded Satisfaction from the Government in a legal Way, before they proceeded to do themſelves Juſtice by an open War.

THE firſt Acts of Hoſtility began upon this Occaſion: A Party of *Indians* came to *North Yarmouth*, and having killed ſome Cattle, threatned with the Aſſiſtance of the *French* to murder the People too; upon which Capt. *Blackman*, a Juſtice of Peace, with ſome of the Neighbourhood of *Saco*, ventured to ſeize 18 or 20 of the Ringleaders, and ſent them under a ſtrong Guard to *Falmouth* in *Caſco Bay*, to be kept in Cuſtody 'till he ſhould receive Orders from *Boſton* concerning them. The *Indians* hereupon made Reprizals, and took ſeveral of the *Engliſh* Priſoners, among whom was Capt. *Rowden*, and Capt. *Gendal*; *Rowden* never got out of their Hands, but *Gendal* and his Party were releaſed upon the Return of *Blackman*'s Priſoners. An Expreſs was immediately ſent away to Sir *Edmund Andros* at *New-York*, to give him an Account of theſe Things; and in the mean Time the Gentlemen of *Boſton* ordered ſome Soldiers to march towards *Falmouth* for the Security of the Country, and ſent the Worſhipful Mr. *Stoughton*,

Anno 1688 *Stoughton*, with ſome others, to endeavour to bring the *Indians* to a Treaty, and recover the Captives. The *Indians* ſeemed inclinable to an Accommodation at firſt, and promiſed to meet the *Engliſh* at a Place called *Macquoit*; but having adviſed with the *French* in the mean Time, they did not appear; but a few Days after fell upon the Town of *North Yarmouth*, and killed ſeveral of the Inhabitants. This was the firſt Blood that was drawn in this Quarrel. The *Indian* Priſoners were now ſent up to *Boſton*, and the Inhabitants of the Frontier Plantations ordered to ſecure themſelves in the Garriſons, 'till they ſhould receive further Orders from Sir *Edmund Andros*. But when Sir *Edmund* returned to *Boſton*, he diſapproved of Captain *Blackman*'s Conduct, and ordered all the Priſoners to be ſet at Liberty, and their Arms to be reſtored, without inſiſting upon the Delivery of the *Engliſh* Captives, only he publiſhed a Proclamation requiring the *Indians* to ſurrender up thoſe Perſons to Juſtice who had murther'd the King's Subjects at *Yarmouth*; which they took no manner of Notice of. The Differences were too great to be amicably compoſed, and both Sides prepared for War.

IN the Month of *September* Capt. *Gendal* was order'd with a Party of Men to garriſon *Yarmouth*, and paliſadoe both Sides of the River for the Defence of the Town; but while his Men were at Work, an *Engliſh* Captive, who had run away from his Maſter, informed them, That 70 or 80 of the Enemy were juſt ready to fall upon them. The Soldiers, inſtead of ſtanding to their Arms, croſſed the River in their Boats, whereby they run into the Mouth of the Enemy, and were taken Priſoners to the Number of 12. The *Indians* with their Priſoners marched on towards *Caſco*; the Inhabitants of which Town

reſolved

reſolved not only to ſtand on their Defence, but to reſcue their Friends out of the Hands of the Enemy. Accordingly they croſſed the River in a Body, and releaſed all their Friends except one or two, without coming to Blows: But one of the *Indians* holding his Priſoner faſter than the reſt, *Benedict Pulcifer*, an Inhabitant of *Caſco*, ſtruck him on the Shoulder with the Edge of his broad Ax, upon which enſued a warm Engagement, ſeveral being killed on both Sides: At laſt the *Indians* retired, and the *Engliſh* returned back into the Town; but Capt. *Gendal* venturing over the River again the ſame Evening in a Canoe with only one Servant, fell into an Ambuſcade, wherein both of them were ſlain. Some Time after this the *Indians* marched Eaſtward, and falling upon the *Engliſh* at a Place called *Merry-Meeting*, from the Concourſe of ſeveral Rivers, they plundered their Houſes, and killed all they could lay their Hands upon. About the ſame Time they laid the Town of *Sheepſcote* in Aſhes, but the People ſaved themſelves by retiring into the Fort. From thence they went to *Kennebunk* near *Winter Harbour*, where they murthered Mr. *Burroughs*'s and Mr. *Buſſy*'s Families, and then retired. Anno 1688

SIR *Edmund Andros*, in order to put a Stop to theſe Excurſions of the Enemy, raiſed an Army of near 1000 Men, and marched himſelf to the Frontiers at the Head of them in the very Depth of Winter, but the *Indians* were then retired into the Woods, not one of them appearing while the Army was in thoſe Parts. The Governor's Conduct was very much cenſured for marching into the Field at this Time of the Year, and expoſing his Men to the Hardſhips of a Winter Campaign, without the leaſt Proſpect of fighting the Enemy: However he built two Forts, one at *Sheepſcote*, and another at *Pechypſcote*

Scote Falls, where he put part of his Army into Winter Quarters, and marched back with the rest to *Boston*. Anno 1688

THE *Engliſh* Court had now changed their Meaſures with regard to the *Diſſenters* from the Eſtabliſhed Church; the King had publiſhed a Declaration for Liberty of Conſcience to all his Subjects, he had diſpenced with the penal Laws and Teſt, and admitted Perſons of all Perſwaſions in Religion to Places of Profit and Truſt, that by this Means he might the more eaſily introduce Popery and Arbitrary Power; for tho' there might be three or four Proteſtant Diſſenters in Favour with the King, yet it is manifeſt that both the Court and Army were filled with Roman Catholick Officers, who were to be the Tools to enſlave a free People; and how near they were to the accompliſhing their Deſigns, our *Enngliſh* Hiſtorians have informed us at large.

IN this Situation of Affairs Sir *William Phips* appeared at Court, and uſed all his Intereſt for the Service of his Country: He petitioned for the reſtoring of their Charter; but the King replied, *Any thing*, *Sir* William, *but that*. He then procured a Patent, conſtituting him High-Sheriff of *New-England*, hoping by this Means to be capable of ſupplying his Country with honeſt Juries. Furniſhed with this Commiſſion, he went in Company with Sir *John Narborough*, to make a ſecond Viſit to the *Wreck*, and in his Return landed at *Boſton* about *Midſummer*, 1688. But Sir *William's* Patent was of very little uſe to him; for the Governor and his Creatures were ſo enraged againſt him for it, that they attempted to aſſaſſinate him before his own Door, which made him take the firſt Opportunity of returning to *England*.

THE

THE Government of Sir *Edmund Andros* was indeed become inſupportable: He not only copied after his Maſter King *James*, but out-went him; for to all the Miſeries that *England* groaned under, this was ſuperadded in *New-England*, *The Loſs of their Freeholds.* The Gentlemen of the Country made the beſt Stand for their Liberties they could, they oppoſed the arbitrary Proceedings of the Governor by Petitions and Remonſtrances, and when no Redreſs was to be expected at Home, they ſent over Mr. *Increaſe Mather*, Rector of the College, with two other Gentlemen to the Court of *England*, with a Petition to the King, praying, *That the Right they had to their Freeholds might be confirmed; and that no Laws might be made, or Moneys raiſed, without an Aſſembly.* The King referred them to the Committee for Foreign Plantations, but abſolutely refuſed to conſent to the laſt Article *of raiſing Money by an Aſſembly*, nor durſt the Committee ſo much as propoſe it to him. *Anno* 1688

THINGS went on after this Manner 'till the News of the Prince of *Orange*'s Expedition into *England* reached *Boſton*, which ſpread an univerſal Joy throughout the whole Country. The Governor took all imaginable Care to conceal the Succeſs of it from the People; he impriſoned the Man that brought over a Copy of the Prince's Declaration, and publiſhed a Proclamation requiring all Perſons to uſe their beſt Endeavours to hinder the Landing of any whom the Prince might ſend thither: But the Hearts of the People were turned againſt him, his Army deſerted him, and his Counſellors began to think of ſhifting for themſelves, Rumours were ſpread about Town of an intended Maſſacre, and ſeveral murthering Engines were ſaid to be in the *Roſe* Frigate, one of the King's Ships then in the Harbour. The People hereupon, both in *Anno* 1689

Town

Anno 1689 Town and Country gathered together in Clubs, and reſolved to ſtand by one another with their Lives and Fortunes; the wiſer and more conſiderate Gentlemen were for letting Things go on in the preſent Courſe, till they ſhould receive Orders from *England* how to behave themſelves, but the common People, and ſeveral Gentlemen who were animated with a Zeal for the Recovery of their ancient Liberties, reſolved to follow the Example of *England*, and put an End to the arbitrary Government they had ſo long groaned under: Accordingly on the 18th of *April*, 1689, about 8 a-Clock in the Morning a Report was raiſed at the South End of the Town of *Boſton*, that at the North End the People were all in Arms, and the like Report was at the North End, with reſpect to the South; whereupon Capt. *George* was immediately ſeized, and about 9 a-Clock the Drums beat through the Town, and an Enſign was ſet up upon the Beacon; then Mr. *Bradſtreet*, Mr. *Dantfort*, Major *Richards*, Dr. *Cook*, and Mr. *Addington*, were conducted to the Council-Houſe, by a Company of Soldiers under the Command of Capt. *Hill*: In the mean while the People ſeized upon Juſtice *Bullivant*, Juſtice *Foxcroft*, Mr. *Randolf*, Sheriff *Sherlock*, Capt. *Ravenſcroft*, Captain *White*, *Farewell*, *Broadvent*, *Crafford*, *Larkin*, *Smith*, and ſeveral others, and put them into Goal; they likewiſe turn'd out *Mercy* the Goal-Keeper, and put *Scates* the Brick-layer into his Place.

ABOUT Noon the following Meſſage was ſent by Mr. *Oliver* and Mr. *Eyres* to Sir *Edmund Androſs*, who kept himſelf ſhut up in the Fort.

At

At the Town-House in Boſton, April 18, 1689. Anno 1689

SIR,

"OURSELVES and many Others the In-
"habitants of this Town, and the
"Places adjacent, being ſurprized with the
"People's ſudden taking of Arms; in the firſt
"Motion whereof we were wholly ignorant,
"being driven by the preſent Accident, are ne-
"ceſſitated to acquaint your Excellency, that
"for the quieting and ſecuring of the People
"inhabiting in this Country from the imminent
"Dangers they many Ways lie open and ex-
"poſed to, and tendring your own Safety, we
"judge it neceſſary that you forthwith ſurrender
"and deliver up the Government and Fortifi-
"cations to be preſerved and diſpoſed accord-
"ing to Order and Direction from the Crown
"of *England*, which ſuddenly is expected may
"arrive; promiſing all Security from Violence
"to yourſelf, or any of your Gentlemen or
"Soldiers in Perſon and Eſtate: Otherwiſe
"we are aſſured they will endeavour the tak-
"ing of the Fortification by Storm, if any
"Oppoſition be made.

To Sir EDMOND ANDROSS, Knt.

Waite Winthrop,
Simon Bradſtreet,
William Stoughton,
Samuel Shrimpton,
Bartholomew Gidney.
William Brown,
Thomas Danforth,
John Richards,
Eliſha Cook,
Iſaac Addington,
John Nelſon,
Adam Winthrop,
Peter Sergeant,
John Foſter,
David Waterhouſe.

Sir

Anno 1689

Sir *Edmond* did not think fit to obey the Gentlemens Summons at firſt, but ſent to the Frigat for Fire-Arms, Hand-Grenadoes and Match, but the Boat that was bringing them was ſeiz'd by the Soldiers in the Town, after which Mr. *John Nelſon* at the Head of the Soldiers demanding the Fort a ſecond Time, the Governour came down, and ſurrender'd himſelf and the Fort into their Hands, He was firſt conducted to the Council-Houſe, and afterwards confined with Lieutenant-Colonel *Ledget* in the Fort till he was ſent home to *England*, where inſtead of ſuffering for the many Irregularities of his Government, he made a Shift to juſtify his Conduct to the mild and gentle Adminiſtration of King *William* and Queen *Mary*, ſo far as to be intruſted with the Government of *Virginia* in the Year 1692, where after ſome Years he dyed. Mr. *Fairweather*, Mr. *Weſt*, Mr. *Graham*, Mr. *Palmer*, and Capt. *Tryſoye* were impriſoned in the Caſtle; Mr. *Dudley* was then out upon the Circuit, but was ſeized at Major *Smith*'s at *Narrhaganſet*, and brought Priſoner to *Boſton*.

THE whole Town of *Boſton* was now in Arms, and the Country came in ſo faſt, that there were twenty Companies of Soldiers in the Town, beſides above a Thouſand at *Charles-Town*, that could not get over the Ferry; To this vaſt Concourſe of People the Gentlemen in the Council-Chamber, who were at the Head of the Revolution, ordered the following Declaration to be read out of the Gallery.

THE

Anno 1689

The DECLARATION *of the Gentlemen, Merchants, and Inhabitants of* Boſton, *and the Country adjacent,* April 18, 1689.

"I. WE have ſeen more than a Decad of "Years rolled away, ſince the "*Engliſh* World had the Diſcovery of an hor-"rid Popiſh Plot; wherein the bloody Devotees "of *Rome* had in their Deſign and Proſpect "no leſs than the Extinction of the Proteſtant "Religion; which mighty Work they called, "*the utter ſubduing of a peſtilent Hereſy*; wherein "(they ſaid) there never were ſuch Hopes of "Succeſs ſince the Death of Queen *Mary*, as "now in our Days: And we were of all Men "the moſt inſenſible, if we ſhould apprehend a "Country ſo remarkable for the true Profeſſion "and pure Exerciſe of the Proteſtant Religion "as *New-England* is, wholly unconcerned in the "infamous Plot. To cruſh and break a Coun-"try ſo entirely and ſignally made up of Re-"formed Churches, and at length to involve it "in the Miſeries of an utter Extirpation, muſt "needs carry even a Supererogation of Merit "with it among ſuch as were intoxicated with "a Bigotry inſpired into them by the great "*Scarlet Whore*.

"II. To get us within the Reach of the De-"ſolation deſired for us, it was no improper "Thing that we ſhould firſt have our Charter "vacated, and the Hedge which kept us from "the wild Beaſts of the Field effectually broken "down. The Accompliſhment of this was "haſtned by the unwearied Solicitations, and "ſlanderous Accuſations of a Man, for his Ma-"lice and Falſhood well known unto us all. "Our Charter was with a moſt injurious Pre-

Anno 1689 " tence (and ſcarce that) of Law, condemned " before it was poſſible for us to appear at *Weſt-* " *minſter* in the legal Defence of it; and with- " out a fair Leave to anſwer for ourſelves, con- " cerning the Crimes falſly laid to our Charge, " we were put under a Preſident and Council, " without any Liberty for an Aſſembly, which " the other *American* Plantations have, by a " Commiſſion from his Majeſty.

" III. The Commiſſion was as illegal for the " Form of it, as the Way of obtaining it was " malicious and unreaſonable: Yet we made " no Reſiſtance thereunto as we could eaſily " have done; but choſe to give all Mankind a " Demonſtration of our being a People ſuffici- " ently dutiful and loyal to our King: And " this with yet more Satisfaction, becauſe we " took Pains to make our ſelves believe as " much as ever we could of the Wheedle then " offer'd unto us; that his Majeſty's Deſire was " no other than the happy Encreaſe and Ad- " vance of theſe Provinces by their more imme- " diate Dependance on the Crown of *England*. " And we were convinced of it by the Courſes " immediately taken to damp and ſpoil our " Trade; whereof Decays and Complaints pre- " ſently filled all the Country; while in the " mean Time neither the Honour nor the Trea- " ſure of the King was at all advanced by this " new Model of our Affairs, but a conſiderable " Charge added unto the Crown.

" IV. In little more than half a Year we ſaw " this Commiſſion ſuperſeded by another yet " more abſolute and arbitrary, with which Sir " *Edmond Andros* arrived as our Governour: " Who beſides his Power, with the Advice and " Conſent of his Council, to make Laws and " raiſe Taxes as he pleaſed, had alſo Authority " by himſelf to muſter and employ all Perſons

" re-

" residing in the Territory as Occaſion ſhall Anno
" ſerve; and to tranſfer ſuch Forces to any 1689
" *Engliſh* Plantation in *America*, as Occaſion
" ſhall require. And ſeveral Companies of Sol-
" diers were now brought from *Europe* to ſup-
" port what was to be impoſed upon us, not
" without repeated Menaces, that ſome Hun-
" dreds more were intended for us.

" V. The Government was no ſooner in theſe
" Hands, but Care was taken to load Preſer-
" ments principally upon ſuch Men as were
" Strangers to, and Haters of the People: And
" every one's Obſervation hath noted, what
" Qualifications recommended a Man to pub-
" lick Offices and Employments, only here and
" there a good Man was uſed, where others
" could not eaſily be had; the Governour him-
" ſelf, with Aſſertions now and then falling from
" him, made us jealous that it would be thought
" for his Majeſty's Intereſt, if this People were
" removed, and another ſucceeded in their
" Room: And his far-fetch'd Inſtruments that
" were growing rich among us, would gravely
" inform us, that it was not for his Majeſty's
" Intereſt that we ſhould thrive. But of all
" our Oppreſſors we were chiefly ſqueez'd by
" a Crew of abject Perſons, fetch'd from *New-*
" *York*, to be the Tools of the Adverſary, ſtand-
" ing at our Right-Hand; by theſe were ex-
" traordinary and intolerable Fees extorted from
" every one upon all Occaſions, without any
" Rules but thoſe of their inſatiable Avarice
" and Beggary; and even the Probate of a
" Will muſt now coſt as many Pounds perhaps
" as it did Shillings heretofore; nor could a
" ſmall Volume contain the other Illegalities
" done by theſe Horſe-Leeches in the two or
" three Years that they have been ſucking of us;
" and what Laws they made, it was as impoſ-

Anno 1689 "sible for us to know, as dangerous for us to "break *; but we ſhall leave the Men of *Ipſwich* "and of *Plimouth* (among others) to tell the "Story of the Kindneſs which has been ſhewn "them upon this Account. Doubtleſs a Land "ſo ruled as once *New-England* was, has not "without many Fears and Sighs beheld the "Wicked walking on every Side, and the vileſt "Men exalted.

"VI. It was now plainly affirmed, both by "ſome in open Council, and by the ſame in "private Converſe, that the People in *New-*"*England* were all Slaves, and the only Diffe-"rence between them and Slaves is their not "being bought and ſold; and it was a Maxim "delivered in open Court unto us by one of the "Council, *That we muſt not think the Privileges* "*of* Engliſh *Men would follow us to the end of* "*the World*: Accordingly we have been treated "with multiplied Contradictions to *Magna* "*Charta*, the Rights of which we laid Claim "unto. Perſons who did but peaceably object "againſt the raiſing of Taxes without an Aſ-"ſembly, have been for it fined, ſome twenty, "ſome thirty, and others fifty Pounds. Pack'd "and pick'd Juries have been very common "Things among us, when, under a pretended "Form of Law, the Trouble of ſome honeſt and "worthy Men has been aimed at: But when "ſome of this Gang have been brought upon "the Stage for the moſt deteſtable Enormities "that ever the Sun beheld, all Men have with "Admiration ſeen what Methods have been "taken that they might not be treated accord-"ing to their Crimes. Without a Verdict, yea

* *He would neither ſuffer them to be printed, nor fairly publiſhed.*

"with-

" without a Jury ſometimes have People been fined moſt unrighteouſly; and ſome not of the meaneſt Quality have been kept in long and cloſe Impriſonment without any the leaſt Information appearing againſt them, or an *Habeas Corpus* allowed unto them. In ſhort, when our Oppreſſors have been a little out of Money, 'twas but pretending ſome Offence to be enquired into, and the moſt innocent of Men were continually put unto no ſmall Expence to anſwer the Demands of the Officers, who muſt have Money of them, or a Priſon for them, tho' none could accuſe them of any Miſdemeanor. Anno 1689

" VII. To plunge the poor People every where into deeper Incapacities, there was one very comprehenſive Abuſe given to us; Multitudes of pious and ſober Men through the Land ſcrupled the Mode of Swearing on the *Book*, deſiring, that they might ſwear with an uplifted Hand, agreeable to the ancient Cuſtom of the *Colony*; and though we think we can prove, that the *Common Law* amongſt us (as well as in ſome other Places under the *Engliſh* Crown) not only indulges, but even commands and enjoins the Rite of lifting the Hand in Swearing; yet they that had this Doubt were ſtill put by from ſerving upon any Juries; and many of them were moſt unaccountably fined and impriſoned. Thus one Grievance is a *Trojan* Horſe, in the Belly of which it is not eaſy to recount how many inſufferable Vexations have been contained.

" VIII. Becauſe theſe Things could not make us miſerable faſt enough, there was a notable Diſcovery made of we know not what Flaw in all our Titles to our Lands; and though beſides our Purchaſe of them from the Natives; and beſides our actual peaceable un-

1688 "queſtioned Poſſeſſion of them for near three-
"ſcore Years, and beſides the Promiſe of King
"*Charles* the Second, in his Proclamation ſent
"over to us in the Year 1683, That *no Man*
"*here ſhall receive any Prejudice in his Free-hold or*
"*Eſtate*; we had the Grant of our Lands un-
"der the Seal of the Council of *Plimouth*, which
"Grant was renewed and confirmed unto us
"by King *Charles* the Firſt, under the Great
"Seal of *England*; and the General Court, which
"conſiſted of the Patentees and their Aſſociates,
"had made particular Grants hereof to the ſe-
"veral Towns, (though 'twas now deny'd by
"the Governour, that there was any ſuch thing
"as a Town) among us; to all which Grants
"the General Court annexed for the further ſe-
"curing of them, a *General Act*, publiſhed
"under the Seal of the *Colony*, in the Year 1684.
"Yet we were every Day told, *That no Man was*
"*Owner of a Foot of Land in all the Colony.* Ac-
"cordingly, Writs of *Intruſion* began every where
"to be ſerved on People, that after all their
"Sweat and their Coſt upon their formerly
"purchaſed Lands, thought themſelves *Free-*
"*holders* of what they had. And the Gover-
"nour cauſed the Lands pertaining to theſe
"and thoſe particular Men, to be meaſured
"out for his Creatures to take Poſſeſſion of;
"and the right Owners, for pulling up the
"Stakes, have paſſed through Moleſtations e-
"nough to tire all the Patience in the World.
"They are more than a few, that were by
"Terrors driven to take Patents for their Lands
"at exceſſive Rates, to ſave them from the next
"that might petition for them: And we fear,
"that the forcing of the People at the Eaſtward
"hereunto, gave too much Riſe to the late un-
"happy Invaſion made by the *Indians* on them.
"Blank Patents were got ready for the reſt of

"us,

" us, to be ſold at a Price, that all the Money " and Moveables in the Territory could ſcarce " have paid. And ſeveral Towns in the Coun- " try had their *Commons* begg'd by Perſons (even " by ſome of the Council themſelves) who have " been encouraged thereunto, by thoſe that " ſought for Occaſions to impoveriſh a Land " already *peeled, meeted out, and trodden down.* Anno 1689

" IX. All the Council were not engaged in " theſe ill Actions, but thoſe of them which " were true Lovers of their *Country* were ſeldom " admitted to, and ſeldomer conſulted at the " Debates which produced theſe unrighteous " Things: Care was taken to keep them un- " der Diſadvantages; and the *Governour* with " five or ſix more, did what they would. We " bore all theſe, and many more ſuch Things, " without making any Attempt for any Relief; " only Mr. *Mather*, purely out of Reſpect unto " his afflicted Country, undertook a Voyage " into *England*; which when theſe Men ſuſpect- " ed him to be preparing for, they uſed all " Manner of Craft and Rage, not only to in- " terrupt his Voyage, but to ruin his Perſon " too. God having through many Difficulties " given him to arrive at *White hall*, the King, " more than once or twice, promiſed him a " certain *Magna Charta* for a ſpeedy Redreſs of " many Things which we were groaning under: " And in the mean Time ſaid, *That our Gover-* " *nour ſhould be writ unto, to forbear the Mea-* " *ſures that he was upon.* However, after this, " we were injured in thoſe very Things which " were complained of; and beſides what Wrong " hath been done in our Civil Concerns, we " ſuppoſe the Miniſters, and the Churches every " where have ſeen our Sacred Concerns apace " going after them: How they have been diſ- " countenanced has had a Room in the Reflec-

Anno 1689 "tions of every Man, that is not a Stranger *in* "*our Iſrael.*

"X. And yet that our Calamity might not "be terminated here, we are again briar'd in "the Perplexities of another *Indian* War; how, "or why, is a Myſtery too deep for us to un-"fold. And though 'tis judged that our *Indian* "Enemies are not above an Hundred in Num-"ber, yet an Army of a Thouſand *Engliſh* hath "been raiſed for the conquering of them; which "Army of our *poor Friends and Brethren* now "under *Popiſh Commanders* (for in the Army as "well as in the Council, Papiſts are in *Commiſſion*) "has been under ſuch a Conduct that not an "*Indian* hath been kill'd, but more *Engliſh* are "ſuppoſed to have died through Sickneſs and "Hardſhip than we have Adverſaries there "alive; and the whole War hath been ſo ma-"naged, that we cannot but ſuſpect in it a "Branch of the *Plot to bring us low*; which "we leave to be further enquir'd into in due "Time.

"XI. We did nothing againſt theſe Proceed-"ings, but only cry *to our God*; they *have* "*cauſed the Cry of the Poor to come unto him, and* "*he hears the Cry of the afflicted.* We have been "quiet hitherto, and ſo ſtill we ſhould have "been, had not the *Great God* at this Time "laid us under a *double* Engagement to do ſome-"thing *for our Security*: Beſides what we have "in the ſtrangely *unanimous Inclination* which "*our Countrymen* by extreameſt Neceſſities are "driven unto. For, *Firſt*, we are informed, "that the reſt of the *Engliſh America* is alarm-"ed with juſt and great Fears, that they may "be attack'd by the *French*, who have lately "('tis ſaid) already treated many of the *Eng-*"*liſh* with worſe than *Turkiſh* Cruelties; and "while we are in equal Danger of being ſur-

"prized

" prized by them, it is high time we ſhould be better guarded, than we are like to be while " the Government remains in the Hands by " which it had been held of late. Moreover we " have underſtood (tho' the Governour has ta- " ken all imaginable Care to keep us all igno- " rant thereof) that the Almighty God hath " been pleaſed to proſper the noble Undertaking " of the Prince of *Orange*, to preſerve the Three " Kingdoms from the horrible Brinks of Popery " and Slavery, and to bring to a condign Puniſh- " ment thoſe worſt of Men, by whom *Engliſh* " Liberties have been deſtroy'd; in compliance " with which glorious Action, we ought ſurely " to follow the Patterns which the Nobility, " Gentry and Commonalty in ſeveral Parts of " thoſe Kingdoms have ſet before us, tho' they " therein chiefly propoſed to prevent what we " already endure." Anno 1689

XII. " WE do therefore ſeize upon the Per- " ſons of thoſe few ill Men which have been " (next to our Sins) the grand Authors of our " Miſeries; reſolving to ſecure them, for what " Juſtice, Orders from his Highneſs, with the " *Engliſh* Parliament ſhall direct, leſt, 'ere we " are aware, we find (what we may fear, being " on all Sides in Danger) our ſelves to be by " them given away to a Foreign Power, before " ſuch Orders can reach unto us; for which " Orders we now humbly wait. In the mean " time firmly believing, that we have endeavoured " nothing but what meer Duty to God and our " Country calls for at our Hands: We commit " our Enterprize unto the Bleſſing of Him, *who* " *hears the Cry of the Oppreſſed*, and adviſe all our " Neighbours, for whom we have thus ventured " our ſelves, to joyn with us in Prayers and all " juſt Actions for the Defence of the Land."

THE

Anno 1689 THE Government being thus diſſolved, the Gentlemen in the Council-Chamber agreed to call a General Aſſembly to meet as ſoon as poſſible, and in the mean time took the Government into their own Hands, under the Character of *A Committee of Safety*. The Aſſembly met towards the latter End of *May*, and after many Debates what Form of Government to ſet up, they reſolved at length to reſume their Charter, as appears by the following Declaration, publiſhed at *Boſton May* 24. 1689.

At a Convention of the Repreſentatives of the ſeveral Towns and Villages of the Maſſachuſet *Colony in* New-England.

" WE the Repreſentatives of the ſeveral " Towns and Villages of the *Maſſa-* " *chuſets* Colony in *New-England*, convened at " *Boſton, May* 22, 1689. having fully and deli- " berately examined the Minds and Inſtructions " of the ſeveral Towns belonging to the ſaid " Colony, do find it to be the General Conſent " and Concurrence of our ſeveral Towns to re- " aſſume the Government according to Charter- " Rights: Having alſo weighed and conſidered " the Propoſitions preſented and tendered to us " by our honourable Governour, Deputy-Go- " vernour and Aſſiſtants, choſen and ſworn *Anno* " 1686, do therefore, with Reſpect to the Di- " rections by our ſeveral Towns, and in Proſe- " cution of our former Declaration preſented, " declare our Minds and Reſolutions for the Set- " tlement of Civil Government amongſt us, ac- " cording to Charter-Directions: Having ſeri- " ouſly weighed the preſent Circumſtances and " ſhattered Condition this Colony is in.

" AND

" AND being tenderly ſenſible of the afflict- Anno
" ing Hand of God which is at preſent upon us 1689
" in regard of our Unſettlement and Want of
" that Civil Juriſdiction that in former Days we
" have rejoyced in; and knowing alſo the ear-
" neſt Deſires and Expectations of the ſeveral
" Places we belong unto, to receive a comforta-
" ble Anſwer and Return in order to their Re-
" inſtating and Settlement under their former
" Patent-Rights, that ſo they might enjoy Tran-
" quillity, as in former Days and pleaſant Years
" that are paſt. This Colony having likewiſe
" ſolemnly addreſſed themſelves to Almighty
" God by Faſting and Prayer, for Pardon of our
" manifold Wilderneſs-Provocations, and reſto-
" ring to us our pleaſant Things; and for Di-
" rection in this preſent Juncture to ſuch Me-
" thods and Ways of Settlement of Civil Rule,
" as may moſt conduce to his Glory, and the
" Peace, Safety and Proſperity of this our poor
" diſtreſſed Land: And taking ſignal Notice of
" a gracious Anſwer to our Prayers, in the una-
" nimous Agreement of our ſeveral Towns and
" Villages, concurring in their Apprehenſions
" and Deſires of the Reviving of our Charter-
" Rights and Privileges, and that we do again
" ſettle upon that firm Foundation that we have
" already built upon, and have ſignally obſerved
" the Preſence of God attending the ſame.

" WE do therefore ſo far prize our former
" Liberties and Enjoyments both Civil and Sa-
" cred, as to reſolve (by the Help of God) to
" venture our Lives and Eſtates for the Reviving
" and Maintaining of them, knowing and belie-
" ving ſuch a Way of Settlement comfortable to
" and ſafe for our ſelves, and correſpondent to
" the noble Undertaking of his Royal Highneſs
" the Prince of *Orange*, in the late Settlement of
" Affairs in the Renowned *Engliſh* Nation, *&c.*

" whoſe

Anno 1689 "whoſe antient Liberties and Rights in their "ſeveral Cities and Corporations, he hath in-"veſted them withal; and (we doubt not) will "encourage and commend us (in the midſt of "our Oppreſſion) for imitating ſo Noble and "Prince-like a Pattern, in uſing all due Means "for the Recovery of what was ſo unjuſtly and "unreaſonably rent out of our Hands.

"THE Reaſons inducing us to theſe our "Reſolutions premiſed, are,

(1.) "*THAT it is an Undertaking allowed "and countenanced by his Royal Highneſs our Re-"nowned Prince, that we be reinſtated in our Patent-"Privileges, and be found in ſuch a Method of Go-"vernment, according to our antient Charter-Rights, "which he hath given Patterns of and Directions to "in the Realm of* England, *which Realm we have "a Dependance upon, and ſtand in ſo near a Rela-"tion to.*

(2.) "*THAT there is an abſolute Neceſſity of "Settlement of Civil Government amongſt our ſelves, "without which we cannot enjoy Peace, Safety and "Tranquillity.*

(3.) "*THAT the Dependance and Method of "Settlement of the ſaid Government in this preſent "Juncture, lieth wholly in the Voice of the People.*

"BEING ſenſible alſo of the great Diſad-"vantage and Danger we are all in, in this pre-"ſent Vacancy of Government, ſubject to Vio-"lence: Likewiſe underſtanding the great Diſ-"advantages that Merchants and Traders, and "all honeſt Men are in, of recovering of their "honeſt Debts and Dues, whereby they may "maintain their Trading, and approve them-"ſelves faithful to thoſe (not only at home, but in "Foreign Countries) they correſpond withal.

"WE do therefore truſt in Almighty God "to carry on and proſper our Deſires and En-"deavours, which God hath ſo far ſucceeded.

"THE

" THE Repreſentatives of the ſeveral Towns Anno
" in the ſaid Colony, having ſeriouſly weighed 1689
" the ſad Circumſtances that this our Country
" is at preſent under, do hereby (in behalf of
" our ſelves and Country) declare this to be our
" Mind and full Reſolutions (by Divine Aſſiſt-
" ance) to ſettle a Government according to
" Charter-Directions and our Patent-Privileges;
" and do hereby declare the Honourable *Simon*
" *Bradſtreet*, Eſq; our Governour, *Thomas Dan-*
" *forth*, Eſq; Deputy-Governour, with the reſt of
" the Aſſiſtants choſen and ſworn *Anno* 1686, to
" be reinſtated as formerly, and take the preſent
" Care and Conduct of this People, together
" with the Deputies ſent from the reſpective
" Towns of this Colony, according to antient
" Cuſtom, and as need requires: And that there
" be Acts of Juriſdiction put forth for the Pre-
" ſervation of our Peace, Proſperity and Safety.
" Likewiſe that there be a Choice made of a
" Major-General, for the Regulating of Mili-
" tary Affairs; and alſo Aſſiſtants for the Supply
" of ſuch as are wanting in Government; and
" that this Method of Government may be found
" amongſt us when Order ſhall come from the
" Higher Powers in *England*.

" WE do therefore devolve the full Power of
" Government upon, and intruſt it in the Hands
" aboveſaid, fully confiding in the ſaid Honour-
" able Perſons for the *Adminiſtration of Go-*
" *vernment* for the enſuing Part of this Year,
" 'till a further Choice be made according to
" Charter-Direction as aforeſaid; But in caſe
" Order from Higher Power from *England* (up-
" on whom we have Dependance) be tranſmit-
" ted for any Alteration, then the ſaid Govern-
" ment thus conſtituted do ſignifie the ſame to
" the reſpective Towns of this Colony, that ſo

" they

Anno 1689 " they may be conſulted with, in Order to their " Approbation and Compliance.

" Further, We do expect, and ſignify our " Deſires, (and that according to our ſeveral In- " ſtructions from the ſeveral Towns, whoſe Re- " preſentatives we are) that there be an Enlarge- " ment of Freemen for the Annual Choice of " Government, and all Votes relating thereun- " to, and that the Government thus reinſtated " do faithfully endeavour the Confirmation and " Settling of Charter-Privileges.

" And we do further declare our high Eſteem " of thoſe Honourable and Worthy Gentlemen " who have intervened in an Hour of our greateſt " Extremity and Temptation, and implore Al- " mighty God to retaliate their great Kindneſs, " and grant them the Bleſſings of this and a " better Life, and hope we ſhall pay all honoura- " ble and due Reſpects to them, and perform " for them what may be juſtly expected at our " Hands.

" *THIS we preſent as a full and final Decla-* " *ration of our Minds and Votes, expecting the Con-* " *ſervation of our Peace from the Government thus* " *conſtituted, further depending upon your Honours* " *Compliance in ſuch and no other Way of Settlement,* " *knowing in this our Act we have diſcharged our* " *Conſciences to our Country, contrived the beſt Expe-* " *dient for the preſent Settlement, and muſt leave it* " *to your Honours Defect, if any evil Occurrence ſhall* " *for the future happen to this Country by your Non-* " *Compliance with us.*

Unanimouſly voted by the Repreſenta- tives convened at *Boſton, May* 24. 1789.

Ebenezer Prout, Clerk to the Repreſentives.

'T is

'Tis hard to determine whether the Aſſembly was right in this Vote; if indeed their Charter had been taken from them without Form of Law they might have reſumed it, as the *Colonies* of *Connecticut* and *Rhode-Iſland* did, but when after a legal Tryal Judgment had been given againſt them in the *Court of Chancery*, none but the *Higheſt Powers in the Nation* could reverſe it, which certainly were not the Aſſembly at *Boſton*, but the Parliament of *England*. 'Tis certain the *Maſſachuſet-Province* had hard Meaſure in the Loſs of their Charter, and harder yet, in not having it reſtored at the *Revolution*, but whether they were in the Right in attempting to do themſelves Juſtice before they had tried all Methods for a legal Recovery of their Charter, is what I will not venture to affirm: Nor was the Aſſembly itſelf fully ſatisfied with their own Vote, for when the Anniverſary Election of Magiſtrates for the following Year came about, they had not the Courage to proceed to a *Choice*, but agreed to let Things continue as they were 'till they ſhould receive Directions from the King and Queen of *England*. 1689

In this uncertain State of Things the People imagined the Government to be diſſolved, and that there was no legal Authority to puniſh them for their Crimes, which gave Occaſion to innumerable Diſorders, the *Mob* met together in a riotous and tumultuous Manner, plundering the Favourers of the late Government, and committing Robberies in divers Places; the *poor Indian Converts* could hardly eſcape their Inſults, for a Party of *Engliſh* attempting to carry off ſome Sheep from a little Iſland near *Martha's Vineyard*, in the Poſſeſſion of the *Indian Converts*, under Pretence of their being ſtole from them; the Inhabitants drove them off the Iſland, and to prevent any falſe Impreſſions that the Governour might

Anno 1689 might receive from the *Report* of this Scuffle; the Sachem ſent him the following handſome *Manifeſto*.

"SEVERAL of your *Engliſh* have been on my "Iſland, and would have forcibly taken "Sheep from thence, and we are much threa-"ten'd therewith: I am doubtful, if they per-"ſiſt in that Reſolution it may occaſion *Blood-"ſhed*. You know, that while your Grandfather "and my Father lived there never happened "any Difference in ſuch Things, nor hope will "be Occaſion given by me. I deſire the ſame "Amity may be continued: Nor can the "*Engliſh* ſay that we have not manifeſted our "Allegiance to the King by a continued Sub-"jection.

"AND although 'tis true, we have deſired "your Order ſhould come to us, rather than "your Officer, which has generouſly been ob-"ſerved, yet we are willing, in Caſe the *En-"gliſh* pretend any Thing ours have injured "them in, let an Officer by Writ from Au-"thority do his Duty, then we ſhall know how "in an orderly Way to be relieved: Yet ſhall "the leaſt Boy bringing your Order, as in your "Grandfather's Time command any Thing. "And if you ſee Cauſe on any Complaint about "our Sheep, you may command all of them, "hoping to find, as hitherto, a Deciſion by the "Rules of Juſtice. We hope, we ſhall not ſee "(as is too much practiſed in other Places) an "*Engliſh* Man pretending an *Indian* to be in "his Debt, to come to our Houſes and pay "himſelf; or in other Caſes beat our People; "but as hitherto, we may have equal Juſtice, "being the King's Subjects; and Violence and "Riot committed on our People by the *Engliſh*, "may be eſteemed of the ſame Nature and

"Qua-

"Quality, as ours againſt them; of which, Anno
"with the Juſtices, we pray you would conſider 1689
"and take effectual Care."

BUT at length a Letter arrived from the King and Queen of *England*, bearing Date *Auguſt* the 12th, 1689; wherein their Majeſties were pleaſed to teſtify their Allowance and Approbation of their late Proceedings, and to authorize the preſent Magiſtrates to continue the Adminiſtration of the publick Affairs, 'till their Majeſties with the Advice of their Privy Council, ſhould ſettle them upon ſuch a Baſis, as might ſatisfy all their Subjects in that *Colony*. Some Time before this, Sir *William Phips* returned to *New-England* by Advice of ſome of the *Lords* of the *Council*, who thought him capable of doing his Country Service in this *Criſis* of their Affairs, but before he left *London* a Meſſenger from King *James* offered him the Government of *New-England*, which he generouſly refuſed, and choſe to come over without any Character, rather than accept of a *Commiſſion* from a Prince who had ſo notoriouſly invaded the Rights of his Subjects. Sir *William* found his Country in the utmoſt Confuſion; the Government being in a Manner diſſolved, and the *Indians* at the ſame Time invading the Frontiers: The new Government had tried ſeveral Methods for renewing the Peace; they applied to one of the great *Sachems* of the Eaſt, and engaged him with a Sum of Money to employ his Intereſts to bring the *Indians* to a Treaty, but inſtead of being a Mediator, when he had got his Money he became a Party, and put himſelf at the Head of the Enemy: Captain *Greenleaf* was ſent to treat with the *Indians* of *Penacook*, and to perſwade them by all the Promiſes of Kindneſs and Civility to live in Peace;

Anno 1689 but as ſoon as he was gone they joyned the *Indians* of *Saco*, and aſſiſted them in the Attack of the Garriſon of *Quochecho*, which they ſurprized by the Treachery of *Meſandouit*, a *Segamore*, whom Major *Walderen* the Governour had entertain'd that Night in his Houſe as a Friend. The *Indians* lay in Ambuſh in the neighbouring *Woods* all Night, and about break of Day, *Meſandouit* opening the Gates, they ruſhed in upon the ſecure Garriſon, killed the Major and twenty two of his Men, burn'd four or five of the beſt Houſes, and carried away 29 People into Captivity; in their Retreat they killed Mr. *Broughton*, but Mr. *Emmerſon* Miniſter of *Berwick*, by refuſing to lodge with the Major that Night, though very much preſs'd to it, had a remarkable Deliverance.

As ſoon as the Government were informed of this Action, they ordered Captain *Noyes* with a ſtrong Party to march to *Penacook*, and drive the *Indians* out of that Part of the Country; but they ſaved him the Trouble, for having ſlain ſeveral Perſons at an Out-Farm on the *North*-ſide of *Merimack*-River, they retired into the *Woods*, and left the open Country to his Mercy; the Captain cut down all their Corn, burn'd their *Wigwams*, and laid their Plantation deſolate. Captain *Wincal* with a ſmall Party marched from *Piſcataqua*, as far as *Winnopiſſeag-Ponds*, and killed one or two of the Enemy, but four young Men of *Saco*, who were to have joyned him, going into the *Woods* to fetch their Horſes fell into an Ambuſh, and were killed; as ſoon as they were miſſing, 24 armed Men went out to look after them, and had a brisk Skirmiſh with the Enemy in the *Woods*, but venturing too far, they were ſurrounded by a vaſt Body of *Indians*, and forced to retire with the Loſs of five or ſix of their Company. Immediately after this

lowed the Loſs of the Fort and Garriſon of *Pemmaquid*, by the following Accident: One Mr. *Starky* travelling early in the Morning, on the ſecond of *Auguſt* from *Pemmaquid-Fort* to *New-Harbour*, happened to fall into the Hands of the *Indians*, who to ſave his Life and recover his Liberty, informed them, that *Pemmaquid-Fort* at that Time had but a very ſmall Garriſon in it, Mr. *Giles* with 14 Men being gone out to his Farm, and ſeveral others abroad upon their private Occaſions; the *Indians* hereupon divided their Forces into two Parts, one of which went up to the *Falls*, and killed Mr. *Giles* and his Men at his Farm; the other immediately inveſted the Fort, and from a high Rock which overlooked it, gauled the Beſieged ſo miſerably, as obliged them to ſurrender the next Morning, only upon Condition of Liberty; but the *Indians* broke the Capitulation, and butcher'd the greateſt Part of the Garriſon: Capt. *Weems* the Governour was diſabled by the blowing up of ſome Gunpowder by Accident in his Face; Captain *Skinner* and Captain *Farnham* who were abroad, attempting to get into the Fort from an Iſland about half a Mile off were both ſlain, as they landed upon the Rocks, and Mr. *Patteſhall* who lay with his *Sloop* in the *Barbican* was taken and ſlain; theſe Loſſes cauſed the Inhabitants of *Sheepſcoat* and *Kennebunk* to abandon thoſe Places, and retire to *Falmouth*, as did ſeveral other Planters in other Parts of the Eaſt. *Anno* 1689

THE Flame of War ſpreading thus into the Heart of the Country, and the *French* engaging openly in it, ſince the late *Revolution*; 'twas Time for the Government to think of raiſing all the Forces they could, in Order to bring it to a ſpeedy Iſſue; the *Maſſachuſet-Colony* therefore ſent out ſeven or eight Companies under the Command of Major *Swayne*, who were joyned

Anno 1689 by a Party of *Engliſh* and *Indian* Converts from *Plimouth* Colony, under the Command of Major *Church*; but the Confuſion of the Publick Affairs, occaſioned by the late Change of the Government, not ſuffering them to march out 'till the latter End of *Auguſt*, they did nothing conſiderable in the Field: Beſides, their Motions were diſcover'd to the Enemy by ſome *Indian* Auxiliaries, who being ſent out with Lieutenant *Flag* to get Intelligence of the Enemy, conſulted together in their own Language at *Winnopiſſeag*, and obliging the Lieutenant to return with but two *Indians*, 19 of them ſtaid in thoſe Parts 11 Days without an *Engliſhman* in their Company; in which Time they found out the Enemy, lay with them two Nights, and told them every thing they knew of the Numbers, Motions and Deſigns of the *Engliſh*: Upon which they retired into their inacceſſible Woods and Swamps, and appeared no more in a Body while the Army was in thoſe Parts; which was not very long, for when they had garriſoned *Wells*, *York*, *Berwick*, *Quechecho*, and ſome other Frontier Places, they returned.

THE *Indians* however did a great deal of Miſchief by their flying Parties. A Body of them lying hid in the Woods took Notice how many Men belonged to Lieutenant *Huckins*'s Garriſon, and ſeeing them all go out to their daily Work, they intercepted them in their Return, and put 17 of them, which was all but one, to the Sword. They then attacked the Fort, in which were only two Boys and ſome Women and Children: The Boys defended themſelves with great Bravery, wounding ſeveral of the *Indians*, 'till they found out a Way to ſet fire to the Fort, and even then they would not ſurrender but upon Condition of their Lives, which tho' theſe inhuman Wretches ſolemnly promiſed,

yet

yet they killed three or four of the Children and one of the Boys, the other having the good Fortune to make his Escape. About the same Time another Party of them assaulted *Casco*, killed Captain *Bracket*, and had put the whole Town to the Sword, if Captain *Hull* had not come in the very Nick of Time to their Relief; who, after a warm Engagement of several Hours, wherein he lost 10 or 12 of his Men, put them to flight. *Anno* 1689

THE *English* Garrisons thinking themselves secure from the Enemy while the Country was covered with Frost and Snow, neglected their Guard, and allowed the Soldiers to mind their private Affairs; but the *French* and *Indians* made their Advantage of the hard Weather, and in the Beginning of *February* made a Descent from *Canada* upon a *Dutch* Town called *Schenectada* in the Province of *New-York*, killed 60 of the Inhabitants, and carried away 30 into Captivity. On the 18th of *March* they made another Descent upon *Salmon Falls* under the Command of Monsieur *Artell* a *Frenchman*, and one *Hoophood* a Leader of the *Hurons*: They burnt the greatest Part of the Town, killed 30 Persons, and took 50 Prisoners. The neighbouring Garrisons being alarmed with this, rallied their Forces, and pursued the Enemy with 140 Men; but after some small Skirmishes, wherein the Loss was pretty equal on both Sides, they were forced to return.

HARD was the Fate of those poor Wretches that fell into the Hands of these barbarous Savages; as the Reader will see by the following Relations taken from the Mouths of some * who were afterwards redeemed out of Captivity.

---

* Mather, *Book* VII. *p.* 69.

Anno 1689 Among the Priſoners taken at *Salmon Falls* was one *Robert Rogers*, a corpulent Man, who being tired with travelling under an inſupportable Burthen which the *Indians* laid upon his Back, watched his Opportunity, and run away: As ſoon as he was miſſing his Maſters went in purſuit of him, and tracking him by the Snow found him hid in an hollow Tree. When they had pulled him down they ſtript him and beat him, and then pricked him forwards with the Points of their Swords 'till they brought him back to the Place from whence he had deſerted. It being then almoſt Night, they ty'd him to a Tree with his Hands behind him 'till they had refreſh'd themſelves, after which they cut down a Parcel of Fire-Wood, and bringing it into a plain Place laid it round the Trunk of a ſmall red Oak-Tree; They then bid the Priſoner take Leave of his Friends; and having allowed him a few Minutes for his Prayers, they bound him to the Stake, the reſt of the Priſoners being placed at ſome Diſtance round about the Stake ty'd Arm to Arm. Fire was then put to the Wood, which was at ſuch a Diſtance as only to roaſt him. When the Criminal was almoſt ſuffocated they pulled back the Fire and gave him Air, and to add to his Torment they cut off Slices of his Fleſh and threw them in his Face. Thus was he fry'd to Death with a ſlow Fire, the *Indians* all the while dancing round about him, and endeavouring to drown his Shrieks with their barbarous Hoopings. When he was dead they left him bound to the Stake, in which Poſture the *Engliſh* found the Body next Day, and beſtowed a Funeral upon it.

ROGERS's Caſe may, perhaps, be thought peculiar, becauſe he was a Deſerter; but it was the conſtant Practice of the *Indians* to ſtrip their Priſoners, allowing them neither Stock-

ings

ings nor Shoes, but only a ſlight Blanket to cover their Nakedneſs, except in the Winter, when they were ſometimes favoured with a Pair of Leather-Stockings to keep their Feet from periſhing with the Cold. They made them carry all their Baggage, feeding them with no other Proviſion than Ground-Nuts, Acorns, Purſlain, Hogweed, Weeds, Roots, and ſometimes Dogs-fleſh, and of this no more than was juſt ſufficient to keep Soul and Body together. They obliged them to travel in theſe Circumſtances about 20 or 30 Miles a Day, and if any of them tired, or could not travel their Pace, it was their conſtant Practice to ſtrike their Hatchets into their Brains. *Anno* 1689

THEY had no Regard either to Sex or Age; for *Mary Ferguſon*, who was taken Captive at the ſame time, and afterwards redeemed, declared that her Companion, a young Maid of about 15 or 16 Years of Age, had a heavy Burthen laid upon her Back, which ſhe carried as long as ſhe could ſtand under it; but at laſt, burſting out into Tears, and crying ſhe was able to go no further, her *Indian* Maſter took her aſide into the Buſhes, cut off her Head, and carried about the Scalp in Triumph. *James Key*, a Child of 5 Years of Age, was taken at the ſame Time, and fell to the Share of *Hoophood*, who obſerving him to cry for the Loſs of his Parents, bound him to a Tree and whipt him unmercifully 'till he was all over of gore Blood from Head to Foot: The Child continuing ſtill to cry, contracted a Soreneſs in one of his Eyes, at which his Maſter being enraged, thruſt his Thumb into it, and forced it out of his Head; telling him at the ſame Time, that if he did not leave crying he would ſerve the other ſo too: But about ten Days after, the Child being tired, and not capable of travelling ſo faſt as he would have it, he buried the Blade of his Hatchet in

Anno 1689 its Brains, and then chopped its Body into ſmall Pieces, and threw it into the River. Happy were thoſe Captives that fell to the Lot of the *French*; for tho' they were forced to travel bare-foot thro' Froſt and Snow, above 100 Miles to *Canada*, yet when they came thither they were uſed like Priſoners of War, and taken care of till they were exchanged.

Anno 1690 THE Government of *New-England* in this Exigency of their Affairs publiſhed a Proclamation for Reformation of Manners, dated *March* 13, 1689-90. wherein it was ordered, "That "the Laws of the Colony againſt *Vice*, and all "Sorts of *Debauchery* and *Prophaneneſs* be put in "Execution, particularly the Laws againſt "*Blaſphemy*, *Curſing*, *prophane Swearing*, *Lying*, "*unlawful Gaming*, *Sabbath-breaking*, *Idleneſs*, "*Drunkenneſs*, *Uncleanneſs*, and all the Entice-"ments and Nurſeries of ſuch Impieties: And "as all Perſons are hereby warned to avoid "thoſe Vices, ſo all inferior Officers are en-"joyned to perform their Duty in finding and "bringing out Offenders againſt the aforeſaid "Laws. 'Tis further deſired, that all the Mi-"niſters of God, will to the publick Reading of "this Proclamation, adjoyn their own fervent "Labours; not only in rebuking theſe Evils, "but alſo to witneſs againſt more ſpiritual Sins, "which fall not ſo much under the Cognizance of "human Laws, as *Unbelief*, *Wordlineſs*, *Hereſy*, "*Pride*, *Wrath*, *Strife*, *Envy*, and the *Neglect of* "*Publick Worſhip*. The Churches are likewiſe "adviſed to reflect ſeriouſly and frequently on "their Covenants, to ſharpen their Diſcipline "againſt thoſe that walk diſorderly, and to com-"poſe all Differences and Contentions among "themſelves. Furthermore 'tis expected, that "the ſeveral Towns within this Juriſdiction do "ſpeedily furniſh themſelves with Schools for

"the

" the good Education of Youth, and take ſpecial " Care to avoid Factions and Quarrels in their " Town-Affairs. All Plantations are ſtrictly " commanded not to continue any longer with- " out a Miniſtry among them. And finally, All " the People are advertiſed, that if they do not " obſerve theſe Rules, they may expect that God " will puniſh them yet ſeven times more for their " Iniquities; but if they obſerve them, it will give " a greater Proſpect of Proſperity than can ariſe " from the beſt Councils and biggeſt Armies. *Anno* 1690

DAYS of ſolemn Faſting and Humiliation were frequently obſerved throughout the whole Province for a Bleſſing upon their Arms, and ſeveral Councils were held at the ſame Time to conſider of the State of the War, and concert proper Meaſures for carrying it on with Succeſs. It was generally agreed, That ſince the *French* had joyned openly with the *Indians* in making War upon the *Engliſh*, the greateſt Danger was from *them*, for the *Indians* were a contemptible Body of themſelves; but as they were inſtructed in the Arts of War, and ſupplied with all warlike Stores by the *French*, they were capable of doing a great deal of Miſchief, and might in time become very formidable. Sir *William Phips* therefore formed a Project to drive the *French* out of their Settlements in *L'Acadie*, ſince known by the Name of *New-Scotland*; which the General Court of the *Maſſachuſets* having approved, immediately ordered 700 Men to be put on Board a ſmall Fleet of Ships under his Command for the Expedition.

L'Acadie, or *Nova Scotia*, is Part of the *Terra Canadenſis*; it lies from 43 to 51 Degrees of North Latitude, and from the River of *St. Croix* in *Norembegua* to the great River of *Canada*; has always 200 Leagues of Coaſt, but was never much inhabited by the *Indians* themſelves. The

Bounds

Anno 1690 Bounds of this Province are the *Atlantick Ocean* to the North, *Breton Iſland* and the *Bay* of *St. Lawrence* to the Eaſt, *Canada* to the Weſt, and *New-England* to the South. When Sir *Ferdinando Gorges* was Preſident of the *New-England* Company, he propoſed to Sir *William Alexander*, one of the Secretaries of State for *Scotland*, and afterwards Earl of *Sterling*, the procuring a particular Patent for this Country; which Sir *William*, being in favour with King *James* I. eaſily obtained; it bears Date *September* 10, 1621. The next Year Sir *William* and ſome others who were concerned with him attempted to make a Settlement, but not being able to perfect their Deſign, it lay waſte 'till the Year 1662, when the *French* took Poſſeſſion of it, and fortified themſelves at *Port-Royal* on the North Side of *Funda-Bay*, in 45 Degrees North Latitude. The *Engliſh* had ſo little an Opinion of this Territory that they abandoned it to the *French* by the Treaty of *Breda* in the Year 1667, and never attempted to recover it 'till this time, when they began to apprehend the Danger of the Neighbourhood of ſo potent an Enemy. Monſieur *Meneval* was now Governour of the Province, who had built a little Fort at *Port-Royal* for the Security of the Plantations along the Coaſt, where the Inhabitants drove a conſiderable Trade in Lumber, Fiſhing and Furs, and were encreaſed to the Number of 6 or 7000 Souls.

SIR *William Phips* ſailed with his Fleet from *Nantaſcot* on the 28th of *April* 1690, and on the 11th of *May* arrived before *Port-Royal*. 'Twas then but a ſmall Town, defended with nothing but ſingle Paliſadoes, but is ſince pretty much enlarged and fortified. It lies in the Latitude of 45 Degrees and 40 Minutes, upon the Edge of a Baſin a League broad and two Leagues long, having at the Entry 16 or 18 Fathom Water

Water on one Side, and 6 or 7 on the other. The Garriſon not being provided for a Defence, ſurrendred after a ſhort Reſiſtance, upon Condition of a ſafe Conduct to *Canada*. Sir *William* took Poſſeſſion of the Country in the Name of King *William* and Queen *Mary*, and having demoliſhed the Fort, ſent away the *French* Garriſon according to the Articles of Capitulation, and adminiſtred an Oath of Allegiance to the King and Queen of *England* to all that ſtaid behind, over whom he placed a Governour, and then returned. In his Way home he deſtroyed another *French* Settlement at *St. John's* River on the South Side of *Funda Bay*, and arrived at *Boſton* the 30th of *May*. The *Engliſh* kept Poſſeſſion of this Country 'till the Peace of *Ryſwick*, in the Year 1697, when it was reſtored to the *French*; but by the Treaty of *Utrecht* it was yielded to the *Engliſh* Crown for ever, and *Port-Royal* changed its Name into *Annapolis-Royal*. Ann. 1690

THE Succeſs of this Expedition encouraged the Government of *New-England* to attempt the Conqueſt of all *Canada*; where the *French* had made ſuch great Settlements, as were like to prove a terrible Thorn in the Sides of the Country.

Canada, according to the *French* Account of it, contains a Tract of Land of almoſt 2000 Miles in Length, and 840 in Breadth, ſituate between the 39th and 65th Degrees of North Latitude; but this Account takes in *Acadia*, *Newfoundland* and *Terra de Laborador*, which belong now to the *Engliſh*. The *French* took Poſſeſſion of it in the Beginning of the laſt Century, and made Settlements at *Quebec*, *Montreal*, and other Places upon the Banks of the Great River of *St. Lawrence*; but the moſt conſiderable Place for Strength is *Quebec*, which is divided into the Upper and Lower City; 'tis com-

Anno 1690 commanded by a Caſtle which ſtands on an Eminence. There are five Churches in the High City; and a Cathedral, which conſiſts of a Biſhop and 12 Prebendaries, who live together in the Chapter-Houſe, the Architecture of which is truly wonderful; but the City has neither Key nor Fortification. This Place Sir *William Phips* was ſent to reduce with a Fleet of 32 Sail of Ships, beſides Tenders, on Board of which were 2000 Men. The Fleet was divided into three Squadrons; the firſt conſiſted of 13 Sail, under the Command of Capt. *Gregory Sugars*, Admiral, who hoiſted his Flag on Board the *Six Friends*, a Ship of 44 Guns; the ſecond conſiſted of 9 Sail, under the Command of Vice-Admiral *Gilbert*, on Board the *Swan*; and the third of 9, under the Command of Rear-Admiral *Eldridge*, on Board the *America Merchant*. The whole Fleet ſet ſail from *Hull Auguſt* the 9th; but by reaſon of hard Weather and contrary Winds, did not come within Sight of *Quebec* 'till the 5th of *October*; a ſad Time of Year to begin an Attempt of this Nature. It was agreed before Sir *William* left *Boſton*, that while he attacked *Quebec* by Sea, an Army conſiſting of 1000 Men from the Weſtern Plantations of *New-York*, *Albany* and *Connecticut*, with 1500 *Indians*, ſhould march over Land and beſiege *Mont Real* at the ſame Time, that the *French* might be obliged to divide their Forces for the Defence of both Places: But when the *Engliſh* had march'd as far as the great Lake of *Canada*, not finding Canoes to carry them over, nor the *Indians* ready to joyn them according to Promiſe, they return'd home; by which Means Count *Frontenac* had an Opportunity of recalling his Detachments, and drawing together the whole Strength of the Colony for the Defence of *Quebec*.

ON

ON the 6th of *October* Sir *William* ſent the following Summons to Count *Frontenac* in Writing. *Anno* 1690

Sir William Phips, *Kt. General and Commander in Chief, in and over their Majeſties Forces of* New-England *by Sea and Land,*

To Count Frontenac, *Lieutenant General and Governour for the* French *King at* Canada; *or in Abſence, to his Deputy, or him or them in chief Command at* Quebec.

"THE War between the Two Crowns of "*England* and *France* does not only "ſufficiently warrant, but the Deſtruction made "by the *French* and *Indians* under your Com- "mand and Encouragement upon the Perſons "and Eſtates of their Majeſties Subjects of "*New-England*, without Provocation on their "Part, hath put them under the Neceſſity of "this Expedition, for their own Security and "Satisfaction. And altho' the Cruelties and "Barbarities uſed againſt them by the *French* "and *Indians* might upon the preſent Opportu- "nity prompt to a ſevere Revenge, yet being "deſirous to avoid all Inhumanity and unchri- "ſtianlike Actions, and to prevent ſhedding of "Blood as much as may be; I the ſaid Sir *Wil- "liam Phips*, Kt. do hereby, in the Name and "on the Behalf of their moſt Excellent Majeſties "*William* and *Mary*, King and Queen of *En- "gland*, *Scotland*, *France* and *Ireland*, Defenders "of the Faith, and by Order of their ſaid Ma- "jeſties Government of the *Maſſachuſet* Colony "in *New-England*, demand a preſent Surrender "of your Forts and Caſtles, and the King's and "other Stores unembezzell'd, with a ſeaſonable "Delivery of all Captives, together with a Sur-

"render

Anno 1690 render of all your Perſons and Eſtates to my Diſpoſe; upon the doing whereof you may expect Mercy from me, as a Chriſtian, according to what ſhall be found for their Majeſty's Service, and the Subjects Security, which if you refuſe forthwith to do, I am come provided, and am reſolved by the Help of God, in whom I truſt, by Force of Arms to revenge all Wrongs and Injuries offer'd, and bring you under Subjection to the Crown of *England*, and when too late make you wiſh you had accepted of the Favour tendred.

"Your Anſwer poſitive in an Hour, returned by your own Trumpet, with the Return of mine is required upon the Peril that will enſue.

THE Officer that brought the Summons was conducted to the Governour's Chamber blindfold, who upon hearing the Letter was ſo enraged, that he ordered the Captain of his Guards to erect a Gibbet before the *Fort* to hang him, and he had certainly done it, if the Biſhop had not interceeded for him; for the Governour look'd upon them as Pyrates, becauſe they had no Commiſſion, as he ſaid, from the True and Rightful King of *England*; but at laſt, being appeas'd by his Officers, he ſent back the Major with the following Haughty and Inſolent Anſwer.

"THAT Sir *William Phips* and thoſe with "him were Hereticks, and Traitors to "their King, and had taken up with that "Uſurper the Prince of *Orange*, and had made "a *Revolution*, which if it had not been made, "*New-England* and the *French* had been all one; "and that no other Anſwer was to be expected from

" from him, but what ſhould be from the Mouth " of his Cannon. Anno 1690

ON the 7th of *October* Sir *William* attempted to put his Land-Forces aſhore, but the Weather proving very tempeſtuous, it could not be done 'till the next Day, when 1400 of them under the Command of General *Walley*, landed about a League and a half from the Town; the Enemy made a briſk Fire upon them at their firſt Landing, but as ſoon as the *Forlorn* were got aſhore, and had formed themſelves, they retreated. The *French* ſay, they retreated with no other Deſign than to draw the *Engliſh* into an Ambuſcade, for having poſted their *Confederate-Savages*, with 200 *Forreſt-Rangers* and 50 Officers in a *Copſe* of thick Brambles half a League from the Landing-Place, they drew them into it, and having made a general Diſcharge, they lay flat on the Ground while they received the Enemy's Fire, after which they ſprung up, and drawing into Knots here and there repeated their Fire with ſuch Succeſs, that the *Engliſh* fell into Confuſion, and retreated with the Loſs of 300 Men dead on the Spot, without any other Loſs on their Side, than 10 Forreſt-Rangers, 4 Officers, and 2 Savages. Next Day the *Engliſh* landed 4 Pieces of Braſs Cannon mounted like Field-Pieces, and made a freſh Attempt to force their Paſſage through the *Copſe* by the Help of their Artillery, but were repuls'd again with the Loſs of 2 or 300 Men, the *French* on their Side loſing but 40, amongſt whom was Monſieur St. *Helene*, who died of a Wound in his Leg. This ſecond Victory animated them ſo much, that they purſued the *Engliſh* to their very Camp, and lay all Night within Sight of it, deſigning to attack it by break of Day, if they had not ſaved them the Trouble, by embarking about Midnight with ſuch Haſte and Confuſion, that they loſt 50

Men

Anno 1690 Men as they were getting into their Boats. The *French* confeſs, that there was no want of Bravery in the Soldiers, but impute their ill Succeſs to their Unacquaintedneſs with Military Diſcipline, to their being enfeebled by the Fatigues of the Sea, and to the ill Conduct of Sir *William Phips*, who upon this Enterprize could not have done the *French* greater Service, if he had been hir'd to ſtand ſtill with his Hands in his Pocket.

But its plain Sir *William* did his Duty better than *Walley*, for it having been agreed in a Council of War, held on board the Admiral before their Landing, that *Walley* with his Land-Forces ſhould attack the Town on the Eaſt-ſide, while Sir *William* battered it with his Ships on the Weſt. Sir *William* accordingly brought his Ships to bear, and battered the Town all Night, and Part of the next Day; but wondring that he could ſee no Signal of an Action aſhore, he ſent to enquire into the Condition of the Army, and was informed that *Walley* durſt not venture within Sight of the Town, having been aſſured by a *French* Deſerter, that Count *Frontenac* had 3000 Men with him in Garriſon, and was prepared to give them a warm Reception. 'Tis certain the Army was grown very ſickly, ſome being ill of the Small-Pox, and others almoſt frozen to Death with the Cold; which made Sir *William* order them on board again, reſolving to land them in the Face of the Town under the Shelter of his own Cannon; but before that could be done, a violent Storm aroſe, and ſeparated the Fleet, and the Cold became ſo extream, that it was thought impoſſible to continue any longer in thoſe Parts; ſo after an Exchange of Priſoners on both Sides, they weighed Anchor, and returned home.

Sir *William Phips* with the greateſt Part of the Fleet arrived at *Boſton*, *November* the 19th, but

but ſome of the Ships were driven by contrary Winds as far as the *Summer* Iſlands, and three or four of them loſt; Captain *Rainsford* in his Brigantine with Sixty Men being ſeparated from the Fleet, ſtruck upon the deſolate Iſland of *Antecoſta*, near the Mouth of *Canada* River, *October* the 28th, and had but juſt Time enough to land his Proviſions before the Veſſel ſunk; The Captain and his Men finding they were like to winter upon the Iſland, built a Store-houſe and nine little Hutts to ſhelter them from the Cold with the Planks of the Wreck; but their Proviſions were ſo ſhort, that they agreed each Man's Allowance *per* Week to be no more than two Biskets, half a Pound of Pork, half a Pound of Flower, one Pint and a quarter of Peaſe, and two Salt-fiſh. It was not long before the diſmal Effects of Hunger and Cold began to appear among them, for on the 20th of *December* their *Doctor* dyed, and after him 30 or 40 in a few Weeks; and though they were all convinced of the Neceſſity of keeping to their Allowance, unleſs they would at laſt eat one another, yet their *Store-Houſe* was frequently broke open; an *Iriſh* Man once got to the Proviſions, and eat no leſs than 18 Biskets, which ſwelled him to ſuch a Degree, that he was forced to have his Belly ſtroked, and bathed before the Fire, to prevent its burſting; for which the Villain deſerved, I am ſure, to be hanged, if he was not. On the 25th of *March* five of the Company reſolved to venture out to Sea in their Skiff, which they lengthen'd out ſo far as to make a Sort of Cabbin for two or three Men, and having got a little Sail, they ſhipp'd their Share of Proviſions on board, and ſteered away for *Boſton*; it was the 9th of *May* before theſe poor Wretches arrived there, through a Thouſand Dangers, from the Sea and the Ice, and

Anno 1690

Anno 1690 almoſt quite ſtarved with Hunger and Cold; upon their Arrival, a Veſſel was immediately diſpatched away to the Iſland; which in a few Weeks brought off their Friends who were left behind.

SUCH was the melancholy Concluſion of the *Canada*-Expedition, which coſt *New-England* the Lives of 1000 Men, and above 140000 *l.* in Money, a Sum which muſt have infallibly ruined them, if the *Aſſembly* had not paſſed an *Act* for the raiſing it within a certain Number of Years, and in the mean Time iſſued out Bills of Credit, which paſſed currently among the People.

WHILE theſe Things were doing in the *Weſt*, the War was carried on with Vigour in the *Eaſt*. About the beginning of *May* 4 or 500 *Indians* and *French* croſs'd the Bay of *Caſco* in their *Canoes*, and lay concealed in the *Woods*, watching an Opportunity to ſurprize the Town. The Inhabitants knew it, and were upon their Guard, but none of them appearing for 3 or 4 Days together, Lieutenant *Clark* with 30 ſtout young Men, reſolved to venture out and look for the Enemy; the *Wood* lay upon a riſing Ground about half a Mile from the Town, at the End of a Lane fenced on each Side, with a *Block-Houſe* at the End of it; the *Engliſh* were afraid of the Enemy's lying in Ambuſcade behind the Fence, but they ran up to it with a bold Huzza, when the Enemy being prepar'd to receive them, made ſuch a terrible Fire as killed the Lieutenant and 13 of his Men at one Diſcharge; they purſued the reſt back to the Town, which the Inhabitants defended as long as their Ammunition laſted, and then retired by the Advantage of the Night into the *Fort*; the Beſiegers burnt the Town immediately, and having begun to undermine the Walls of the *Fort*, the Garriſon ſurren-

der'd

der'd upon Condition of being ſafely conducted to the next *Engliſh* Garriſon; but the *French* broke the Capitulation, and made them *Priſoners of War*, under Pretence of their being Rebels to their Lawful King, and taking up Arms for the Prince of *Orange*. The *Governour* Major *Davis*, and ſome of his Men were ſent to *Quebec*, but the reſt were murder'd by the Savages. *Anno* 1690

THE Fate of *Caſco* made the ſmaller Garriſons of *Papoodack*, *Spurwink*, *Black-Point* and *Blue-Point* draw off immediately without Orders to *Saco*, which was 20 Miles within *Caſco*, and a few Days after they retired 20 Miles farther to *Wells*, and frightned that Garriſon ſo much, that half of them deſerted, and fled as far as Lieutenant *Storer's*. *Hopehood* the Captain of the *Hurons* purſued them, and deſtroyed all the open Country; he burnt ſeveral Houſes at *Berwick*, killed 13 or 14 Men at *Fox-Point*, and carried off 6 Priſoners; but meeting with Capt. *Floyd* and Capt. *Greenleaf*, they routed his Party, wounded *Hopehood* himſelf, and made him retire to a greater Diſtance. After this he marched with his Party Weſtward, with a Deſign to draw the *Aquadocta-Indians* to joyn him; but a Party of *French-Indians* meeting him by the Way fell upon him by Miſtake, and in their blind Fury killed him and almoſt all his Company. At *Spruce-Creek* an Old Man was killed, and a Woman carried into Captivity. On the 4th of *July*, a Party of *Indians* ſurprized and killed 8 or 9 Perſons working in a Field on the Banks of *Lampareel*-River, and carried a Lad into Captivity; all the open Country was ſo infeſted with Parties of the Enemy at this Time, that it was hardly ſafe for a Man to ſtir out of his Houſe, or follow his Buſineſs in the Field; a *Council of War* was therefore called at *Portſmouth*, which ordered Captain *Wiſwel* and Captain *Floyd* with a large

Anno 1690 Body of Men to ſcour the *Woods* as far as *Caſco*. They marched out of *Quochecho* on the 4th of *July* with above 100 Men, and on the 6th came up with a large Party of the Enemy at *Wheelwright-Pond*. It was obſerved, that there were ſeveral *French* Soldiers mix'd with theſe *Indians* to diſcipline and inſtruct them in a regular Way of Fighting. The Engagement laſted ſeveral Hours, but Victory declar'd at laſt for the Enemy; Captain *Wiſwel*, Lieutenant *Flag*, Serjeant *Walker*, with 15 of their Men were killed, and a great many more wounded; when *Wiſwel* fell, Captain *Floyd* retreated with the Remainder of the Army in the beſt Manner he could, leaving his wounded Men behind him, but next Morning Captain *Convers* with 20 Men being ſent out towards the Place of Battle, found ſeven of the wounded *Engliſh* yet alive, and brought them back to the Camp. The *Indians* fluſhed with this Victory made a Deſcent upon *Amesbury*, ſurprized Captain *Foot*, and tortured him to Death; but the Townſmen taking the Alarm, ſecured themſelves in their *Fort*; however the Enemy killed three Perſons, burnt three or four Houſes, deſtroyed their Cattle, and then retired.

THE reſolute Behaviour of the *Indians* in the late Action under *French* Diſcipline, ſtruck ſuch a Terror into the *Engliſh*, as made them reſolve never to hazard an Engagement for the future with ſuch unequal Numbers; Major *Church* was therefore ſent by Sea with 300 effective Men, in the beginning of *September*, to ſecure the Frontiers; he landed in the Night in *Caſco-Bay*, and marched directly to *Pechypſot* an *Indian-Fort*, which he found deſerted; from whence he went to *Amonoſcoggin-Fort*, 40 Miles up the River, but *Agamcus* the Commander with the greateſt Part of the Garriſon were fled; however, he burned the *Fort*, killed 20 *Indians* that were in it, and releaſed

releaſed 7 *Engliſh* Captives: After this, the Major ſcoured the neighbouring *Woods*, and then returned to *Caſco*, where Mr. *Antony Bracket* who had run away from the Enemy had the good Fortune to joyn him; from *Caſco* they went to *Winter-Harbour*, where a ſmall Party ſailing up the River met with a Company of *Mankeen-Indians* whom they put to Flight, and recovered an *Engliſh* Priſoner, who informed them, that the Savages had agreed to rendezvous upon *Pechypſcot-Plain*, in Order to attack the Town of *Wells*; upon this the Army reimbark'd for *Caſco-Bay*, and dividing themſelves into three Bodies waited for the Enemy on *Pechypſcot-Plain*; but the *Indians* were too wiſe to hazard a Battle, but contented themſelves with harraſſing the Forces, and cutting off the Straglers; the Army therefore broke up, and returned to *Caſco-Bay*, *September* the 20th, where five *Plimouth*-Men venturing to lye aſhore at a ſmall Village, called *Macquoit*, without ſetting a Watch at the Door of their Lodging, were deſtroyed in the Night. The Major after this ſeparated his Forces, and put them all into Winter-Quarters, except 100 Men, who were left with Capt. *Convers* and *Playſtead*, to ſcour the *Woods*, and prevent Surprizals from an Enemy, who rarely annoyed them any other Way. *Anno* 1690

THE Affairs of the Country were now at a very low Ebb, through the Loſſes and Diſappointments of the laſt Campaign; for tho' they had conquered *Acadia*, the *Canada*-Expedition, and the ill Succeſs of their Arms upon their Frontiers, had exhauſted their beſt Blood and Treaſure; beſides the Government itſelf was unſettled, and the People ready to mutiny on the Account of their heavy Taxes; when in a happy Juncture, a Party of *Indians* came to *Wells* with a Flag of Truce, and propoſed a Ceſſation of

Anno 1690 Arms for ſix Months; Advice of which being immediately ſent to *Boſton*, Major *Hutchinſon* and Captain *Townſend* were diſpatch'd away to joyn the Commiſſioners at *Wells*, in Order to bring this Affair to an Iſſue; they met the *Indians* by Appointment at *Sagademore*, *November* the 23d, and on the 29th ſigned Articles for a Ceſſation 'till the firſt of *May*, by which they engaged, "Not to do any Injury to the Per-"ſons or Eſtates of the *Engliſh* in any of the "*Engliſh Colonies* 'till that Time; to give timely "Notice of any *Plots* which they might know "the *French* had laid againſt them; and on the "ſaid firſt of *May* to bring into *Storer*'s Garri-"ſon at *Wells* all the *Engliſh* Captives in their "Hands, and there treat of a perpetual Peace." This Inſtrument was ſigned by the *Engliſh* Commiſſioners on the one Hand, and by *Edgeremet* and five *Segamores* or Noblemen on the other. Ten *Engliſh* Captives were releaſed by this Treaty, among whom was Mrs. *Hall*, whom the *Indians* would fain have detained, becauſe being able to write well, ſhe ſerved them in Quality of a Secretary; and *Nathaniel White*, whom the barbarous Wretches had already tied to a Stake, cut off one of his Ears, and made him eat it raw, and were going to roaſt the reſt of him alive. And thus the *Indian* War ceaſed during the Winter of the Year 1690.

THE Beginning of this Year, or the latter End of the laſt, died old Mr. *John Eliot*, the Apoſtle of the *Indians*: He was born in the Year 1604, and educated at *Cambridge*; but his Parents dying before he had perfected his Studies, he was obliged to leave the Univerſity and become Uſher to Mr. *Hooker*, a ſilenced *Nonconformiſt* Miniſter, at *Little Baddow* in *Eſſex*. He came over to *New-England* in the Year 1631, and joyned himſelf to Mr. *Wilſon*'s Church at *Boſton*,

Boſton, amongſt whom he preached occaſionally for ſome Time: But the next Year, ſeveral of his old Acquaintance coming over, he ſettled with them at *Roxbury*, about a Mile from *Boſton*, and continued in the Exerciſe of the Paſtoral Office among them almoſt 60 Years. His indefatigable Pains and Labours in converting the *Indians* are known to all the World, and the Reader has had ſome Account of them in the Courſe of this Hiſtory. This Part of his Work was his greateſt Delight; and tho' he travelled conſtantly among the *Indians* once a Fortnight, yet he did not neglect his Duty at *Roxbury*. He was a Man of great Piety and Zeal for Religion, and yet of univerſal Love and Charity to all Men. When he was in a Manner quite decayed with Age, being ask'd how he did? he reply'd, *Alas I have loſt every thing; my Underſtanding leaves me, my Memory fails me, my Utterance fails me; but I thank God my Charity holds out ſtill; I find that rather grows than fails.* He was a good Scholar, eſpecially in the Languages; and one that would never allow himſelf to be idle. He had gained the Affections of the *Indian* Converts by his Affability and good Nature to ſuch a Degree, that they would run all Hazards to ſerve him; and his Name is ſtill mentioned by them with Honour. He lived till he was quite worn out; and uſed to ſay merrily, *That his old Acquaintance had been gone to Heaven ſo long before him, that he was afraid they would think he was gone the wrong Way becauſe he ſtaid ſo long behind.* But at laſt, after a Life of great Labour and Uſefulneſs, he died in Peace at his Houſe at *Roxbury*, in the 86th Year of his Age. Anno 1693

CHAP. XI.

Sir William Phips *returns to* England, *and joins with the* New-England *Agents at the Court of King* William *and Queen* Mary *in ſolliciting the Reſtoration of their Charter. They obtain a New One, not ſo agreeable to the People as their Old One. Sir* William Phips *appointed Governour. The War renewed. The Memorable Siege of* Wells. *Mr.* Increaſe Mather *created Doctor of Divinity.* Pemmaquid *Fort built. A Peace concluded with the* Indians.

Anno 1691

SIR *William Phips* having refreſhed himſelf a few Weeks at Home, after his unfortunate Expedition to *Canada*, embarked for *England*, and arrived at *White-hall* in the very Depth of Winter; the Reaſon of his undertaking this Voyage was to ſollicit Succours for another Expedition to *Canada*, the Conqueſt

queſt of which he apprehended neceſſary to the Safety of his Country; and to induce the King to come into his Meaſures he humbly offered to his Majeſty the following Conſiderations. Anno 1691

"*Firſt*, THAT it was for the Intereſt of "the *Engliſh* Crown and Nation, becauſe there- "by, they would not only engroſs the Bea- "ver Trade, but ſecure the *Hudſon*'s Bay Com- "pany, ſome of whoſe Factories had lately "fallen into the Hands of the *French*; it would "likewiſe encreaſe the *Engliſh* Shipping, by "gaining the Fiſhery of *Newfoundland*; and "conſequently diminiſh the Number of *French* "Seamen, and cut off a great Revenue from "that Crown.

"*Secondly*, THAT the Miſcarriage of the "late Expedition was not owing to the Diffi- "culty of the Enterprize; but to their waiting "for Supplies of Ammunition from *England* "till *Auguſt*; to their long Paſſage up the Ri- "ver, together with the cold Weather's coming "in, and the Small-pox and Fever, being in "the Army and Fleet, which obliged them to "return home; but if they could have ſtaid "fourteen Days longer, he does not doubt but "they might have taken *Quebec*, the Strength "of the *French* being ſmall, and the Planters "deſirous to to be under the *Engliſh* Govern- "ment.

"*Thirdly*, THAT the Jeſuits endeavour to "draw the *Maqua's* and other *Indians* into "their Intereſt, by ſuggeſting the Greatneſs of "King *Lewis*, and the Inability of King *Wil- "liam* to do any thing againſt the *French* in "thoſe Parts, which in Time of War would "not only be prejudicial to *New-England*, but "to all our *American* Plantations.

Anno 1691 BUT the *French* War lay ſo heavy on the King at this Time, that he was obliged to defer the Conſideration of Sir *William*'s Petition for the preſent, His Majeſty having need of all the Men and Money he could raiſe for the Defence of his own Kingdoms.

SIR *William* being thus detained in *England* employ'd his Intereſt among the Courtiers, in Conjunction with the *New-England* Agents to obtain the reſtoring of their Charter. The Rev. Mr. *Increaſe Mather*, Rector of *Harvard* College, had been at Court in the Year 1688, and laid before King *James* a Repreſentation of their Grievances, which the King promiſed in part to redreſs, but was prevented by the Revolution. When the Prince and Princeſs of *Orange* were ſetled on the Throne, he with the Reſt of the *New-England* Agents addreſs'd their Majeſties for the reſtoring of their Charter, and applied to the Convention Parliament, who received a Bill for this Purpoſe, and paſs'd it in the lower Houſe; but that Parliament being ſoon after diſſolved, the Bill was loſt.

THE weighty and important Affairs of *Europe* requiring his Majeſty's Preſence in *Holland*, the *New England* Agents were forced to defer their Applications for their Charter till his Majeſty's Return. Thus the Buſineſs ſlept for about a Year; when the Agents agreed among themſelves, inſtead of addreſſing the King for the reſtoring their old Charter, to petition his Majeſty for a new One, with more ample Privileges; but before they could obtain an Anſwer the King went to *Holland* again, and referr'd them to his Council for the Determination of their Affair in his Abſence. The Agents meeting with ſo many Diſappointments from the Courtiers, and ſeeing no End of their Affairs, at laſt waited on

the

the Queen herſelf to aſſure her Majeſty " of the " Duty and Loyalty of her *New England* Sub- " jects, and of the great Hardſhips they had " ſuffer'd for their being ſo; and to beſeech her " Majeſty, that ſince the King upon his going " to *Holland* had referr'd the *New Engliſh* Affair " to the two Lord Chief Juſtices, with the At- " torney and Solicitor General, that what they " thought reaſonable might be confirmed to " them." The Queen reply'd, " That the Re- " queſt was reaſonable; that ſhe had ſpoken di- " vers Times to the King on the Behalf of *New* " *England*; and that for her own Part, ſhe de- " ſired that the People there might not only have " Juſtice, but Favour done them." They waited likewiſe upon moſt of the Lords of his Majeſty's moſt honourable Privy-Council, with a Paper of Reaſons for the Confirmation of the Charter Privileges granted to the *Maſſachuſet* Colony; but all their Applications were ineffectual: Some Perſons about the King had given his Majeſty ſuch ill Impreſſions of the Religion and Loyalty of his *New England* Subjects, that there was Reaſon to fear they would never obtain any Charter at all. The Agents however purſued their Buſineſs with unwearied Application, and improved all their Intereſt in Court and City to accompliſh it. *Anno* 1691

IT being whiſper'd at Court that the King would certainly nominate a Governour for *New England* before his going to *Holland*, the Agents fearing he might appoint one that was not agreeable to the Country, obtained an Audience of his Majeſty by the Favour of the Duke of *Devonſhire*, *April* 28, 1691, wherein Mr *Mather* humbly pray'd his Majeſty's Favour to *New England* in reſtoring their old Charter Privileges; adding at the ſame time theſe Words: *Sir, your Subjects there have been willing to venture their Lives*

to

Anno 1651 *to enlarge your Dominions: The Expedition to* Canada *was a great and noble Undertaking. May it pleaſe your Majeſty in your great Wiſdom alſo to conſider the Circumſtances of that People, as in your Wiſdom you have conſidered the Circumſtances of* England *and of* Scotland. *In* New England *they differ from other Plantations; they are called Congregational and Presbyterian; ſo that ſuch a Governour will not ſuit with the People of* New England, *as may be very proper for other* Engliſh *Plantations.*

Two Days after this the King enquir'd, whether without Breach of Law he might appoint a Governour over *New England?* To which the Lord Chief Juſtice, and ſome other Lords of the Council, anſwer'd, *That whatever might be the Merits of the Cauſe, in as much as the Charter of* New England *ſtood vacated by a Judgment againſt them, it was in the King's Power to put them under what Form of Government he ſhould think beſt for them.* The King repl'd, *He believed then it would be for the Advantage of the People of that Colony to be under a Governour appointed by himſelf; nevertheleſs, becauſe of what Mr.* Mather *had ſpoken to him, he would conſent that the Agents of* New England *ſhould nominate ſuch a Perſon as ſhould be agreeable to the Inclinations of the People there, but notwithſtanding this, he would have Charter Privileges reſtored and confirmed to them.* The next Day the King went to *Holland*, and left Orders with his Attorney General to draw up a Draught of a Charter, according to his Majeſty's Mind expreſſed in Council, to be ready for him to ſign at his Return. The Attorney preſented his Draught to the Council-Board *June* the 8th, which was rejected, and a new One ordered to be drawn up, which deprived the People of *New England* of ſeveral eſſential Privileges contained in their former Charter. Mr. *Mather* in his great Zeal proteſted againſt it; but was told, that the A-

gents

gents of *New England* were not Plenipotentiaries from a Sovereign State, and therefore muſt ſubmit to the King's Pleaſure. *Anno* 1691

THE Agents having obtained a Copy of this new Charter, ſent over their Objections againſt it to the King in *Flanders*, praying that certain Clauſes which they pointed out to his Majeſty in their Petition might be altered: And the Queen herſelf with her own Royal Hand wrote to the King, that the Charter of *New England* might either paſs as it was drawn by the Attorney General at firſt, or be deferred till his Return. But after all, it was his Majeſty's Pleaſure that the Charter of *New England* ſhould run in the main Points according to the ſecond Draught; and all that the Agents could do, was to get two or three Articles, which they apprehended to be for the Good of their Country, added to it.

THE Expectations of the People of *New England* were very much diſappointed by this new Charter, and their Agents were cenſured as Men not very well skill'd in the Intrigues of a Court. It was thought, that if they had apply'd themſelves to proper Perſons, and in a right Way, they might have made better Terms for their Country; but they acted in the Uprightneſs of their Hearts, tho' the Succeſs did not anſwer their Expectations. It was debated among them whether they ſhould accept of the new Charter, or ſtand a Trial at Law, for reverſing the Judgment againſt their Old one; but upon Advice of ſome of the beſt Politicians and Lawyers, the Majority reſolved to acquieſce in the King's Pleaſure, and accept of what was now offered them, for the following Reaſons.

Firſt, BECAUSE if they ſhould refuſe this Charter, the King might poſſibly carry his Reſentments ſo high, as never to offer them another

Anno 1691 another, which would be the Ruin of their Country.

Secondly, BECAUSE a Submitting to this new Charter was no Surrender of the old One, tho' the Judgment againſt the old Charter ſtanding upon Record in the Court of Chancery, the Patent was thereby annihilated.

Thirdly, BECAUSE all Attempts to have the Judgment againſt the Old Charter revers'd would be altogether in vain, in the preſent Situation of Affairs.

Fourthly, BECAUSE the Old Charter was in the Opinion of Perſons learned in the Law, defective, as to ſeveral Powers which are abſolutely neceſſary for the Subſiſtance of the Plantation; for Example, It gave the Government no more Power than every Corporation in *England* has: Power in capital Caſes was not expreſſed in it: It mentioned no Houſe of Deputies, or Aſſembly of Repreſentatives: The Government had thereby no Legal Power to impoſe Taxes on the Inhabitants that were not Freemen, nor to erect Courts of Admiralty: So that if the Judgment againſt this Charter ſhould be revers'd, yet if the Government of *New-England* ſhould exerciſe the ſame Powers as they had done before the *Quo Warranto*, a new Writ of *Scire facias* might undoubtedly be iſſued out againſt them. Beſides, if the Old Charter ſhould be reſtored without a Grant of ſome other Advantages, the Country would be very much incommoded, becauſe the Provinces of *Main* and *Hampſhire* would have been taken from the *Maſſachuſets*, and *Plimouth* would have been annexed to *New-York*, whereby the *Maſſachuſet* Colony would have been very much ſtreightned, and have made a very mean Figure, both as to its Trade and Influence.

Fifthly,

Fifthly, BECAUSE the New Charter grants a great many Privileges to *New-England*, which it had not before; the Colony is now made a Province, and the General Court, has with the King's Approbation, as much Power in *New-England*, as the King and Parliament have in *England*. They have all *Engliſh* Liberties, and can be touched by no Law, by no Tax, but of their own making. All the Liberties of their Religion are for ever ſecured, and their Titles to their Lands, once for want of ſome Forms of Legal Conveyance conteſted, are now confirmed to them for ever. If an ill Governour ſhould happen to be impoſed upon them, he could do them no Hurt except they themſelves are acceſſary to it; for he can neither make a Councellor, Judge, Juſtice of the Peace, nor ſo much as a Sheriff, without their Conſent. Anno 1691

UPON theſe Conſiderations the Agents thought it their Duty to accept of the new Charter, and return his Majeſty their Thanks for it; tho' it muſt be confeſſed, the Form of Government was very much alter'd by it, and ſeveral ample Privileges, which before were in the Hands of the People, were now reſerv'd to the Crown. For Example:

IN this Charter the Nomination and Conſtitution of the Governour, Lieutenant-Governour, Secretary, and all Officers of the Admiralty, is wholly reſerved to the Crown.

THE Power of the Militia is wholly in the Hands of his Majeſty's Governour, as Captain General.

ALL Judges, and Juſtices of a Superior and Inferior Order, and Sheriffs, to whom the Execution of the Laws are entruſted, are nominated and appointed by the Governour, with the Advice and Conſent of his Majeſty's Council.

THE

Anno 1691

THE Governour has a Negative upon all Laws, Elections, and Acts of Government, of the General Aſſembly and Council.

ALL Laws enacted by the General Aſſembly, and approved of by the Governour, are to be tranſmitted Home for the Royal Approbation; and if diſallowed within the Space of three Years, to be utterly void.

THE new Charter having paſs'd the Seals, his Majeſty was pleas'd out of his great Goodneſs, and to keep the *New England* Agents in Humour, to compliment them for the firſt Time with the Nomination of their own Governour, deſiring them to fix on ſuch an one as would be acceptable to their Country. The Agents, after mature Conſultation among themſelves, agreed to name Sir *William Phips*; and being introduced to the King by the Earl of *Nottingham*, Mr. *Mather* made the following Speech:

SIR,

"I Do in the Behalf of *New England* moſt "humbly thank your Majeſty, in that "you have been pleas'd by a Charter to reſtore "*Engliſh* Liberties unto them, to confirm them "in their Properties, and to grant them ſome "peculiar Privileges; I doubt not but that your "Subjects will demean themſelves with that "dutiful Affection and Loyalty to your Majeſty, "as that you will ſee cauſe to enlarge your "Royal Favours towards them; and I do moſt "humbly thank your Majeſty that you have "been pleas'd to give Leave to thoſe that are "concerned for *New England* to nominate their "Governour.

"SIR *William Phips* has been accordingly "nominated by us at the Council-Board. He "has done a good Service to the Crown by en-"larging your Dominions, and reducing *Nova Scotia*

" *Scotia* to your Obedience; I know that he " will faithfully ſerve your Majeſty to the utmoſt " of his Capacity; and if your Majeſty ſhall " think fit to confirm him in that Place, it will " be a further Obligation to your Subjects " there. " Anno 1691

HEREUPON Sir *William Phips* was admitted to kiſs his Majeſty's Hand; and was, by Commiſſion under the Broad Seal, appointed Captain General and Governour in Chief over the Province of the *Maſſachuſet-Bay* in *New England*.

BUT to return to the War: At the Expiration of the Truce of *Sagadehock*, which was the Beginning of *May*, Mr. *Danforth*, Mr. *Moodey*, Mr. *Vaughan*, Mr. *Brattle*, and ſeveral other Gentlemen, with a Troop of Soldiers, came to *Wells* to renew the Peace with the *Indians*; but they not appearing at the Time appointed, Captain *Convers* went out with a Party and brought in ſome Priſoners, who pretended they had forgot the Time, but promiſed within 20 Days to deliver up all their Captives, and ſign the Peace. The Captain having waited 22 Days, and hearing nothing from them, thought it high Time to recruit his Garriſon, and be on his Guard: Accordingly he ſent for a Reinforcement of Men from the County of *Eſſex*, which joyn'd him the 9th of *June*, to the Number of 35 Men. Theſe Recruits had not entred the Garriſon above half an Hour before *Moxus* with 200 *Indians* made an Attack upon it. This ſeaſonable Supply of freſh Men ſaved the Place; for *Moxus* meeting with a bold Reſiſtance, retired with the Loſs of ſeveral of his Men: Upon which *Modackawando* was heard to ſay, *My Brother* Moxus *has miſſed it now; but I will go my ſelf the next Year, and have the Dog* Convers *out of his Hole.* About the ſame Time the *Indians* ſlew two Men at *Berwick*, two

Anno 1691 more at *Exeter*, and five or ſix at Cape *Nidduck*. About the latter End of *July*, Capt. *March*, Capt. *King*, Capt. *Sherburn*, and Capt. *Walton*, landed with 3 or 400 Men at *Macquoit*, and marched up to *Pechypſcot* to look out the Enemy, but not finding them, they returned to their Ships; but while they were embarking, a vaſt Body of *Indians* poured down upon them from the Woods, and put them into Diſorder, part of the Forces being already on Board, the reſt were not able to make Head againſt the Enemy, but got on Board their Veſſels as faſt as they could, leaving Capt. *Sherburn* and ſome others behind them dead upon the Shore. They fired at one another all Night, but to no other Purpoſe than the Spending their Ammunition, and in the Morning both Parties retired. On *September* the 28th, ſeven Perſons were ſurprized and killed at *Berwick*, and the next Day 21 at *Sandy Beach*. *October* the 23d, one *Goodridge* and his Wife were murthered at *Rowly*, and his Children carried into Captivity; and the next Day a Family at *Haverhill* underwent the ſame Fate. The ſtrong Fort at Cape *Nidduck* was likewiſe deſerted this Year, for want of a ſufficient Garriſon to defend it; after which the Enemy came, and burnt all the Houſes in it. Theſe were all the Actions that happened this Summer: By which it appears that both the *Engliſh* and *Indians* were weary of the War, or elſe reduced to ſuch low Circumſtances, as not to be capable of carrying it on with Vigour.

Anno 1692 BUT the next Winter the *Indians* acted with new Life, and did prodigious Damage to the Country. On the 25th of *January* they ſurprized the Town of *York*, while the Inhabitants were quiet and ſecure in their Houſes; ſeveral Hundreds at the Signal of a Gun ruſhing in upon the Town, killed 50, and carried away 100 into Captivity

Captivity. They ſummoned the barricadoed Houſes; but finding the Inhabitants reſolved to ſtand upon their Defence, they retired with their Booty into the Woods. Hard was the Fate of the Rev. Mr. *Shubael Dummer*, who was ſhot dead at his own Door, juſt as he was taking Horſe to go into the Country! His Wife was carried into Captivity, where, thro' Sorrow and Hardſhip, ſhe died. Many of his Church were likewiſe taken Priſoners, who had the Mortification next Lord's-Day, to ſee one of the Savages act the Part of a Preacher in their Miniſters Cloaths. Upon the News of this Diſaſter a Ship was immediately diſpatched to *Sagadehock*, with a Commiſſion, and Effects to redeem the Captives, which they accompliſhed in ſome Meaſure, but the Inhabitants were in ſuch a Conſternation, that they talked of nothing but abandoning the Town; whereupon Capt. *Convers* and Capt. *Greenleaf* were ſent immediately to their Aſſiſtance; and the next Month Major *Hutchinſon*, with a ſtrong Body of Troops, commanded under him by the Captains *Convers*, *Floyd* and *Thaxter*, effectually ſecured them from all future Excurſions of the Enemy. Anno 1692

THE *Engliſh* Forces had ſeveral little Skirmiſhes with the *Indians* in the Spring, but the braveſt Action was at *Wells*, where Capt. *Convers* was poſted with only 15 Men, beſides whom there were in the River two Sloops, with a Shallop, which had brought Ammunition and Proviſion for the Garriſon. The Soldiers obſerved the Cattle to run home frighted and bleating out of the Woods one Evening, which was a certain Sign the Enemy were at hand. Hereupon Capt. *Convers* ſummoned in all his Garriſon, and ordered the Sloops, commanded by *Gouge* and *Storer*, to give him all the Aſſiſtance they could. Next Morning before Day-light, *John Diamond*, a Stranger

Anno 1692 that came in the Shalloop on a Viſit, came up to the Garriſon, and was invited in by the Watch; but chooſing to go on Board one of the Sloops, which lay about a Gun-ſhot from the Fort, he was ſeized by the Enemy, and haled away by the Hair of the Head, notwithſtanding all the Attempts of the Garriſon to reſcue him. *Diamond* was examined by the Generals of the Enemy's Army, which conſiſted of about 500 Men, under the Command of Meſſieurs *Burniff* and *Labrocree*, *French* Men, and *Madockawando*, *Moxus*, *Egeremet* and *Warumbo*, *Indian* Segamores, concerning the Strength of the Garriſon, which he acquainted them with, only inſtead of 15, he told them there were 30 Men in it. The *Indians* came on with a horrible Shout; but the Garriſon made ſuch a briſk Fire upon them with their Small Arms, as obliged them to retire out of the Reach of their Muskets. Upon this they turned their Fury upon the Sloops, which they raked moſt dreadfully with their Small Arms from behind a great Heap of Planks which lay upon the Shore, and a Hay-Stack, which they fortified with Poſts and Rails, not above a Dozen Yards from the Sloops. They continued ſhooting all Day long, and ſet the Sloops on fire ſeveral Times with their *Fire-Arrows*, which the Defendants with a Swab at the End of a Rope tied to a Pole happily put out. At Night they ceaſed, but next Morning returned to the Aſſault; and becauſe they found it impoſſible to board the Sloops without expoſing themſelves to their Fire, they contrived a Machine, which they brought out of the Woods upon a Pair of Wheels, upon which they built a Platform, Musket-proof in the Front, and placed their Men behind it. They puſhed the Machine forwards upon the Shore till it came within 15 Yards of the Sloops, when one of the Wheels ſunk into the Sands, and

and had like to overſet it: A *French* Man ſtepping out to raiſe the Wheel, was ſhot dead upon the Spot; whereupon they let it ſtand as it was, and fired at the Sloop from behind the Platform, till the Tide roſe and overturned it with all the Men, who thereby lay open to the Sloops, and received a general Fire from them before they were able to ſcamper away. Next Morning they returned to the Fort, and a large Body of them marching up to it in good Order, halted about Muſket-ſhot from the Ramparts, and divided themſelves into three Ranks, and having given three great Shouts, cryed out in *Engliſh*, *Fire, and fall on, brave Boys*; upon which they marched up to the Fort, and made a general Diſcharge upon it all at once. Capt. *Convers* ordered his Men to lye cloſe behind the Ramparts, and not to make a Shot till they were ſure of doing Execution; but when the Enemy had fired, the Garriſon gave them ſuch a Volley, as laid ſeveral of them dead upon the Spot, and diſheartned them from making any further Attempts upon it. But the Enemy were aſhamed to draw off after this Manner, and therefore reſolved to try their Fortune once more upon the Sloops: Accordingly they built a Kind of Fire-ſhip, or Machine of Wood, and ſetting it on fire, thruſt it out into the Tide; but the Wind veering about, carried it over to the oppoſite Shore, where it ſplit in Pieces. The *Indians* having now almoſt ſpent all their Ammunition, and deſpairing to take the Garriſon by Force, ſent a Flag of Truce to invite them to ſurrender upon honourable Terms: But the Captain defied them; telling them, He was under no Neceſſity to capitulate: Upon which they threatned to cut him as ſmall as Tobacco by the next Morning. But they had done their worſt; and having deſtroyed all the Cattle about the Town, *Anno* 1692

Anno 1692 they went up to the Sloops, and made one farewell Diſcharge upon them, by which they killed the only Man that was loſt on Board them, and then retired. The Enemy loſt a great many Men in this Aſſault, and among the reſt Monſ. *Labrocree* himſelf, who had about his Neck a Pouch with a Dozen Relicks, and a printed Paper of Indulgences, and ſeveral other Implements of that ſort. This memorable Action happened on the 10th and 11th of *June*.

THE *Indians* being enraged at the Loſs of ſo many of their Men, reſolved to take their Revenge upon poor *John Diamond* their Priſoner, whom they brought into the Plain, within Sight of the Garriſon, and after they had ſtript him, they ſcalped him alive; they caſtrated him; they ſlit him with Knives between his Fingers and Toes; they made cruel Gaſhes in the moſt fleſhy Parts of his Body, and ſticking lighted Firebrands in them, they tortured him to Death. But tho' the Soldiers in all the Garriſons behaved themſelves well, they could not protect the open Country from the Invaſions of the Enemy; ſo that all the Eaſtern Plantations were ruined and deſerted, it not being ſafe for them to Work in the Fields, when they were in danger every Hour of being ſurprized by the Excurſions of the Savages from the Woods.

THIS was the State of the War when the Governour Sir *William Phips* arrived at *New England* with the new Charter. He landed at *Boſton* on the 14th of *May*; and tho' ſome of the People were ſullen and out of Humour with the Abridgment of their Privileges, yet the Generality of them received him with loud Acclamations of Joy. The General Court of the Province appointed a Day of ſolemn Thankſgiving *for the ſafe Arrival of his Excellency the Governour, and the Reverend Mr.* Increaſe Mather; *who* (ſay they) *have*

have induſtriouſly endeavoured the Service of this People, and have brought over with them a Settlement of Government, in which their Majeſties have graciouſly given us diſtinguiſhing Marks of their Royal Favour and Goodneſs. Anno 1692.

AN Addreſs of Thanks was likewiſe ſent over to his Majeſty, and ſeveral private Letters to thoſe Miniſters of State, who had aſſiſted the Agents, in bringing this important Affair to ſo good an Iſſue.

THE Rev. Mr. *Increaſe Mather* had a further Honour done him upon this Occaſion; * for it being provided in the New Charter, that the General Aſſembly of the Province ſhould have Power to incorporate the College, and inveſt it with Powers of conferring the Degrees of Maſters of Arts and Doctors of Divinity on ſuch as ſhould merit them, the College had no ſooner received their Charter from the General Aſſembly, but they expreſſed their Acknowledgments to their Preſident Mr. *Mather*, by preſenting him with a *Diploma* of Doctor of Divinity, under the Seal of the College with the Hands of the *Fellows* annexed to it, bearing Date from *Cambridge* in *New-England*, the 17th of *November* 1692.

A few Days after Sir *William Phip*'s Arrival, he called a General Aſſembly of the Province of the *Maſſachuſets* Bay to meet at *Boſton* on 8th of *June* following, which he opened with a very gracious Speech, urging them to make themſelves happy by preparing a Body of good Laws as faſt as they could, which he would be always ready to paſs. *Gentlemen*, ſaid he, *You may make your ſelves as eaſy as you will for ever; Conſider what may have a Tendency to your Welfare, and you may*

* Mather, B. iv. *p* 134.

be

Anno 1692 *be ſure that whatever Bills you offer to me conſiſtent with the Honour and Intereſt of the Crown, I'll paſs them readily; I do but ſeek Opportunities to ſerve you, had it not been for the ſake of this Thing, I had never accepted of this Province, and whenever you have ſettled ſuch a body of Good Laws, that no Perſon coming after me may make you uneaſy, I ſhall deſire not one Day longer to continue in the Government.*

BUT for the Laws paſs'd in this, and the other General Aſſemblies I ſhall refer the Reader to the Abſtract of the Laws of *New-England* publiſhed in the Appendix.*

To return now to the War. When the Eaſtern *Indians* heard that Sir *William Phips* was appointed Governour of *New-England*, they were ſtruck with Aſtoniſhment at the Fortune of the Man; for they knew his Original, and had fiſhed and hunted many a weariſome Day with him in his Youth; they were ſenſible that he was capable of carrying on the War againſt them with greater Succeſs than his Predeceſſors, becauſe he was acquainted with the Country, and knew all their Haunts; but being buoyed up by the *French*, they made no Overtures of Peace.

THE *Indians* after the Action at *Wells* lay ſtill till the Month of *July*, when a Party of them fell upon ſome Husbandmen at Work in the Meadows on the North ſide of *Merrimack*-River, and ſlew them: Upon Advice of this Sir *William Phips* marched with an Army of 450 Men to *Pemmaquid*, and gave Orders by his Majeſty's Command for building one of the ſtrongeſt Forts that was ever ſeen in *America*. Captain *Wing* and Captain *Bancroft* laid the Foundation, and Captain *March* finiſhed it in a few Months. It was built of Stone in a

* *Appendix* Numb. IV.

quadran-

quadrangular Figure, being about 737 Foot in Compaſs without the outer Wall, and 108 Foot ſquare within the inner One; it had 28 Port-holes eight Foot from the Ground, and 14 Guns mounted, whereof ſix were 18 Pounders: The South Wall facing the Sea was 22 Foot high, and 6 broad; the round Tower at the Weſt End was 29 Foot high, the Eaſt Wall was 12 Foot high, the North 10, and the Weſt 18. The Fort ſtood about 20 Rod from High-Water Mark, and had a Garriſon of 60 Men for its Defence: It was called by the Name of *William Henry*; but the Charge of building and maintaining it, was ſuch a Tax upon the Country, and cauſed ſuch Murmurings among the People, as created Sir *William* a great many Enemies, and made him ſit uneaſy in his Government ever after; tho' it muſt be allowed to be the beſt Barrier the Province ever had, and being built in the Heart of the Enemy's Country, effectually broke all their Meaſures by preventing their clanning with one another, and ſo brought them in a little Time to beg a Peace. While this was doing Major *Church* marched with a Party of Men to *Penobſcot* and took five *Indians* Priſoners, after which he ravaged all the Country about *Taconet*, the *Indians* having deſerted it, and ſet their Fort on Fire. *Anno* 1692

THE next Spring Sir *William* ſent 350 Men to *Wells*, to reinforce Captain *Convers*, to whom he gave a Major's Commiſſion, and the Command in Chief of all the Eaſtern Garriſons, for his brave Defence of that Place the laſt Year. The Major being informed of a Party of the Enemy that lay lurking in the Woods, ſurprized them all, and put the chief of them to the Sword, by Way of Repriſal for a Family which they had murdered at *Oyſter River*; from hence he marched with his new Reinforce- *Anno* 1693

ment

Anno 1693 ment to *Pemmaquid*, and ſailing up *Sheepſcote*-River, ſcowred the Woods as far as *Taconet*; but not meeting with any of the *Indians* he returned to *Saco*, and laid the Foundation of a Fort there; which was afterwards finiſhed by Major *Hook* and Major *Hill*, and was of great Service to the Province. The *Indians* on the other hand plundered *Quaboag*, a ſmall Village in the Road to *Connecticut*, and carried off ſeveral Priſoners; but the neighbouring Towns upon the River, taking the Alarm, ſent out a flying Party of Horſe after them, who purſuing them by their Track to a great Swamp, diſmounted, and leaving their Horſes at the Entrance of the Swamp, ſurprized the ſecure Enemy, recovered the Priſoners, and put moſt of the *Indians* to the Sword,

BUT the low Circumſtances of the Affairs of the *Engliſh* and *Indians* at this Time made both Sides incline to a Peace. The *Engliſh* Government was weakened, by the Confuſions occaſioned by pretended Witchcrafts which were come to ſuch an Height that every one began to ſuſpect his Neighbour; the Taxes were heavy, having been much encreas'd of late, for building and maintaining their new Fort; and Trade was very much decayed, ſo that the Hearts of the People began to fail. The *Indians* on the other Hand, were not only deſerted by the *French*, who were not capable at this time of ſupplying them with Ammunition and Proviſions as formerly, but were very much ſtreightned, by the New Forts; and which was worſt of all, they were affraid of an Invaſion from the *Maquas*, a formidable Nation inhabiting the Regions towards the Weſt, who having learn'd the Uſe of Guns before their Neighbours, are ſaid to have deſtroy'd above 2 Millions of Natives inhabiting the Country between them and the River *Miſſiſippi*.

Miſſiſippi. The Reaſon of their Fear was because they found ſome of their *Squa's* on that ſide of the Country murdered upon a Whortleberry Plain. The *Indian* Segamores had a *French* Fryar among them at this time, who did whatever lay in his Power to perſuade them to continue the War, but the melancholy Situation of their Affairs forced them to make Propoſals of Peace, which after ſeveral Meetings of Commiſſioners on both Sides at Fort *Pemmaquid* was concluded on the following Conditions. Anno 1693

The Submiſſion and Agreement of the Eaſtern Indians *at Fort* William Henry *in* Pemmaquid, *the* 11*th Day of* Auguſt, *in the Fifth Year of the Reign of our Sovereign Lord and Lady* William *and* Mary, *by the Grace of God, of* England, Scotland, France *and* Ireland, *King and Queen, Defender of the Faith, &c.* 1693.

"WHEREAS a bloody War has for "ſome Years now paſt been made "and carried on by the *Indians* within the Eaſtern "Parts of the ſaid Province, againſt their Ma"jeſties Subjects the *Engliſh*, thro' the Inſtiga"tion and Influence of the *French*, and being "ſenſible of the Miſeries that we and our Peo"ple are reduced unto by adhering to their "ill Counſel; We whoſe Names are hereunto "ſubſcribed, being Segamores, and Chief Cap"tains of all the *Indians* belonging to the ſeveral "Rivers of *Penobſcot* and *Kennebeck*, *Amonoſcog*"*gin* and *Saco*, Parts of the ſaid Province of the "*Maſſachuſets* Bay, within their ſaid Majeſties "Sovereignty, having made Application to his

"Excel-

Anno 1693 " Excellency Sir *William Phips*, Captain Gene-
" ral and Governour in Chief, in and over the
" ſaid Province, that the War may be put to
" an End, do lay down our Arms, and caſt our-
" ſelves upon their ſaid Majeſty's Grace and Fa-
" vour. And each of us reſpectively for our-
" ſelves, and in the Name and with the free
" Conſent of all the *Indians* belonging unto the
" ſeveral Rivers aforeſaid, and of all other *In-*
" *dians* within the ſaid Province, of and from
" *Merrimack* River, unto the moſt Eaſterly Bounds
" of the ſaid Province, hereby acknowledging
" our hearty Subjection and Obedience unto
" the Crown of *England*; and do ſolemnly cove-
" nant, promiſe, and agree to and with the ſaid
" Sir *William Phips*, and his Succeſſors in the
" Place of Captain General, and Governour in
" Chief of the aforeſaid Province or Territory,
" on their ſaid Majeſty's Behalf in Manner fol-
" lowing. *viz.*

" THAT at all Time and Times for ever, from
" and after the Date of theſe Preſents, we will
" ceaſe and forbear all Acts of Hoſtility towards
" the Subjects of the Crown of *England*, and
" not offer the leaſt Hurt or Violence to them,
" or any of them, in their Perſons or Eſtate, but
" will henceforward hold and maintain a firm
" and conſtant Amity and Friendſhip with all
" the *Engliſh*.

" *Item*, WE abandon and forſake the *French*
" Intereſt; and will not in any wiſe adhere to,
" joyn with, aid or aſſiſt them in their Wars or
" Deſigns againſt the *Engliſh*; nor countenance,
" ſuccour, or conceal any of the *Enemy Indians*
" of *Canada*, or other Places, that ſhall happen
" to come to any of our Plantations within
" the *Engliſh* Territory, but ſecure them, if in
" our Power, and deliver them up to the *En-*
" *gliſh*.

" THAT

"THAT all *Engliſh* Captives in the Hands "or Power of any of the *Indians* within the "Limits aforeſaid, ſhall with all poſſible Speed "be ſet at Liberty, and returned home without "any Ranſom, or Payment to be made or given "for them, or any of them. *Anno* 1693

"THAT their Majeſty's Subjects the *Engliſh* "ſhall and may peaceably and quietly enter "upon, improve, and for ever enjoy all and ſin- "gular their Rights of Lands, and former Set- "tlements, and Poſſeſſions within the Eaſtern "Parts of the ſaid Province of the *Maſſachuſet- "Bay*, without any Pretenſions or Claims by us, "or any other *Indians*, and be in no wiſe mo- "leſted, interrupted, or diſturbed therein.

"THAT all Trade and Commerce which "hereafter may be allowed between the *Engliſh* "and *Indians*, ſhall be under ſuch Management "and Regulation, as may be ſtated by an Act "of the General Aſſembly, or as the Governor "of the ſaid Province for the Time being, with "the Advice and Conſent of the Council ſhall "ſee Cauſe to direct and limit.

"IF any Controverſy or Difference at any "Time hereafter happen to ariſe between any "of the *Engliſh* and *Indians* for any real or ſup- "poſed Wrong done on one Side, or the other, "no private Revenge ſhall be taken by the *In- "dians* for the ſame, but proper Application "ſhall be made to their Majeſty's Government "upon the Place for Remedy hereof in a due "Courſe of Juſtice; we hereby ſubmitting our- "ſelves to be ruled and governed by their Ma- "jeſty's Laws, and deſire to have the Benefit of "the ſame.

"FOR the more full Manifeſtation of our "Sincerity and Integrity in all that which we "have herein before covenanted and promiſed, "we do deliver unto Sir *William Phips*, their

"Ma-

Anno 1693 " Majeſty's Governor as aforeſaid, *Ahaſſombamett* Brother to *Edgeremett*, *Wenongahewitt* " Couſin to *Madockawando* and *Edgeremett*, and " *Bagatawawongon*, alſo *Sheepſcoat John*, to abide " and remain in the Cuſtody of the *Engliſh*, " where the Governor ſhall direct, as Hoſtages " or Pledges for our Fidelity, and true Perfor- " mance of all and every the foregoing Articles, " reſerving Liberty to exchange them in ſome " reaſonable Time for a like Number to the " Acceptance of the Governor and Council of " the ſaid Province, ſo as they be Perſons of as " good Account and Eſteem among the *Indians*, " as thoſe which are to be exchanged. In Te- " ſtimony whereof we have hereunto ſet our ſe- " veral Marks and Seals the Day and Year firſt " above written.

THE above-written Inſtrument was deliberately read over, and the ſeveral Articles and Clauſes thereof interpreted to the *Indians*, who ſaid, they well underſtood and conſented thereunto, and was then ſigned, ſealed, and delivered in the Preſence of us.

Edgeremett,
Madockawando,
Waſſambomet of *Navidgwock*,
Wenobſon of *Teconnet*, in Behalf of *Moxis*.
Keterramogis of *Narridgwock*,
Ahanquit of *Penobſcott*,
Bomaſeen,
Nitamemet,
Webenes,
Awanſomek,
Robin Doney,
Madaumbis,
Paquaharet, alias *Nathaniel*.

John Wing,
Nicolas Manning,
Benjamin Jackſon.

Interpreters.

John Hornybrook,
John Bagatawawongo, alias *Sheepſcoat-John*.
Phill Ounſakis, Squa.

CHAP.



CHAP. XII.

Of the ſuſpected Witchcrafts of New-England. *The Circumſtances of the* Afflicted. *Tryals of ſeveral of the* Accuſed (viz.) *of the Reverend Mr.* George Burroughs, *Clerk,* Bridget Biſhop, *and* Suſanna Martin, *the Number of the Condemned, and of thoſe that were Executed, with their Dying Behaviour. Several of the* Accuſed *make their Eſcape. Indirect Methods uſed to promote Accuſations. The Recantation of ſome of the Confeſſing Witches; and of the Jurors.*

NEW-ENGLAND was never in ſuch Diſtreſs ſince the firſt Settlement of the *Engliſh* in it, as when Sir *William Phips* entred on his Government; for the *French* and *Indians* were ravaging the Frontiers, while the Inhabitants were hanging one another for ſuſpected Witchcrafts and Sorceries. Strange were the Miſtakes that ſome

Anno 1692

Anno 1692 ſome of the wiſeſt and beſt Men in the Country committed on this Occaſion, which muſt have been fatal to the whole Province, if God by his Providence had not mercifully interpoſed; but this Affair having been variouſly reported to the World, as well as debated with ſome Warmth among themſelves: I ſhall content myſelf only with relating the ſeveral Facts, as I find them atteſted by good Witneſſes, without entring very far into the Merits of the Cauſe.

THE Diſtemper began the latter End of the Year 1691, in the Family of the Reverend Mr. *Paris*, Miniſter of *Salem*, whoſe Daughter and Neice of about nine and eleven Years of Age began on a ſudden to play ſome odd Pranks, which neither themſelves nor others could account for, ſuch as getting into Holes, creeping under Chairs and Stools, *&c.* After ſome Time they fell into Convulſion-Fits, and complained of being bitten and pinched by inviſible Agents; ſometimes they were ſtruck dumb, their Mouths and all their Limbs being diſtorted, in a Manner that moved Compaſſion in all that ſaw them; a Conſultation of Phyſicians being called in to give their Judgments upon this extraordinary Caſe, ſome were of Opinion, that they were under an *evil Tongue*, which preſently ſpread all over the Town. Mr. *Paris* himſelf being of this Mind, kept ſeveral Days of Faſting and Prayer on his Family's Account; and 'twas obſerved, that during the Time of Prayer the *Afflicted* were very quiet, but in the Intervals of Duty they would fall into Fits, and act and ſpeak very ridiculouſly: Mr. *Paris* had ſome Suſpicion of an *Indian* Man and his Wife that lived in his Houſe, who, after ſome Severities had been uſed upon them, confeſſed thus much, *That being concerned at the Childrens Diſorder, and deſirous to know the Cauſes of it, they had, according to an Old Cuſtom,*

taken

taken ſome of the afflicted Perſon's Urine, and mixing it with Rye-Meal, had made a Cake, and baked it, to find out the Witch: Immediately after this, the Children cryed out of the *Indian* Woman's pinching, pricking, and tormenting them in an inviſible Manner; they pretended to ſee her when no-body elſe could, nay, to tell what ſhe was doing when out of Sight: The Children complained likewiſe of two other Women in the Town, *Sarah Good* a melancholy Perſon, and one *Osburn* who was bed-rid; theſe, with *Tituba* the *Indian* Woman, were examined by the Magiſtrate, and committed; *Tituba* being frightned out of her Wits confeſſed every thing her Maſter would have her, as, that ſhe was a Witch, and that in Conjunction with two or three others, whom the *Afflicted* had accuſed, ſhe had tormented the Complainers. *Tituba* lay in Priſon 'till the Storm was over, and was then ſold for the Payment of her Fees; but upon her Enlargement ſhe declared, *That her Maſter had beat her, and other Ways abuſed her, to make her confeſs and accuſe (ſuch as he called) her Siſter-Witches, and that whatſoever ſhe had ſaid by Way of confeſſing, or accuſing others was the effect of ſuch Uſage.* But *Tituba* had no ſooner confeſſed herſelf a Witch, but ſhe was afflicted herſelf, and complained of her Fellow-Witches tormenting her for her Confeſſion; ſeveral others likewiſe in the Town were taken with Fits at the ſame Time, and complained of *Tituba*, and her Confederates tormenting them. From theſe ſmall Beginnings the Diſtemper ſpread like a peſtilential Sickneſs thro' ſeveral Parts of the Province, 'till the Priſons were hardly capable to contain the Number of the *Accuſed*. Anno 1692

Anno 1692

'TIS a ſurprizing Account, that Dr. *Mather* gives of the Circumſtances of theſe afflicted Perſons; he ſays, * "That their Limbs were horribly diſtorted and convulſed, that they were "pinched black and blue, that Pins were inviſibly run into their Fleſh, and that they were "ſcalded 'till they had Bliſters raiſed in them. "One of them (ſays he) was aſſaulted by a "Spectre with a Spindle in its Hand, which "no-body elſe in the Room could ſee, 'till the "*Afflicted* in one of her Agonies ſnatched it out "of the Spectre's Hand, and then all the Com-"pany ſaw it. Another was haunted by a "Spectre in an inviſible Sheet; but the *Afflicted* "in one of her Fits, tearing a Piece of it away, "it became viſible; ſometimes Poiſon has been "forced on the *Afflicted* by an inviſible Hand, "which when they have drank they have pre-"ſently ſwollen, and afterwards been relieved "by the Medicines uſually given in ſuch Caſes; "ſometimes they have complained of burning "Rags forced into their Mouths, which no-"body elſe could ſee, yet the Burns have re-"mained on their Mouths afterwards; ſome-"times they have complained of Irons heating "in the Fire to brand them, the Marks of "which they have carried to their Graves; the "Spectres (ſays he) uſually perſonated ſome "Perſons whom the *Afflicted* knew, and "(which is very ſtrange, if true) when they "wounded the Spectre, the Perſon whom the "Spectre repreſented was wounded too: For "Example, one of the afflicted ſaid, that the "Spectre that tormented her was *D*—— *H*——, "and pointing to a certain Place in the Room, "ſhe cried out, there is *D*—— *H*——, upon

* Mather, *Book II, page 60.*

"which

" which a Man with his Rapier ſtruck at the Place, and the *Afflicted* told him, that he had given her a ſmall Prick about the Eye; ſoon after which *D*—— *H*—— being apprehended, confeſſed herſelf a Witch, and that in troubling the Girl that had impeached her ſhe had received two Wounds, one about the Eye, which ſhe ſhewed the Magiſtrates, and another in the Side. If the *Accuſed* caſt their Eye on the *Afflicted*, the *Afflicted*, tho' their Faces were turned another Way would fall into a Swoon, and continue in it 'till the Hands of the *Accuſed* came to touch them; and it was often found, that the Fleſh of the *Afflicted* was bitten, ſo that the Print of Teeth was very viſible, and there would appear juſt ſuch a Set of Teeth as was in the *Accuſed*, even ſuch as might be clearly diſtinguiſh'd from other People's: In a Word, the afflicted (as the *Doctor* obſerves) in a few Days Time arrived to ſuch a refining Alteration upon their Eyes, that they could ſee their Tormentors; they ſaw a Devil of a little Stature, and of a tawny Colour, attended with Spectres that appeared in more humane Circumſtances; theſe Tormentors uſed to tender the afflicted a Book, requiring them to ſign, or touch it at leaſt, in Token of their conſenting to be liſted in the Devil's Service, which, if they refuſed, the Spectres under the Command of the *Black Man*, tortured them with prodigious Moleſtations." *Anno* 1692.

But Mr. *Calef* of *Boſton* in his Book, entitled, * *More Wonders of the inviſible World*, has endeavour'd to invalidate the *Doctor*'s Account of Things; he declares, that the Story of the *Sheet*

* *Part* v. *p.* 108.

Anno 1692 was a known Forgery, it having been provided by the *Afflicted Perſon* the Day before; and he does not doubt, but the *Spindle* was ſo too. He adds, that the Print of the *Set of Teeth* was nothing but the *Afflicted*'s biting themſelves; and that ſometimes inſtead of finding a *Set of Teeth*, the *Accuſed* have not had a Tooth in their Heads; * And to ſhew yet farther the Wickedneſs of theſe *afflicted Perſons*, he mentions an Accident at the Trial of *Sarah Good*, which, if true, ought alone to have invalidated their Evidence for the future; the Story is this, While *Sarah Good* was upon her Trial, one of the afflicted fell into a Fit, and cried out, that the Priſoner's Spectre was ſtabing her with a Knife, but had broke it in her Body; and to confirm the Truth of her Relation, ſhe pluck'd a Piece of the Blade out of her Breaſt, and ſhewed it in Court; but there was a young Man preſent, who ſeeing the Blade, had the Honeſty and Courage to claim it for his, and to declare before the Judges, that he broke his Knife but the Day before, and threw away that Part of the Blade in the Preſence of the *Afflicted Perſon*, but that he had the Handle with the other Part of the Blade in his Pocket, which he deliver'd into Court, and upon comparing them together they were found to be Parts of the ſame Knife; upon which the Judge only reprimanded her, and bid her tell no more Lies. †

'Tis certain, that theſe ſuſpected *Wizzards* and *Witches* were convicted on very ſlender Evidence; for the Court allow'd the Witneſſes to tell Stories of 20 or 30 Years ſtanding, about over-ſetting of Carts, the Death of Cattle, Unkindneſs to Relations, or unexpected Accidents

* Mr. Caleſ, *Part* V. *p.* 154. † *Ibid.* p. 101, 102.

be-

befalling after ſome Quarrel, all that was alleged againſt them to the *Purpoſe* being either from the diſtemper'd Perſons themſelves, or from thoſe, who had been frighted into a Confeſſion of their being Witches, by the Threatnings of the Magiſtrates, or encourag'd to it with Hopes of Mercy. *Anno* 1692

BUT that the Reader may judge for himſelf, I'll ſet before him two or three of the Trials of theſe unhappy Perſons, out of Dr. *Cotton Mather's Wonders of the inviſible World*, publiſhed by Command of his Excellency Sir *William Phips*, with the Recommendation and Thanks of Lieut. Gov. *Stoughton*, and the Approbation of the Judges and Miniſters, with ſome few Abbreviations.

Eſſex ſſ. *The Indictment of* George Burroughs, *Clerk.*

Anno Regni Regis & Reginæ Wilhelmi & Mariæ, *nunc* Angliæ, *&c. quarto.*

The Jurors for our Sovereign Lord and Lady the King and Queen, preſent,

'THAT George Burroughs, *late of* Falmouth, *in the Province of the* Maſſachuſet-Bay *in* New-England, *Clerk, the 9th Day of* May, *in the fourth Year of the Reign of our Sovereign Lord and Lady* William *and* Mary, *by the Grace of GOD, of* England, Scotland, France, *and* Ireland, *King and Queen, Defenders of the Faith,* &c. *and divers other Days and Times, as well before as after, certain deteſtable Arts called Witchcrafts, and Sorceries, wickedly and feloniouſly hath uſed, practiſed, and exerciſed at, and within the Townſhip of* Salem, *in the County of* Eſſex *aforeſaid, in, upon, and againſt one* Mary Wolcott, *of* Salem *Village in the County of* Eſſex, *ſingle Woman, by which ſaid wicked Arts*

Anno 1692 *the ſaid* Mary Wolcott, *the ninth of* May *in the fourth Year aboveſaid, and divers other Days and Times, as well before as after, was, and is tortured, afflicted, pined, conſumed, waſted and tormented, againſt the Peace of our Sovereign Lord and Lady the King and Queen, and againſt the Form of the Statute in that Caſe made and provided.*

Endorſed by the Grand-Jury.

Witneſſes. *Billa Vera.*

Mary Wolcott,
Sarah Vibber,
Mercy Lewis,
Anne Putnam,
Elizabeth Hubbard.

THERE was alſo a Second Indictment for afflicting *Elizabeth Hubbard.*

A Third Indictment for afflicting *Mercy Lewis,*

AND a Fourth for afflicting *Anne Putnam.*

THE Witneſſes the ſame as above, only *Mary Warren* was added to the laſt.

THE Judges at this and the other Trials were Lieutenant Governour *Stoughton,* Major *Saltonſtall,* Major *Richards,* Major *Gidny,* Mr. *Wait Winthrop,* Capt. *Sewall,* and Mr. *Serjeant,* or a *Quorum* of them.

Mr. *Burroughs* was brought upon his Trial *Auguſt* 5, 1692, and to ſupport the Charge there appeared the five or ſix diſtempered Perſons mention'd in the Indictment, and about eight *Confeſſing Witches,* who ſwore, that he was a Head-Actor at ſome of their Helliſh Rendezvous, and had the Promiſe of being a King in Satan's Kingdom now going to be erected. He was accuſed by nine Perſons, for Feats of extraordinary Strength, which could not be done without a Diabolical Aſſiſtance.

THE

THE *Bewitched Perſons* unanimouſly charg'd the Spectre of the Priſoner to have a Share in their Torments; one of them ſaid, that in her Agonies a little black-hair'd Man came to her ſaying, his Name was *B*——, and bid her ſet her Hand to a Book which he ſhewed her, bragging, that he was a Conjurer above the ordinary Rank of Witches; that he often perſecuted her with the Offer of that Book, ſaying, ſhe ſhould be well, and fear no-body, if ſhe would but ſign it, and that he inflicted cruel Pains and Hurts upon her, becauſe of her denying ſo to do. Anno 1692.

OTHERS of them teſtify'd, that in their Torments the Priſoner tempted them to go to a Sacrament, to which they perceived him with the Sound of a Trumpet ſummoning other Witches, who quickly after the Sound came from all Quarters to the Rendezvous; one of them falling into a kind of Trance, afterwards affirm'd, that the Priſoner had carried her unto the Top of a very high Mountain, where he ſhew'd her Mighty and Glorious Kingdoms, and ſaid, he would give them all to her, if ſhe would write in his Book, but ſhe refuſed.

SEVERAL of the *Bewitched* declared, that they had been troubled with the Apparitions of two Women, who ſaid, they had been the Priſoner's Wives, and that he had been the Death of them, and that the Magiſtrates muſt be told of it, and if he denied it upon his Trial they did not know but they ſhould appear in Court. Now while he was upon his Trial one of the *bewitched Perſons* was caſt into an Horror at the Ghoſts of the Priſoner's two Wives then appearing before him, and crying for Vengeance againſt him; hereupon ſeveral of the *bewitched* were ſucceſſively called in, who all not knowing what the former had ſeen and ſaid, concurred in

Anno 1692 the Horror of the Apparition, which they affirmed the Priſoner had before his Eyes; but he utterly denied that he diſcerned any Thing of it.

IT coſt the Court a great deal of Trouble to hear the Teſtimonies of the *Afflicted*, for when they were going to give in their Evidence they would be taken with Fits which hinder'd their ſpeaking a conſiderable Time; the Chief Judge asked the Priſoner, Who he thought hindred theſe Witneſſes from giving in their Teſtimonies? And he anſwer'd, he ſuppoſed it was the Devil. The Judge replied, How comes the Devil ſo loth to have any Teſtimony born againſt you? Which caſt him into a very great Confuſion.

THE *Confeſſing-Witches* teſtified, that the Priſoner had been at Witch-Meetings with them, and had ſeduced and compelled them to the Snares of Witchcraft, that he promiſed them fine Cloaths for doing it, that he brought Poppets to them, and Thorns to ſtick into thoſe Poppets for the afflicting other People, and that he exhorted them to bewitch all *Salem*-Village, but to do it gradually.

BUT beſides the Teſtimonies of the *Afflicted*, ſeveral Perſons of Credit and Honour appeared in Court, and witneſſed, that tho' the Priſoner was but a puny Man, yet he had done Things beyond the Strength of a Giant; that he made nothing of taking up a Gun of about ſeven Foot Barrel behind the Lock with one Hand, and holding it out at Arms-end. The Priſoner in his Vindication ſaid, that there was an *Indian* in the Company that did the ſame Thing, but the Court ſuppoſed the *Black Man* might be the Perſon that gave him that Aſſiſtance. There were two Witneſſes that ſwore, that with only putting the Fore-Finger of his Right-Hand into the Muzzel of a Fowling-Piece of about ſix or ſeven Foot Barrel, he lifted it up, and held it

out

out at Arms-end. Another teſtified, that he made nothing of taking up whole Barrels filled with Melaſſes or Cyder, in very diſadvantageous Poſtures, and carrying them through the difficulteſt Places out of a Canoe to the Shore. Anno 1692

OTHERS teſtified, that he had been a cruel Husband to his Wives, that he uſed all Means to make them write, ſign, ſeal, and ſwear a Covenant never to reveal any of his Secrets; and that his Wives had often complain'd to their Neighbourhood, of their Houſe being troubled with evil Spirits.

MR. *Ruck* Brother-in-Law to the Priſoner teſtify'd, that Mr. *Burroughs* and his Wife going out with him two or three Miles to gather Strawberries; he with *Burroughs*'s Wife rid home ſoftly to keep Company with the Priſoner who was on Foot; but the Priſoner ſtepp'd aſide a little into the Buſhes, whereupon they halted, and hallowed for him, but he not making them any Anſwer they went homewards with a quickned Pace, not expecting to ſee him in a conſiderable Time, but when they were near home, to their Aſtoniſhment they found him on Foot with them with a Basket of Strawberries; the Priſoner immediately chid his Wife for what ſhe had ſaid of him to her Brother on the Road, which when they wondred at, he ſaid, he knew their Thoughts; *Ruck* replied, that was more than the Devil himſelf knew, but the Priſoner anſwered, *My GOD makes known your Thoughts to me:* The Priſoner making no Reply to this worth conſidering, Dr. *Mather* ſays, the Court were of Opinion, *That he then ſtepp'd aſide only that by the Aſſiſtance of the Black Man he might put on his Inviſibility, and in that faſcinating Miſt gratify his own jealous Humour to hear what they ſaid of him.*

THE

Anno 1692. THE Priſoner, it ſeems, made but a weak Defence full of Contradictions and Falſhoods, reflecting on the Reputation of ſome of the Witneſſes; he alſo delivered in a Paper to the Jury, wherein he endeavoured to prove, *That there neither are, nor ever were Witches, that having made a Compact with the Devil can ſend a Devil to torment other People at a Diſtance*; but notwithſtanding this, or any Thing elſe he could ſay for himſelf, the Jury brought him in guilty; when Sentence of Death was paſs'd on him, he denyed again what the Witneſſes had all ſwore againſt him, but added, that he did not ſo much blame the Judges and Jury for condemning him, as the falſe Witneſſes that brought him to his Death.

BRIDGET BISHOP, alias *OLIVER*, Wife of *Edward Biſhop* of *Salem*, Sawyer, was tryed upon 5 ſeveral Indictments, *June* 2, 1692, for uſing certain deteſtable Arts called Witchcraft, in, upon, and againſt *Mercy Lewis*, *Abigail Williams*, *Mary Wolcott*, *Elizabeth Hubbard*, and *Anne Putnam*; to all which ſhe pleaded, Not guilty.

THE Witneſſes produced to ſupport the Charge were, *Firſt*, the *Bewitched* Perſons themſelves, who teſtified, that the Shape of the Priſoner did oftentimes pinch them, choak them, bite, and afflict them, urging them to write their Name in a Book which the Spectre called *Ours*. That when the Priſoner was firſt examin'd, in Order to her Commitment, they (*viz.*) the *Afflicted* were ſtruck down into a Fit, and could not recover 'till ſhe came and touched them, and ſeveral of them fell into Fits while ſhe was now at the Bar.

Secondly, *Deliverance Hobbs*, who had confeſſed herſelf a Witch, teſtify'd, that the Priſoner tempted her to ſign the Book again, and to deny what ſhe had confeſſed, and that the Shape of the Priſoner whipp'd her with Iron Rods to

force

force her to it, and that the Priſoner was at a General Meeting of Witches in a Field near *Salem*-Village, and there partook of the Sacrament with them. *Anno* 1692

Thirdly, *John Cook* teſtify'd, that about five or ſix Years ago he was aſſaulted with the Shape of the Priſoner in his Chamber, and ſo terrify'd, that an Apple that he had in his Hand flew ſtrangely from him into his Mother's Lap ſix or eight Foot Diſtance.

Fourthly, *Samuel Gray* teſtify'd, that about fourteen Years ago he waked one Night, and ſaw his Room full of Light, and a Woman between the Cradle and Bed-ſide, he got up but found the Doors faſt, and the Apparition vaniſh'd, however the Child in the Cradle was ſo frighted that it pined away, and in ſome Time dyed. He confeſſed he had never ſeen the Priſoner before, but was now ſatisfy'd that it was her Apparition.

Fifthly, *John Bly* and his Wife teſtify'd, that he bought a Sow of the Priſoner's Husband, but being to pay the Money to another, ſhe was ſo angry that ſhe quarrelled with *Bly*, and ſoon after the Sow was taken with ſtrange Fits, jumping, leaping, and knocking her Head againſt the Fence, which made the Witneſs conclude, that the Priſoner had bewitched it.

Sixthly, *Richard Coman* teſtify'd, that eight Years ago he was terrify'd with the Spectre of the Priſoner and others, who ſo oppreſs'd him in his Bed that he could not ſtir Hand nor Foot, but calling up ſome-body to come to his Aſſiſtance, as ſoon as the People of the Houſe ſpoke, the Spectre vaniſhed, and all was quiet.

Seventhly, *Samuel Shattock* teſtify'd, that in the Year 1680, the Priſoner often came to his Houſe on frivolous Errands; ſoon after which his Child was taken with ſtrange Fits, and at laſt loſt his Underſtanding, the Fits were manifeſtly Epileptick,

Anno 1692 tick, but the Witneſs verily believed it was bewitched by the Priſoner.

Eighthly, *John Louder* teſtify'd, that upon ſome little Controverſy with the Priſoner about her Fowls, going well to Bed, he awoke in the Night, and ſaw the Likeneſs of this Woman grievouſly oppreſſing him. Another Time he was troubled with a black Pig, but going to kick it, it vaniſhed. Another Time as he was ſitting in his Room, a black Hobgobling jumped into the Room, which ſpake to him theſe Words, *I underſtand you are troubled in Mind, be ruled by me, and you ſhall want nothing in this World.* But when he endeavoured to ſtrike it there was nothing; upon this he ran out of his Houſe, and ſaw the Priſoner in her Orchard, but had not Power to ſpeak to her, but concluded his Trouble was all owing to her.

Ninthly, *William Stacy* teſtify'd, that the Spectre of the Priſoner had play'd him ſeveral Pranks of the ſame Nature with the former; for Example, having receiv'd ſome Money of the Priſoner for Work, he had not gone above three Rods from her, but it was gone from him; ſome Time after, diſcourſing with the Priſoner about grinding her Griſt, he had not gone above ſix Rods from her with a ſmall Load in his Cart, but the Off-Wheel ſunk into a Hole on plain Ground, that the Deponent was forc'd to get Help for the Recovery of it, but ſtepping back to look for the Hole, there was none to be found. Another Time, as he was going home in a dark Night he was lifted up from the Ground, and thrown againſt a Stone-Wall, and after that, he was hoiſted up, and thrown down a Bank at the End of his Houſe.

Laſtly, *John* and *William Bly* teſtify'd, that being employed by the Priſoner to take down her Cellar-Wall, they found ſeveral Poppets made

made of Rags and Hogg's Briſtles with headleſs Pins in them, the Points being outwards. Beſides all this, a Jury of Women was empannelled to ſearch her, who found a preternatural *Teat* upon her Body, but upon a ſecond Search three or four Hours after, there was none to be found. Anno 1692

UPON this Evidence, the Priſoner, notwithſtanding any thing ſhe could ſay in her own Defence, was convicted, and executed.

SUSANNA MARTIN indicted *June* 29, 1692, of the like Crimes of Witchcraft and Sorcery on the Bodies of *Mercy Lewis*, *Anne Putnam*, &c. to which ſhe pleaded, Not guilty. At her Commitment ſhe was asked by the Juſtice,

Magiſtrate. Pray what ails theſe People?

Martin. I don't know.

Magiſt. But what do you think ails them?

Martin. I don't deſire to ſpend my Judgment upon it.

Magiſt. Don't you think they are bewitched?

Martin. No. I don't think they are.

Magiſt. Tell us your Thoughts about them then?

Martin. No. My Thoughts are my own when they are in, but when they are out they are another's. Their Maſter ———

Magiſt. Their Maſter; who do you think is their Maſter?

Martin. If they deal in the Black Art, you may know as well as I.

Magiſt. Well, what have you done towards this?

Martin. Nothing at all.

Magiſt. Why, 'tis your Appearance?

Martin. I can't help it.

Magiſt. Is it not your Maſter? How comes your Appearance to hurt them?

Martin.

Anno 1692

Martin. How do I know? He that appeared in the Shape of *Samuel*, may appear in any one's Shape.

BUT the *Afflicted* falling into their Fits when ſhe did but look upon them, ſhe was asked the Reaſon of it, and anſwered, *ſhe could not tell, it may be the Devil bore her more Malice than another.* So ſhe was committed, and being brought to her Trial, the following Witneſſes appeared to ſupport the Charge of Witchcraft againſt her, beſides the Accuſations of the *Afflicted.*

John Allen of *Salisbury* teſtified, That he refuſing to cart ſome Staves at the Requeſt of the Priſoner, becauſe of the Weakneſs of his Oxen, ſhe was angry, and told him it had been as good he had, for his Oxen ſhould not do him much more Service: He replied, *Do you threaten me, you old Witch? I will throw you into the Brook.* Upon which ſhe run away; but his Oxen ſoon after run wild, and being purſued, ran into the Sea, and were all drowned except one, near the Mouth of *Merrimack* River.

Bernard Peache teſtified, That as he lay in his Bed one Night the Priſoner jumped in at Window, took hold of his Feet, and drawing his Body into a Heap, lay upon him for two Hours, ſo that he could neither ſpeak nor ſtir; but at laſt he caught hold of her Hands, and bit three of her Fingers to the Bone, whereupon ſhe went down Stairs, and out of Doors; but the People of the Houſe ſaw nothing, only there was a couple of Footſteps on the Outſide of the Door.

John Kembal teſtified, That upon a ſmall Diſguſt, the Priſoner had told him his Cow ſhould not do him any more Good, and it died next Morning: And another Time refuſing to buy one of the Priſoner's *Puppeys*, he was ſoon after frighted with a black Dog as he was coming out

of

of the Woods, which flew upon him, and as he thought would have tore out his Throat, but naming the Name of *Chriſt* it vaniſhed away; which he judged to be a Piece of the Priſoner's *Black Art* to revenge herſelf on him for not buying her Puppy. Anno 1692

Sarah Atkinſon teſtify'd, that the Priſoner came from *Amesbury* on Foot to her Houſe at *Newbury* in an extraordinary Seaſon, when it was not fit for any one to travel, and yet the Soles of her Shoes were hardly wet, *Atkinſon* was amazed, and ſaid, ſhe ſhould have been wet up to the Knees, if ſhe had come ſo far, but the Priſoner replied, ſhe ſcorned to be drabled. Dr. *Mather* ſays, it was obſerved this Evidence put her into ſingular Confuſion.

John Preſſy teſtify'd, that being one Night bewildered near a Field of the Priſoner's, he ſaw a marvellous Light about the Bigneſs of a half Buſhel about two Roods out of the Way. He ſtruck at it with all his Might, and felt it a palpable Subſtance, but going from it his Heels flew up, and he thought he had been falling into a Pit, but afterwards upon Search there was really no Pit in the Place, having after his Recovery gone five or ſix Roods further he ſaw the Priſoner on his Left-Hand, but exchanged no Words with her: He was ſo frighted with all this, that he could ſcarce find his Way home, but he heard next Day that the Priſoner was ſadly hurt. He ſaid further, that having given in ſome Evidence againſt the Priſoner ſome Years ago, ſhe had told him, he would never proſper, nor never have above two Cows, which accordingly came to paſs, for he never could get more in twenty Years.

THE chief Defence the Priſoner made for herſelf was, that ſhe knew nothing of all theſe Things, but had led a virtuous and holy Life;

Dr.

Anno 1692 Dr. *Mather* ſays, ſhe was one of the moſt impudent, ſcurrilous, and wicked Creatures in the World; which Mr. *Calef* denies, * The Jury however brought her in Guilty.

I can't forbear making one Remark upon theſe, as well as upon all the Trials that Dr. *Cotton Mather* has publiſhed to the World on this Occaſion; that when he has given us the Depoſitions of the Witneſſes againſt the Priſoners at large, he paſſes over their Defence in ſuch general Words as theſe, *They ſaid nothing worth conſidering; their Diſcourſe was full of Tergiverſations and Contradictions; they were confounded, and their Countenances fell*, &c. whereby his Reader is left in the dark, and rendred uncapable of judging of the Merits of the Cauſe; if the Defence of the Priſoners was ſo weak and confuſed as the Doctor repreſents, it had been for the Advantage of the Court to have expoſed it at large to the World; but if not, 'tis very hard that it ſhould be ſmother'd.

BUT upon ſuch Evidence as this, 28 Perſons receiv'd Sentence of Death, of which 19 were executed, and one (namely) *Giles Cory* was preſs'd to Death; the Names of them that were executed were, *Bridget Biſhop*, executed *June* the 10th. *Sarah Good*, and *Rebecca Nurſe* of *Salem* Village, *Suſannah Martin* of *Amesbury*, *Elizabeth How* of *Ipſwich*, *Sarah Wildes* of *Topſhields*, executed the 19th of *July*.

THE Reverend Mr. *George Burroughs*, *John Procter*, *John Willard* of *Salem* Village, *George Jacobs* Sen. of *Salem*, *Martha Carryer* of *Andover*, executed the 19th of *Auguſt*.

Martha Cory, *Mary Eaſty*, *Alice Parker*, *Anne Pudeater*, *Margaret Scott*, *Wilmet Redd*, *Samuel Wardwell*, and *Mary Parker*, executed the 22d of *September*.

* Calef, p. 139.

THEIR

THEIR Characters, and dying Behaviour was as follows. *Anno* 1692

Bridget Biſhop, alias *Oliver*, had long undergone the Repute of a Witch, occaſion'd by the Accuſations of one *Samuel Gray*, who about 20 Years before had charged her with ſuch Crimes; but tho' *Gray* upon his Death-Bed teſtify'd his Sorrow and Repentance for ſuch Accuſations as being wholly groundleſs, yet the Report never wore off, and being now accuſed afreſh, and upon Search, a Teat, being found upon her, as ſome ſay, tho' others it ſeems a few Hours after could ſee nothing of it; ſhe received Sentence of Death, but went out of the World without the leaſt Confeſſion of any thing relating to Witchcraft.

Sarah Good had been accounted a melancholy diſtemper'd Woman for a long Time. At her Execution Mr. *Noyes* urged her to confeſs, telling her ſhe was a Witch, and ſhe knew ſhe was ſo; to which ſhe replied, You are a Liar, I am no more a Witch than you are a Wizzard, and if you take away my Life, God will give you Blood to drink.

* *Rebecca Nurſe* vehemently aſſerted her Innocence both when ſhe was apprehended, and brought upon her Trial; and the Jury were ſo diſſatisfy'd with the Evidence produced againſt her, that they brought her in, *Not Guilty*; whereupon all the *Accuſers* in Court, and a little after all the *Afflicted* out of Court made a hideous Outcry to the Amazement of all the Spectators; the Court alſo was ſtrangely ſurprized; the Chief Judge ſaid, he would not impoſe upon the Jury, but intimated, as if they had

* Caleſ, &c. p. 102, 103.

Anno 1692 not well conſider'd one Expreſſion of the Priſoner's, namely, that when one *Hobbs* a confeſſing Witch was brought in as Evidence againſt her, ſhe turned her Head about, and ſaid, *What do you bring her, ſhe is one of us.* This, together with the Clamours of the *Accuſed*, induced the Jury to go out again; but not agreeing upon their Verdict, they came into Court, and deſired the Priſoner at the Bar to explain that Expreſſion; but the poor old Woman being hard of hearing, and in a very great Fright, ſaid nothing; upon which they immediately brought her in Guilty. But when ſhe was inform'd what Uſe was made of her Silence, ſhe put in the following Declaration into Court.

THESE Preſents do humbly ſhew to the Honoured Court and Jury, that I being informed, that the Jury brought me in Guilty, *upon my ſaying, that Good-Wife* Hobbs *and her Daughter were of our Company; but I intended no otherwiſe, than as they were Priſoners with us, and therefore did then, and yet do judge them not legal Evidence againſt their Fellow-Priſoners; and I being ſomething hard of hearing, and full of Grief, none informing me how the Court took up my Words, and therefore had not an Opportunity to declare what I intended when I ſaid they were of our Company.*

Rebecka Nurſe.

BUT it was now too late, the Governour indeed was ſo moved with her Caſe, that he granted her a Reprieve, but ſuch were the diſmal Clamours of the *Accuſers*, that he was forced to recall it; ſo ſhe was firſt execommunicated, and then executed with the reſt. She was a pious Woman, a Member of the Church of *Salem*, and had innumerable Teſtimonials of

her Chriſtian Behaviour thro' the whole Courſe of her Life under the Hands of moſt credible Perſons; her Behaviour in her Family was very exemplary, her Care in the Education of her Children, and ſetting them good Examples very extraordinary, and at her Execution ſhe behav'd herſelf with all the Gravity and Seriouſneſs of a Chriſtian. Anno 1692.

IT was at her Trial that one of the Accuſers cried out publickly of the Reverend Mr. *Willard*, Miniſter in *Boſton*, as afflicting her, but ſhe was ſent out of Court, and it was told about, that ſhe was miſtaken in the Perſon.

THE Reverend Mr. *Burroughs* had been formerly Miniſter at *Salem*, but ſome Differencs ariſing between him and his People, he left them and retired to *Falmouth*, which perhaps might be one Reaſon of his being fix'd upon by theſe *Salemites* for a Wizzard; Dr. *Mather* ſays he was a puny Man, but Mr. *Calef* * ſays, that his Contemporaries at School during his Minority could have teſtified, that his Strength was then as much ſuperior to theirs, as ever it was diſcovered to be ſince. Upon the Day of Execution, he was carried with the others in a Cart thro' the Streets of *Salem* to the Gallows; when he was on the Ladder † he made a Speech for the clearing of his Innocency, with ſuch ſolemn and ſerious Expreſſions as were to the Admiration of all preſent; his Prayer (which he concluded by repeating the Lord's Prayer) was ſo well expreſs'd, and utter'd with ſuch Compoſure and Fervency of Spirit, as drew Tears from the Spectators, inſomuch that ſome were afraid they would hinder the Execution; but the Ac-

* Calef *in the* Pref. † *Ibid.* p. 103, 104.

Anno 1692 cuſers ſaid, the *Black Man* ſtood by and dictated to him; when he was cut down, he was dragged by the Halter to a Hole or Grave between the Rocks about two Foot deep, his Shirt and Breeches being pulled off, and an old Pair of Trouſers put on in their Room; he was tumbl'd in with *Willard* and *Carryer*, one of his Hands and his Chin, and a Foot of another of them being left uncovered.

WHEN *John Procter* and his Wife were carried to Priſon, the Sheriff ſeized all their Houſhold-Goods, * Proviſions, and Cattle, which he ſold, and put the Money in his Pocket; he threw away the Beer out of a Barrel, and carried away the Barrel, emptied a Pot of Broth, and took away the Pot, and left nothing in the Houſe for the Support of the Children. *Procter* begg'd hard for a Reprieve, as appears by the moving Letter he writ to the Miniſters of *Boſton*, which the Reader will ſee by and by, but it was not granted. At his Execution, he earneſtly requeſted Mr. *Noyes* to pray with, and for him, but it was denied, becauſe he would not confeſs himſelf a Witch. His Wife was condemn'd with him, but eſcaped by pleading her Belly.

John Willard had been employed as a Meſſenger † to fetch in, ſeveral that were accuſed, but being unwilling at laſt to apprehend ſome that he had better Thoughts of, he declined the Service, and preſently after, was himſelf accuſed of the ſame Crime, and that with ſuch Vehemency, that they ſent after him as far as *Naſhaway* 40 Miles from *Salem*, where they overtook him as he was making his Eſcape out of the Country, 'tis ſaid, the *Accuſers* told the exact Time when

* *Ibid.* p. 104, 105. † *Ibid.* p. 104.

he

he was apprehended, saying, *Now* Willard *is taken*; he was convicted by the Spectral Evidence, and executed with Mr. *Burroughs* and the rest. *Anno* 1692

George Jacobs, Sen. being condemned, the Sheriff's Officers * came and seized all he had, even to his Wife's Wedding-Ring; Hard was the Case of this Old Man! who was convicted by the Evidence of his own Grand-Daughter, who to save her own Life, confessed herself a Witch, and was forced to appear against her own Grand-Father, and Mr. *Burroughs*; the Day before their Executions she came to Mr. *Burroughs*, and acknowledging her Guilt, begg'd his Pardon on her Knees, who not only forgave her, but also pray'd with, and for her. The Day after their Executions she wrote the following Letter to her Father.

Honoured Father,

AFTER my humble Duty remembred to you, hoping in the Lord of your good Health, as blessed be GOD I enjoy, tho' in abundance of Affliction, being close confined here in a loathsome Dungeon, the Lord look down in Mercy upon me, not knowing how soon I shall be put to Death, by Means of the Afflicted Persons; my Grand-Father having suffered already, and all his Estate seized for the King. The Reason of my Confinement is this, I having, thro' the Magistrates Threatnings, and my own vile and wretched Heart confessed several Things contrary to my Conscience and Knowledge, tho' to the wounding of my own Soul, the Lord pardon me for it; but, oh! the Terrors of a wounded Conscience who can bear! but blessed be the Lord, he would not let me go on in my Sins,

* Calef, p. 105.

Anno 1692 *but in Mercy, I hope, to my Soul, would not ſuffer me to keep it in any longer, but I was forced to confeſs the Truth of all before the Magiſtrates, who would not believe me, but 'tis their Pleaſure to put me here, and God knows how ſoon I ſhall be put to Death. Dear Father, let me beg your Prayers to the Lord on my Behalf, and ſend us a joyful and happy Meeting in Heaven. My Mother, poor Woman, is very crazy, and remembers her kind Love to you, and to Uncle,* viz. D—— A——, *ſo leaving you to the Protection of the Lord, I reſt your dutiful Daughter,*

From the Dungeon in Salem-*Priſon,* Aug. 20, 1692. Margaret Jacobs.

THIS poor young Woman had certainly been hanged, as *Wardwell* was, for her Recantation, if an Impoſthume had not broke in her Head at the Time appointed for her Trial, by which ſhe eſcaped. Her Father was likewiſe accuſed, but fled; * her Mother, a crazy, ſickly Woman, was likewiſe accuſed, and impriſoned; ſhe had four ſmall Children with her in the Houſe, when the Officer came, and perſwaded her to go with him, telling her, ſhe ſhould ſpeedily return; when ſhe came into the Preſence of the *Afflicted*, they ſaid, they did not know her, but at length one of them ſaying, Don't you know *Jacobs* the old Witch? they all fell down into their Fits, and accuſed her; ſhe was then ſent to Priſon, and lay there 10 Months; and the Neighbours in the mean Time kept the Children from ſtarving.

AT the Tryal of *Martha Carrier*, ſeveral of her own Children frankly confeſſed themſelves

* *Ibid.* p. 109.

Witches,

Witches, and that their Mother had made them so; they gave an Account of ſeveral Journeys, Meetings, and Miſchiefs by them performed; Dr. *Mather* adds this Memorandum concerning her. "This Rampant Hag *Martha Carryer* was the "Perſon of whom the Confeſſions of the Witches "and of her own Children among the reſt, agreed, "that the Devil had promiſed her, ſhe ſhould be "Queen of Hell." But tho' the Children's Evidence was very credible, the Court did not make Uſe of it for her Conviction. *Anno* 1692

WHEN the laſt eight Priſoners were going to Execution the Cart was ſet, as it was going up the Hill; upon which the *Afflicted*, and others ſaid, the Devil hindred it; but the Priſoners all dyed with ſtrong Proteſtations of their Innocence.

Samuel Wardwell * had been prevail'd with to confeſs himſelf a Wizzard, to ſave his Life, but his Conſcience not ſuffering him to do the Drudgery of taking away the Lives of his innocent Neighbours, he reſolved to renounce his former Confeſſion before the Magiſtrate; whereupon he was ſoon brought to his Trial: And his former Confeſſion, with the *Spectre-Evidence* being produced againſt him, he was preſently condemned. At Execution, while he was ſpeaking to the People, proteſting his Innocence; the Smoke of the Executioner's Tobacco came into his Face, and interrupted his Diſcourſe a little; the Accuſers ſaid, *The Devil hindred him with Smoke.*

† *Mary Eaſty*, Siſter of *Relecca Nurſe*, being ſenſible of the blind Fury of the People, and of the innocent Blood the Magiſtrates were bring-

* *Ibid.* p. 106. † *Ibid.* p. 97.

Anno 1692 ing on themſelves, preſented the following Petition.

To the Honourable Judge and Bench now ſitting in Judicature in *Salem*, and the Reverend Miniſters, the Petition of *Mary Eaſty* humbly ſheweth,

THAT whereas your humble poor Petitioner being condemned to dye, doth humbly beg of you to take it into your judicious and pious Conſideration, that your humble and poor Petitioner knowing her own Innocence, and ſeeing plainly the Wiles and Subtilty of my Accuſers by myſelf, cannot but judge charitably of others that are going the ſame Way with myſelf; I was confined a whole Month on the ſame Account that I am now condemned for, and then cleared by the afflicted Perſons, as ſome of your Honours *know, and in two Days Time I was cried out upon again, and have been confined, and am now condemned to dye; the Lord above knew my Innocence then, and likewiſe does now, as at the great Day will be known to Men and Angels. I petition your Honours not for my own Life, for I know I muſt dye, and my appointed Time is ſet; but (the Lord he knows it is) if it be poſſible that no more innocent Blood may be ſhed, which undoubtedly cannot be avoided in the Way and Courſe you go in. I queſtion not but your Honours do to the utmoſt of your Powers in the Diſcovery and Detection of Witchcraft and Witches, and would not be guilty of innocent Blood for the World; but by my own Innocency I know you are in the wrong Way, the Lord in his infinite Mercy direct you in this great Work, if it be his bleſſed Will, that innocent Blood be not ſhed; I would humbly beg of you, that your Honours would be pleaſed to examine ſome of thoſe Confeſſing Witches,*

I

I being confident there are ſeveral of them have belied themſelves and others, as will appear, if not in this World, I am ſure in the World to come, where I am going; and I queſtion not but yourſelves will ſee an Alteration in theſe Things: They ſay, my ſelf and others have made a League with the Devil; we cannot confeſs; I know, and the Lord knows (as will ſhortly appear) they belye me, and ſo I queſtion not but they do others: The Lord alone who is the Searcher of all Hearts, knows that as I ſhall anſwer it at the Tribunal-Seat, that I know not the leaſt thing of Witchcraft, therefore I cannot, I durſt not belye my own Soul. I beg your Honours not to deny this my humble Petition from a poor dying innocent Perſon, and I queſtion not but the Lord will give a Bleſſing to your Endeavours.

Anno 1692

Mary Eaſty.

WHEN ſhe took her laſt Farewell of her Husband, Children, and Friends, ſhe was ſo ſerious and affecting, as drew Tears from the Eyes of almoſt all preſent.

* *Martha Cory* Wife of *Giles Cory* was apprehended, and examined at the Meeting-Houſe in *Salem*, *March* 21, before a Croud of Spectators; when Mr. *Noyes* one of the Miniſters of the Town had been at Prayer, ſhe deſired that ſhe likewiſe might go to Prayer, but was denied. Mr. *Paris*'s Daughter, and two other Children, with about half a Dozen more were preſent, and accuſed her of afflicting them by biting, pinching, ſtrangling, *&c.* They ſaid, they ſaw her Likeneſs in their Fits coming towards them, and

* *Ibid.* p. 91, 106.

bring

Anno 1692 bringing them a Book to ſign. Mr. *Hathorn* the Magiſtrate asked her, Why ſhe afflicted thoſe Children? She replied, ſhe did not. He asked her, Who did then? She anſwered, She did not know, but thought they were poor diſtracted Creatures, and no Heed was to be given to what they ſaid; Mr. *Hathorn* and *Noyes* replied, it was the Judgment of all preſent, that they were bewitched. The *Afflicted* ſaid, that the *Black Man* whiſper'd her in her Ear, and that ſhe had a yellow Bird that uſed to ſuck between her Fingers, and was now there; Orders being given to ſee if there was any Sign, the Girl ſaid, *It was now too late, for ſhe had removed a Pin, and put it on her Head*; and upon Search there was found a Pin ſticking upright there. When Mrs. *Cory* had any Motion of her Body, the *Afflicted* would cry out; when ſhe bit her Lip, they would cry out, of being bitten; if ſhe graſped one Hand with the other, they would cry out, of being pinched; ſo ſhe was committed to Priſon, and condemned, on the Spectral Evidence. When ſhe came to dye, ſhe concluded her Life with an excellent Prayer on the Ladder, proteſting her Innocence to the very laſt.

HER Husband Mr. *Giles Cory* * was apprehended, and committed upon the ſame Evidence; When he came to the Bar, he pleaded, *Not guilty* to his Indictment, but refuſed to be tried by a Jury, that had cleared none that had been brought before them. He was a bold ſtout Man, and knowing there would be the ſame Witneſſes againſt him, as had been againſt the reſt, he reſolved to undergo any Kind of Death, rather than ſubmit to their Verdict; ſo they ordered him to be preſs'd to Death, agreeably to

* *Ibid.* p. 106.

the

the Cuſtom of *England* in ſuch Caſes, which was accordingly executed. He was the firſt in *New-England* that ever ſuffered this Kind of Death. *Anno* 1692

ALL the reſt of the Criminals that ſuffered Death on this Occaſion went out of the World without the leaſt Acknowledgment of their Guilt, laying their Blood at the Door of falſe Witneſſes. But by theſe Examples, the Reader ſees that neither Integrity of Manners, nor the ſtrongeſt Proteſtations of Innocence with their dying Breath were ſufficient to move Compaſſion, nor ſtop the Tide of the People's Zeal againſt theſe unhappy Perſons at this Time.

THE Names of thoſe that were condemned, but were firſt reprieved, and then pardoned were, *Abigail Falkner* of *Andover*, who pleaded Pregnancy, *Dorcas Hoar* of *Beverly*, *Mary Bradberry* of *Salisbury*, *Rebecca Eames* of *Boxford*, *Mary Lacy*, *Anne Foſter* of *Andover*, *Abigail Hobbs* of *Topſfield*, and *Elizabeth Proctor*, who likewiſe pleaded her Belly.

BUT theſe were far from being all that were in Danger of loſing their Lives for *Witchcraft* at this Time; there being 150 now in Priſon, and above 200 more under Accuſation by the *Afflicted*: Indeed the whole Country was in Confuſion, every one being jealous of his Neighbour.

Several of the **Accuſed* made their Eſcape out of the Country, who had otherwiſe been truſs'd up with their Neighbours, as

Mrs. *Mary Cary* of *Charles-Town*, who was committed to *Cambridge*-Priſon, and laid in Irons; her Husband going to the Trials at *Salem*, and obſerving, that the Spectral Evidence was received, together with idle and malicious Stories

* *Ibid*, p. 95.

againſt

Anno 1692 againſt Peoples Lives came home, and contriv'd his Wife's Eſcape, they fled firſt to *Rhode-Iſland*, and from thence to *New-York*, where they ſtaid 'till the Storm was over.

Mr. *Edward Biſhop* and his Wife; whoſe Goods and Chattels were immediately ſeized by the Sheriff, and afterwards redeemed for 10 *l.*

* Mr. *Philip Engliſh* and his Wife; whoſe Eſtate Mr. *Corwin* the Sheriff ſeized to the Value of 1500 *l.* which was wholly loſt, except about 300 *l.* which was afterwards reſtored.

Mr. *Dudley Bradſtreet*, a Juſtice of Peace in *Andover*, who having granted out Warrants againſt 30 or 40 for ſuppoſed Witchcraft, and ſeeing Cauſe at length to refuſe granting any more, was with his Wife accuſed of killing nine Perſons by Witchcraft, and forced to fly the Country.

Mr. *John Bradſtreet*, Brother to the Juſtice, who being accuſed of afflicting a poor Dog, and riding upon him thro' the Air to Witch-Meetings, was forc'd to fly for his Life into *Piſcataqua*-Government; but the Dog was put to Death.

Capt. *John Aldin*, a Man of good Reputation and Eſteem, who being examined at *Salem*, and committed to *Boſton* Goal, *May* 31, after 15 Weeks Impriſonment made his Eſcape; but the Captain having given the World an Account of his own Examination and Commitment, I ſhall tranſcribe it in his own Words. †

"JOHN ALDIN, *Sen.* of *Boſton*, in the County "of *Suffolk*, Mariner, on the 28th of *May* "1692, was ſent for by the Magiſtrates of *Sa*-"*lem*, in the County of *Eſſex*, upon the Accuſa-"tion of a Company of poor diſtracted, or poſ-"ſeſſed Creatures, or Witches, and being ſent

* *Ibid.* p. 108. † *Ibid.* p. 98.

by

" by Mr. *Stoughton*, arrived there *May* 31, and Anno 1692
" appeared at *Salem*-Village before Mr. *Gidney*,
" Mr. *Hathorn*, and Mr. *Corwin*.

" THOSE Wenches being preſent who play'd
" their juggling Tricks, falling down, crying
" out, and ſtaring in People's Faces; the Ma-
" giſtrates demanded of them, Who it was of
" all the People in the Room that hurt them?
" one of theſe Accuſers pointed ſeveral Times
" at Capt. *Hill* there preſent, but ſpake nothing;
" the ſame *Accuſer* had a Man ſtanding at her
" Back to hold her up; he ſtoop'd down to her
" Ear, then ſhe cried out, *Aldin, Aldin* afflicted
" her; one of the Magiſtrates asked her, if ſhe
" had ever ſeen *Aldin?* She ſaid, *No.* He asked
" how ſhe knew it was *Aldin?* She ſaid, the
" Man told her ſo.

" THEN all were ordered to go down into
" the Street, where a Ring was made, and the
" ſame Accuſer cried out, *There ſtands* Aldin, *a*
" *bold Fellow, with his Hat on before the Judges;*
" *he ſells Powder and Shot to the* Indians *and*
" French, *and lies with the* Indian Squas, *and*
" *has* Indian Papooſes. Then was *Aldin* com-
" mitted to the Marſhal's Cuſtody, and had his
" Sword taken from him; for they ſaid, he
" afflicted them with his Sword. After ſome
" Hours *Aldin* was ſent for to the Meeting-
" Houſe in the Village before the Magiſtrates,
" who required *Aldin* to ſtand upon a Chair to
" the open View of all the People.

" THE Accuſers cried out, that *Aldin* did
" pinch them then, when he ſtood upon a Chair
" in the Sight of all the People, a good Way
" diſtant from them. One of the Magiſtrates
" bid the Marſhal to hold open *Aldin*'s Hands,
" that he might not pinch thoſe Creatures.
" *Aldin* asked them, why they ſhould think
" that he ſhould come to that Village to afflict

thoſe

Anno 1692 " thoſe Perſons that he never knew, or ſaw be-
" fore; Mr. *Gidney* bid *Aldin* confeſs, and give
" Glory to God; *Aldin* ſaid, he hoped he ſhould
" give Glory to God, and hoped he ſhould ne-
" ver gratify the Devil; but appealed to all that
" knew him, if they ever ſuſpected him to be
" ſuch a Perſon; and challenged any one that
" could bring in any thing upon their own
" Knowledge, that might give Suſpicion of his
" being ſuch an one. Mr. *Gidney* ſaid, he had
" known *Aldin* many Years, and had been at
" Sea with him, and always look'd upon him to
" be an honeſt Man, but now he did ſee Cauſe
" to alter his Judgment. *Aldin* anſwered, he
" was ſorry for that, but he hoped God would
" clear up his Innocency, that he would recall
" that Judgment again, and added, that he
" hoped he ſhould with *Job* maintain his Inte-
" grity 'till he dyed. They bid *Aldin* look upon
" the Accuſers, which he did, and then they fell
" down. *Aldin* asked Mr. *Gidney*, What Rea-
" ſon could be given, why *Aldin*'s looking upon
" *him* did not ſtrike *him* down as well, but no
" Reaſon was given, as I heard; but the Accu-
" ſers were brought to *Aldin* to touch them, and
" this Touch, they ſaid, made them well. *Al-*
" *din* began to ſpeak of the Providence of God,
" in ſuffering theſe Creatures to accuſe innocent
" Perſons. Mr. *Noyes* asked *Aldin*, Why he
" would offer to ſpeak of the Providence of God?
" God by his Providence (ſaid Mr. *Noyes*) go-
" verns the World, and keeps it in Peace; and
" ſo went on with Diſcourſe, and ſtopp'd *Al-*
" *din*'s Mouth as to that. *Aldin* told Mr. *Gid-*
" *ney*, that he could aſſure him, that there was
" a lying Spirit in them, for I can aſſure you
" there is not a Word of Truth in all they ſay
" of me. But *Aldin* was again committed to
" the Marſhal, and his *Mittimus* made to the
" Priſon of *Boſton*.

THE

THE Captain having made his Eſcape, as I obſerved before, returned again when the Storm was over, and ſurrendred himſelf to the Superior Court at *Boſton*, where he was cleared by Proclamation the laſt *Tueſday* in *April*, 1693, none of his former Accuſers appearing againſt him: But Examples of this Kind are without Number. There was a Gentleman of *Boſton*, who being accuſed by the *Afflicted* at *Andover*, ventured to ſtand his Ground, and ſent a Writ by ſome particular Friends to arreſt his Accuſers in 1000 *l.* Action for Defamation, with Inſtruction to inform themſelves of the Certainty of the Proof, which ſo frighted the poor Creatures, that from that Time the Accuſations at *Andover* generally ceaſed. *Anno* 1692.

THINGS were indeed come to a wretched Paſs, no Man being ſure of his Life or Fortune for an Hour; and no Wonder, conſidering the infamous Methods that were made Uſe of to bring People into the Snare; there was a Society of Gentlemen at *Salem*, like that for the Reformation of Manners in *London*, who engag'd to find out, and proſecute all ſuſpected Perſons, and many were impriſon'd by their Means; but the Proceedings of theſe Gentlemen were fair and honourable, in Compariſon to the Methods that were taken at *Andover* for the finding out of Witches, which if God in his Providence had not put a ſpeedy Stop to, muſt inevitably have diſſolv'd the Government itſelf; the Caſe was this; Mr. *Joſeph Ballard*'s Wife of *Andover* falling ſick of a malignant Fever, of which ſhe dyed. Her Husband fancied her bewitch'd, and ſent Horſe and Man 40 Miles to *Salem* to fetch ſome of theſe diſtemper'd Wretches that pretended to the Spectral Sight, to tell him who it was that afflicted her: When they came they fell into their Fits, and accuſed one Perſon, as ſitting on the

Head

Anno 1692 Head, and another on the lower Parts of the Afflicted; no ſooner was the Scene open'd but the whole Town was alarmed, and more than 50 were complain'd of for afflicting their Neighbours in a few Weeks; here it was that many were made to accuſe themſelves of riding upon Poles through the Air to Witch-Meetings; many Parents believ'd their Children to be Witches, and Husbands their Wives.

FROM *Andover* * theſe *Accuſers* were ſent for to *Gloceſter*, and occaſioned four Women to be ſent to Priſon, but *Salem*-Priſon being ſo full that it could hold no more, they were ſent to *Ipſwich*. In *November* the *Accuſers* were ſent for again by Lieutenant *Stephens*, who was told, that a Siſter of his was bewitch'd; they told him, they ſaw three Perſons ſitting on his Siſter 'till ſhe dyed, but Bond was accepted for them, the Spectral Evidence beginning now to be called in Queſtion.

BUT before Things were come to this Extremity, the Governour had ſummon'd an Aſſembly of Miniſters to meet *June* 15, and give their Opinions concerning the Validity of the Spectral Evidence, ſeveral of whom, after due Conſideration, gave it as their Opinion, "That "the Apparitions of Perſons afflicting others "was no Proof of their being Witches, nor "was it inconſiſtent with the holy and righ-"teous Government of God to permit the De-"vil to aſſume the Shape of good Men, and that "a good Name obtain'd by a good Life ought "not to be forfeited by meer Spectral Accuſa-"tions; and that Alterations made in the Suf-"ferers by a Look, or a Touch of the Accuſed, "was no infallible Evidence of Guilt, but liable

* *Ibid.* p. 110.

"to

" to be abuſed by the Devil's *Legerdemains*, but " at the ſame Time humbly recommended to " the Government, the ſpeedy and vigorous " Proſecution of ſuch as had rendred themſelves " obnoxious, according to the Directions given " in the Laws of God, and the wholeſome Sta- " tutes of the *Engliſh* Nation, for the Detection " of Witchcraft. Anno 1693

HAD the Opinion of theſe Miniſters been ſtrictly follow'd, all the above-mention'd Calamities had been prevented; for then the Jury muſt have acquitted all that were accuſed on the Spectral Evidence only, and the Spectral Evidence being diſcountenanced, would quickly have vaniſhed, and the People have return'd to their right Minds, as they did ſome Months after.

BUT Things went on in the old Channel, 'till the *afflicted* over-acted their Parts ſo far, as to accuſe ſome of the neareſt Relations of Dr. *Increaſe Mather*, and of the Governour himſelf; it was Time then to make a Stand: Accordingly we find, the very next Seſſions, which was *January* 3, 1692-3, when 56 Bills were preferr'd againſt Perſons for Witchcraft, the Grand Jury brought in 30 *Ignoramus*; and of the remaining 26, the Petty Jury convicted but three, whom the Governour pardon'd: Nay, the People's Eyes were ſo far open'd by this Time, that they would not convict People upon their own Confeſſions, for when *Mary Watts*'s Confeſſion was produced as Evidence againſt her, the Grand Jury would not accept it, but looking upon her as a diſtemper'd Perſon, brought in the Bill *Ignoramus*; and tho' the Court ſent them out a ſecond Time, they return'd again with the ſame Verdict.

AND indeed all the Confeſſions that were made, ſeem to me either the Effects of a di-

Anno 1693 ſtemper'd Brain, or extorted from Perſons to ſave their Lives; Dr. *Mather* has given us the Confeſſion of *W. B.* a Man of 40 Years of Age writ with his own Hand in Priſon, and ſent to the Magiſtrates of his own Accord to confirm his former Confeſſions; But whether the Act of a Man in Priſon, and under Apprehenſion of Death may be called free, I leave others to judge. However, I'll gratify the Reader's Curioſity with it, without being accountable either for the Senſe, or *Engliſh* of it.

GOD having called * *me to confeſs my Sin and Apoſtacy in that Fall, in giving the Devil Advantage over me, appearing like a* Black *in the Evening to ſet my Hand to his Book, as I have own'd to my Shame; he told me, that I ſhould not want, ſo doing. At* Salem-*Village there being a little off the Meeting-Houſe about an Hundred fine Blades, ſome with Rapiers by their Sides, which was called, (and might be for ought I know) by* B. *and* Bu. *and the Trumpet ſounded, and Bread and Wine, which they called the* Sacrament; *but I had none, being carried over all upon a Stick, never being at any other Meeting. I being at Cart laſt* Saturday *all the Day, of Hay and* Engliſh *Corn, the Devil brought my Shape to* Salem, *and did afflict* M. S. *and* R. F. *by clitching my Hand. And on* Sabbath-Day, *my Shape afflicted* A. M. *and at Night afflicted* M. S. *and* A. M.: E. J. *and* A. F. *have been my Enticers to this great Abomination, as One has own'd, and charg'd her other Siſter with the ſame; and the Deſign was to deſtroy* Salem-*Village, and to begin at the Miniſter's Houſe, and to deſtroy the Churches of God, and to ſet up Satan's Kingdom,*

* C. Mather, *Book* vi. *p.* 81.

and

and then all will be well. And now, I hope, God has in ſome meaſure made me ſenſible of my Sin and Apoſtacy, begging Pardon of God, and of the honourable Magiſtrates, and all God's People; hoping and promiſing, by the Help of God, to ſet to my Heart and Hand to do what in me lyes to deſtroy ſuch wicked Worſhip, humbly begging the Prayers of God's People for me, that I may walk humbly under this Affliction, and that I may procure to myſelf the ſure Mercies of David. Anno 1693

BUT far the major Part, if not all the Confeſſions of the *Penitent Witches* (as they were called) were extorted from them, purely with the View of ſaving their Lives; hence it was, that the Husbands and Children of ſome upon their bended Knees have prevail'd with them to confeſs every thing that was laid to their Charge; Others have been wearied out with long and tedious Examinations before private Perſons for many Hours together, 'till they yielded to any thing; the Queſtion being then asked, Were you at ſuch a Witch-Meting? Or, have you ſign'd the Devil's Book? If they replied *Yes*, the whole was drawn out into the Form of a *Confeſſion*. That this was really the Caſe will appear by the following *Certificate*, ſign'd by the Hands of half a dozen honeſt Women, whoſe Conſciences would not ſuffer them to diſguiſe the Truth any longer.*

WE whoſe Names are underwritten, Inhabitants of Andover, *whereas that horrible and tremendous Judgment beginning at* Salem-*Village in the Year* 1692, *by ſome called Witchcraft, firſt breaking forth at Mr.* Paris's *Houſe; ſeveral*

* Calef's *More Wonders*, &c. *Part* V. *p.* 111, 112.

Anno 1693 *young Perſons being ſeemingly afflicted did accuſe ſeveral Perſons for afflicting them, and many there believing it to be ſo; we being informed, that if a Perſon were ſick, the Afflicted Perſons could tell what or who was the Cauſe of that Sickneſs;* Joſeph Ballard *of* Andover's *Wife being ſick at the ſame Time, he either from himſelf, or the Advice of others fetch'd two of the Perſons, called the* afflicted Perſons *from* Salem-*Village to* Andover, *which was the beginning of that dreadful Calamity that befell us in* Andover; *and the Authority in* Andover *believing the ſaid* Accuſations *to be true, ſent for the ſaid Perſons to come together to the* Meeting-Houſe *in* Andover (*the* afflicted Perſons *being there*); *after Mr.* Bernard *had been at Prayer, we were blind-folded, and our Hands were laid upon the* afflicted Perſons, *they being in their Fits, and falling into theſe Fits at our coming into their preſence, as they ſaid, ſome led us, and laid our Hands on them, and then they ſaid, they were well, and that we were guilty of* afflicting *them; whereupon we were all ſeized as Priſoners by a Warrant from the Juſtice of Peace, and forthwith carried to* Salem; *and by Reaſon of that ſudden Surprizal, we knowing ourſelves altogether innocent of that Crime, we were all exceedingly aſtoniſhed, and amazed, and conſternated, and affrighted out of our Reaſon, and our deareſt Relations ſeeing us in that dreadful Condition, and knowing our great Danger, apprehending, that there was no other Way to ſave our Lives, as the Caſe was then circumſtantiated, but by confeſſing ourſelves to be ſuch and ſuch Perſons, as the* afflicted *repreſented us to be; they out of tender Love and Pity perſwaded us to confeſs what we did confeſs; and indeed that Confeſſion that is ſaid we made, was no other than what was ſuggeſted to us by ſome Gentlemen, they telling us, that we were Witches, and they knew it, and we knew it, and they knew that we knew it; which made us think that we were ſo, and our Underſtanding, and our Reaſon, and our Faculties being almoſt*

almoſt gone, we were not capable of judging of our Condition; as alſo the hard Meaſures they uſed with us, rendred us uncapable of making our Defence, but we ſaid any thing, and every thing they deſired, and moſt of what we ſaid was but in Effect a conſenting to what they ſaid. Some Time after, when we were better compoſed, they telling of us what we had confeſſed, we did profeſs, that we were innocent, and ignorant of ſuch things, and we hearing, that Samuel Wardwell *who had renounced his* Confeſſion, *was condemn'd, and executed, ſome of us were told, that we were going after* Wardwell. Anno 1693

Mary Oſgood,
Mary Tiler,
Deliverance Dane,
Abigail Baker,
Sarah Wilſon,
Hannah Tiler.

If this *Confeſſion* had been made a little ſooner, while the *Spectral Evidence* was in Repute, it had coſt the *Confeſſors* their Lives; for 'tis impoſſible to expreſs the blind Fury and Zeal of the People againſt the Priſoners, who believed every thing the *Afflicted* ſaid, and disbelieved every thing the *Accuſed* offered in their own Vindication.

When neither Promiſes nor Threatnings could bring Perſons to *Confeſſion*, they ſometimes made Uſe of Violence and Force, as appears by the moving Letter that Mr. *Procter* ſent to the Miniſters of *Boſton* a few Days before his Trial, which becauſe it gives a clear Account of this Matter, I will tranſcribe in his own Words.

Anno 1693

To the Reverend Mr. *Mather*, *Moody*, *Baily*, *Allen*, *Willard*.

Reverend Gentlemen,

THE *Innocence of our Caſe, with the Enmity of our* * *Accuſers, and our Judges and Jurors, whom nothing but our innocent Blood will ſerve their Turn, having condemned us already before our Trials, being ſo much incenſed, and enraged againſt us by the Devil, makes us bold to beg and implore your favourable Aſſiſtance of this our humble Petition to His Excellency, That if it be poſſible our innocent Blood may be ſpared, which undoubtedly otherwiſe will be ſhed, if the Lord does not mercifully ſtep in; the Magiſtrates, Miniſters, Juries, and all the People in general being ſo much incens'd, and enrag'd againſt us, by the Deluſion of the Devil, which we can term no other, by Reaſon we know in our own Conſciences we are all innocent Perſons; here are five Perſons, who have lately confeſs'd themſelves to be* Witches, *aud accuſe ſome of us of being along with them at a Sacrament, ſince we were committed to cloſe Priſon, which we know to be Lyes. Two of the five are* Carrier's *Sons, young Men, who would not confeſs any thing 'till they tied them Neck and Heels, 'till the Blood was ready to come out of their Noſes, and 'tis credibly believ'd and reported, that this was the Occaſion of making them confeſs that they never did; by Reaſon they ſaid, one had been a Witch a Month, another five Weeks, and that their Mother had made them ſo, who has been confin'd here theſe nine Weeks. My Son* William Procter, *becauſe he would not con-*

* Calef *p.* 104.

feſs

ſeſs, when he was examin'd, that he was guilty, they tyed him Neck and Heels 'till the Blood guſhed out of his Noſe, and would have kept him ſo 24 Hours, if one more merciful than the reſt had not taken Pity on him, and cauſed him to be unbound. Theſe Actions are very like the Popiſh *Cruelties; they have already undone us in our Eſtates, and that will not ſerve their Turns without our innocent Blood. If it can't be granted, that we may have our Tryals at* Boſton, *we humbly beg, that you would endeavour to have theſe Magiſtrates changed, and others put in their Room; begging alſo, and beſeeching, that you would pleaſe to be here ſome of you, if not all, at our Trials, hoping thereby you may be the Means of ſaving our innocent Bloods, deſiring your Prayers to the Lord on our Behalf, we reſt your poor afflicted Servants.*

Anno 1693

John Procter, *&c.*

But this Letter had no Effect, *Procter* and his Fellow-Priſoners being convicted and executed a little after. Such Methods as theſe being made Uſe of, 'tis no Wonder that the Number of *Confeſſing Witches* amounted to fifty, not one of whom were put to the Trial, whether they would abide by their Confeſſions when they came to dye; Unhappy Creatures! who were forc'd to do the Drudgery of taking away the Lives of their Neighbours, to ſave their own. But upon the *Afflicted*'s over-acting their Part, as I obſerv'd before, the Tide of the People's Affections began to turn, and they who a little before were in Danger of being torn in pieces by the Mob, were now univerſally lamented and pity'd. All further Proſecutions were now ſtopp'd, the *Accuſations* of the *Afflicted* were entirely diſregarded; the Priſon-Doors were ſet open to all that were under Confinement, by the *Accuſations* of the *Afflicted*, and Sir *William Phips* after ſome

Anno 1693 Time he pardoned all that were under Sentence of Condemnation.

BUT beſides the Blood that was ſpilt upon this Occaſion, ſeveral Perſons and Families were ruin'd in their Eſtates and Reputations, partly by long Impriſonment, and partly by the Avarice of the Officers who took Poſſeſſion of their Houſes in their Abſence; and though I am fully ſatisfied, that the Zeal of the Government in this Affair proceeded from their Regard to the Glory of God, yet I muſt ſay, that the Magiſtrates were too partial in their Behaviour towards the *Accuſed*, and that Sir *William Phips* himſelf treated them with too much Severity, by ordering them to be laid in Irons, and countenancing the popular Cry againſt them.

THE whole Country were by Degrees made ſenſible of their Miſtake, and moſt of the Actors in this Tragedy repented the Share they had in it. One of the Honourable Judges that ſate on the Bench at theſe Trials, on a Faſt-Day in a full Aſſembly at the *South* Meeting in *Boſton*, delivered in a Paper to be read to all the People; acknowledging his having fallen into ſome Errors in the Trials at *Salem*, and begging the Prayers of the Congregation, that the Guilt of ſuch Miſcarriages might not be imputed to the Country in general, or to him and his Family in particular. And while this Paper was reading, he ſtood up in the View of the whole *Aſſembly*.

THE Jury likewiſe publiſh'd a Paper ſign'd with their own Hands in the following Words.*

* Calef, p. 144.

WE

Anno 1693

WE *whose Names are underwritten, being in the Year* 1692, *called to ſerve as Jurors in Court at* Salem, *on Trial of many who were by ſome ſuſpected of doing Acts of Witchcraft upon the Bodies of ſundry Perſons.*

WE confeſs, that we ourſelves were not capable to underſtand, nor able to withſtand the myſterious Deluſions of the Powers of Darkneſs, and Prince of the Air, but were, for Want of Knowledge in ourſelves, and better Information from others, prevail'd with to take up with ſuch Evidence againſt the Accuſed, *as on further Conſideration and further Information, we juſtly fear was inſufficient for the touching the Lives of any,* Deut. xvii. 6. *whereby we fear, we have been inſtrumental with others, though ignorantly and unwittingly, to bring upon ourſelves and this People of the Lord the Guilt of innocent Blood, which Sin the Lord ſaith in Scripture, he would not pardon,* 2 Kings xxiv. 4. *That is, We ſuppoſe in Regard of his temporal Judgments, we do therefore hereby ſignify to all in general, and to the ſurviving Sufferers in eſpecial, our deep Senſe of, and Sorrow for our Errors, in acting on ſuch Evidence to the condemning of any Perſon.*

AND do hereby acknowledge, that we juſtly fear that we were ſadly *deluded and miſtaken, for which we are much diſquieted and diſtreſſed in our Minds, and do therefore humbly beg Forgiveneſs firſt of God for Chriſt's Sake for this our Error, and pray, that God would not impute the Guilt of it to ourſelves, nor others; and we alſo pray, that we may be conſider'd candidly and aright by the living Sufferers, as being then under the Power of a ſtrong and general Deluſion, utterly unacquainted with, and not experienced in Matters of that Nature.*

WE

Ann. 1693 *WE do heartily ask Forgiveneſs of you all whom we have juſtly offended, and do declare according to our preſent Minds, we would none of us do ſuch things again for the whole World; praying you to accept of this, in Way of Satisfaction for our Offence, and that you would bleſs the Inheritance of the Lord, that he may be entreated for the Land.*

Thomas Fisk, *Foreman,*	Thomas Perly, *Sen.*
William Fisk,	John Pebody,
John Batcheler,	Thomas Perkins,
Thomas Fisk, *Jun.*	Samuel Sayer,
John Dane,	Andrew Elliot,
Joſeph Evelith,	Henry Herrick, *Sen.*

AND Dr. *C. Mather* who writ the forementioned Trials, has ſince declared it as his Opinion, that Things were carried too far; as appears to him, 1. From the great Number of Perſons accuſed. 2. From the Quality of the Perſons accuſed, ſome of whom were Perſons of blameleſs and holy Lives. 3. From the Number of the *Afflicted*, which encreas'd to about fifty. This (ſays he) gave juſt Ground to ſuſpect ſome Miſtake. 4. From the Execution of the Priſoners, not one of which confeſs'd their Guilt at their Death; though ſeveral of them were Perſons of good Knowledge, of ſober Lives, and dyed in a ſerious, affecting Manner. And as for the Confeſſors (ſays he) we had no Experience whether they would abide by their Confeſſions when they came to dye; they being all reprieved and pardoned. 5. Becauſe when the Proſecutions ceaſed, the *Afflicted* grew preſently well; the *Accuſed* are generally quiet, and we have had no Diſturbance ſince that Time for theſe five Years.

THE

THE *Doctor* adds further, that the Proceedings at *Salem* were owing to ſome miſtaken Principles, as that Satan cannot aſſume the Shape of an innocent Perſon, and in that Shape do Miſchief to the Bodies and Eſtates of Mankind; that when he does Miſchief to Perſons in their Bodies or Eſtates, it is moſt commonly by the Inſtrumentality of our Neighbour, ſome Witch in Covenant with the Devil; and that when the Party ſuſpected looks upon the Parties ſuppoſed to be bewitched, and they thereupon fall into a Fit, it is a Proof of ſuch a Covenant, *&c.* * Anno 1693

THUS in about fifteen Months Time ended an Affair, which not only confounded the Minds of the good People of *New-England*, but ſtruck all *Europe* with Surprize and Aſtoniſhment: Nay, the *Indians* themſelves improved it to the Diſadvantage of the *Proteſtant* Religion, for one of the *French-Indians* in Converſation with Captain *Hill* at *Saco*-Fort told him, that the *French* Miniſters were certainly better than the *Engliſh*; for before the *French* came among them, there were a great many Witches among the *Indians*, but now there were none; and there were many Witches among the *Engliſh* Miniſters, as *Burroughs*, who was hang'd for it.†

I have often wondred, that no publick Notice was ever taken either of the *Afflicted Perſons* or *Confeſſing Witches*; if the Agitations of the *Afflicted* were voluntary and artful, the Blood of the innocent certainly lay at their Door; but if not, they ſhould have been treated as Lunaticks, or as Perſons who being poſſeſs'd by an evil Spirit had been the unhappy Inſtruments of taking away the Lives of their honeſt Neighbours. The *Confeſſing Witches* may poſſibly deſerve a little

* Mather, *Book* VI. p. 82. † Calef, *p.* 25.

more

Anno 1693 more Compaſſion, if their Confeſſions were extorted by Violence, or aroſe from the pure Neceſſity of ſaving their Lives this Way, and no other (as I believe was the Caſe of moſt of them); but yet their bearing falſe Witneſs againſt their Neighbours, and dipping their Hands in their innocent Blood, ought not to have been paſs'd over in Silence: If the Confeſſions of any were voluntary, and free from Reſtraint, as Dr. *Cotton Mather* ſays, *W—— B——*'s was, and many others; if they confirm'd them afterwards in cool Blood with very ſtrong Circumſtances, ſuch as, relating the Times when they covenanted with the Devil, and the Reaſons that moved them to it; their Mock-Sacraments, their ſigning the Devil's Book, and ſhewing the Place in their Bodies where they drew Blood to ſign it with, *&c.* They ought at leaſt to have been put to the Trial, whether they would have own'd their Confeſſions with their dying Breath; but Things were in ſuch Confuſion at this Time, that nothing of this Nature was attempted. There was a diſcontented Party in the State that clogg'd the Wheels of Sir *William Phips*'s Government, and at length got him recalled: But before Sir *William* went for *England*, being willing to make all Parties eaſy, he publiſh'd a General Pardon, for which (ſays my Author) he received the Thanks, not only of his Country, but of the Queen of *England* herſelf.

MR. *Paris* indeed, in whoſe Houſe this Tragedy began, and who had himſelf been a Witneſs, and a zealous Proſecutor of the *Accuſed*, felt the Effects of the People's Reſentment ſome Time after; for his People not only withdrew from his Communion, but preſented ſeveral Petitions and Remonſtrances to the Magiſtrates and Miniſters of *Boſton* to obtain his Removal; they declared, "That Mr. *Paris*'s believing the Devil's Accu-

"ſations,

" ſations, and readily departing from all Charity " to Perſons of blameleſs Lives and Converſa- " tions upon ſuch Suggeſtions; his promoting " Accuſations, and his Partiality therein, ſtifling " ſome, and encouraging *others*; his going to " *Mary Walut*, and *Abigal Williams*, to know " who afflicted the People in their Illneſſes, and " his taking an Oath, that the Priſoners by " their Looks knock'd down the pretended Suf- " ferers, though 'tis certain he knew nothing of " the Matter", obliged them to refuſe him for their Miniſter; the Miniſters of *Boſton* did every thing they could to make up the Difference, and Mr. *Paris* himſelf in the Year 1694, made a publick Acknowledgment of his Error, begging Pardon both of God and Man; but the People inſiſting, that they neither could, nor would ſit under the Miniſtry of a Man, who had been an Inſtrument of the Miſery and Ruin of ſo many of their Relations and Friends, he was at laſt removed.

Anno 1693

---

* Calef, *p.* 57, 63.

CHAP.

CHAP. XIII.

Sir William Phips *recalled. His Death and Character. The War with the* Indians *renewed.* Pemmaquid-Fort *taken, and demoliſhed. The Bravery of Mr.* Dunſtan *and his Wife. The Death and Character of* Simon Bradſtreet, *Eſq;. The Earl of* Bellamont *arrives Governour, and concludes a Peace with the* Indians.

Anno 1654

WHILE the Peace of *Pemmaquid* with the *Indians* continued, Sir *William Phips* did all that was in his Power to remove their Grievances, and bring them off from their Attachments to the *French*; for this Purpoſe he took a Journey into the *Eaſt*, in the midſt of a very hard Winter, and ſending for the ſeveral *Sachems*, made them Preſents, and treated them with great Civility and Reſpect; he likewiſe opened a free Trade

Trade with them, and offered to leave *Nahauton* an *Indian* Preacher behind him to inſtruct them in the *Proteſtant* Religion. The *Indians* were well enough pleaſed with the Governour's Preſents, and made him large Promiſes of Friendſhip, but ſhewed no great Inclination to his Religion, for the *French* Prieſts had been before-hand with him, and had not only proſelyted the People to the *Roman-Catholick* Religion, but fill'd their Minds with the moſt inveterate Prejudices againſt the Religion of the *Engliſh*, by telling them, that they were *Engliſh* Men by whom our Saviour was Crucify'd; ſo that *Nahauton* could make no Converts: Nor were Sir *William*'s Endeavours to ſeparate them from the *French* Intereſt any more ſucceſsful. If indeed he had diſtributed large Supplies of Ammunition among them, and engaged to ſupport them effectually againſt the *French* for the future, they might poſſibly have changed Sides; but the Country was ſo far from being capable of this in the preſent Circumſtances, that it was ready to ſink under its own Weight; ſo that the Peace was like to be of no long Continuance. Anno 1694

NAY the Diſcontents of the People were at ſuch a Height, that Sir *William* himſelf began to ſit uneaſy in his Government; they complain'd of the Charges of building and maintaining *Pemmaquid-Fort*, and were poſſeſs'd with the Belief, that their heavy Taxes and growing Poverty, which were the neceſſary Conſequences of a long War, were owing to his Male-Adminiſtration: At laſt a Party ſprung up, who made it their Buſineſs to render him odious to the People, and ſet him out not only as a weak, but a wicked Man: Nay, ſo reſolutely bent were they upon his Ruin, that they drew up Articles of Impeachment againſt him, and ſent them over to the King and Council, beſeeching his Majeſty, that

he

Anno 1694 he might be diſplaced from his Government, and a Committee appointed to hear Depoſitions againſt him for Male-Adminiſtration; but the King was too merciful a Prince to leave his Governour in the Hands of his Enemies. But to ſatisfy their Complaints he declared, that he would hear the Cauſe himſelf; and accordingly ſent for Sir *William* and his Accuſers to *White-Hall*; Sir *William* embark'd for *England*, *November* 17, 1694, having obtained an *Addreſs* from the General Aſſembly, in Commendation of his faithful Services to his Country, and beſeeching his Majeſty, that they might not be deprived of the Happineſs of ſuch a Governour: When Sir *William* appeared at Court with this *Addreſs* his Accuſers vaniſhed, and he had all imaginable Aſſurances given him of being reſtored to his Poſt, and of returning back in a few Weeks, with new Marks of the King's Favour, when on a ſudden he was ſeized with a malignant Fever, which in a few Days put an End to his Life.

SIR *William Phips* was born of mean and obſcure Parents at a ſmall Plantation in the Eaſtern Parts of *New-England*, on the Banks of the River *Kennebeck*, *February* 2, 1650; his Father was a Gun-Smith, and left his Mother a Widow, with a large Family of ſmall Children: *William* being one of the youngeſt, kept Sheep in the Wilderneſs 'till he was 18 Years of Age; and was then bound Apprentice to a Ship-Carpenter; when he was out of his Time he took to the Sea, and after ſeveral ſmall Adventures, at laſt made his Fortune, by finding a *Spaniſh* Wreck near *Port de la Plata*; which got him a great deal of Reputation at the *Engliſh* Court, and introduced him into the Acquaintance of the greateſt Men in the Nation: Though King *James* II. gave him the Honour of Knighthood, yet he always oppoſed

oppoſed his Arbitrary Meaſures, as appears by his refuſing the Government of *New-England* when offered him, by a Meſſenger from the Abdicated King, Sir *William* joyn'd heartily in the Revolution, and uſed his Intereſt at the Court of King *William* and Queen *Mary*, for obtaining a Charter for his Country, in Conjunction with the reſt of the Agents, for which, and his other great Services, they nominated him to the King, as the moſt acceptable and deſerving Perſon they could think for their Governour. Sir *William* was no Scholar, nor a Perſon of deep Penetration, but a perfectly honeſt, and good-natur'd Man, a true Lover of his Country, and one that endeavour'd to ſerve it to the beſt of his Capacity. He was ſtrictly virtuous himſelf, and endeavour'd to promote the Practice of Virtue in others; Dr. *Mather* ſays, that if he would have connived at ſome Arbitrary Oppreſſions too much uſed by ſome kind of Officers on the King's Subjects, few or none of thoſe Articles of Impeachment had been preferr'd againſt him; but not being verſed in the Arts of Government, he lay open to the Intrigues of deſigning Men, who envying his Greatneſs, made it their Buſineſs to perplex his Affairs, and were never quiet 'till they got him diſplaced; he had formed a Project for ſupplying the Kingdom with Naval Stores from the Eaſtern Parts of the *Maſſachuſet-Colony*, and was laying it before the King, when Death put an End to all his Purpoſes by a malignant Fever, which carried him off in a few Days at *London*, *February* 18, 1694-5, in the 45th Year of his Age. *Anno* 1694

DEPUTY-GOVERNOUR *Stoughton* was now the Chief Magiſtrate of the Province, a Gentleman, who had made himſelf popular, by enlarging *Harvard-College* with an additional Build-

Anno 1694 ing, which he call'd after his own Name, *Stoughton-Hall*. But before he entred on the Adminiſtration of Affairs the War with the *Indians* broke out again; for the *French* having received a Supply of all Sorts of Warlike Stores from *Europe*, diſtributed them among the *Indians*, and obliged them to break the Peace with the *Engliſh*, within leſs than a Year after it had been made: Being puſh'd forwards by the Inſtigations of the *French*, and joyn'd with a Party of their Men, they fell upon *Oyſter-River Town*, *July* 18, by Break of Day, and killed, and took Priſoners, about 100 Perſons, of whom 20 belonged to the Train'd-Bands of the Town. *Thomas Bickford* whoſe Houſe was palliſado'd, by the River-Side, defended it alone againſt a Party of *Indians* that aſſaulted it, and thereby ſaved his Family and Effects, when others who ſurrender'd on Promiſe of Quarter were barbarouſly murder'd: *Saturday* following they killed Mrs. *Cutt* and three of her Servants at Work in her Farm, on the *South*-Side of *Piſcataqua*-River: On the 27th about Break of Day, they aſſaulted *Groton*, but were repulſed by Lieut. *Lakin*, with the Loſs of one of their Men; however, they plunder'd ſeveral of the Plantations thereabouts, killed 20 Perſons, and carried about a Dozen more into Captivity; Mr. *Gerſhom Hobart* Miniſter of the Place made his Eſcape with Part of his Family, but the *Indians* took Poſſeſſion of his Houſe, killed one of his Children, and carried another into Captivity. *Auguſt* 20, they killed three Perſons at Work in a Field at *Sprucè-Creek*; the ſame Day they killed another at *York*, and carried a Lad into Captivity. On the 24th they killed and took eight Perſons at *Kittery*; among whom was Mr. *Dowing*'s Daughter, a Child of ſeven Years old, whom they uſed in a barbarous Manner, for after they had ſcalped her, they left her

to

to dye on the cold Ground, but ſhe was found alive next Morning, and by the Uſe of proper Medicines recover'd, and lived many Years after tho' the Wound that was made in her Skull could never be cloſed. *September* 4, Mr. *Joſeph Pike* of *Newbury* Deputy-Sheriff of *Eſſex* travelling with one *Long* between *Amesbury* and *Haverhill* in the Execution of his Office fell into an Ambuſcade of the Enemy, and both he and his Companion were murder'd. *November* 19, *Bomaſeen* an *Indian Segamore*, who had ſigned the late Treaty, came with two other *Indians* to *Pemmaquid*, pretending to be juſt arrived from *Canada*, to concert proper Meaſures for the putting a Stop to the Effuſion of more Blood; but it being known that he had been a principal Actor in the late Excurſions of the *Indians*, he was look'd upon as a Spy, and arreſted by Capt. *March* Governour of the Place, and ſent Priſoner to *Boſton*, where he was kept under Confinement ſeveral Years. *Anno* 1694

THERE was an odd Event that happened at *Caſco* about this Time, a Company of *Indians* paſſing through the deſerted Town, and diſcovering ſome Horſes in Capt. *Bracket*'s Orchard; reſolved to make a Feaſt of them; but ſome of the young Men having a Mind firſt to a little Diverſion, drove one of them into a Pond, and took it, and with the *Main* and *Tail* of the Animal, which they cut off, made a kind of a Halter for him: A Son of the famous *Hegon* had a Mind to mount the fiery Steed, but being a ſorry Horſeman, ordered them to tye his Legs under the Horſe's Belly, but as ſoon as the Horſe found himſelf at Liberty, he ran full Speed with his Rider into the Woods, and neither Horſe nor Man were ever ſeen any more; only a few Days after, they found one of the Rider's Legs, which they buried in Capt. *Bracket*'s Cellar with great Howlings and Lamentations.

Anno 1695 THE *New-Engliſh* Affairs were all this while miſerably embarraſſed, partly by a Faction who ſet themſelves to traverſe all the Government's Meaſures, and partly by the Diviſions occaſioned by the late Executions of the pretended Witches; for tho' Sir *William Phips* before his embarking for *England* had pardon'd all that were under Condemnation, yet the Diſcontents of the People ran ſo very high, that they ſeemed more diſpoſed to a Civil War, than to concert proper Meaſures againſt the common Enemy; the *Indians* however lay pretty ſtill all the Winter, a contagious Diſtemper having ſwept away great Multitudes of them, nor did the *Engliſh* ſuſtain any greater Loſs than of two Soldiers of the Garriſon of *Saco*, who were ſurpized by a Party out of the Woods, one of whom was killed, and the other taken Priſoner.

Anno 1696 IN the Spring ſome new Propoſals were made for an Accommodation, by the Mediation of *Sheepſcoat John*, once an *Indian* Convert, afterwards a *Pagan*, and now a *Papiſt*; for on the 20th of *May* a Fleet of Canoes came to an Iſland about a League from *Fort-Pemmaquid*, and ſent to the *Engliſh* in that Garriſon Propoſals of Peace: They owned their Guilt in breaking the former Articles, but as a Pledge of their Sincerity at this Time, they delivered up eight Captives, and promiſed to diſcharge all the reſt upon ſigning the Peace. A Truce was therefore granted them for 30 Days, and Colonel *John Philips*, Lieutenant Colonel *Hawthorn*, and Major *Convers* were ſent to *Pemmaquid* to bring this Affair to a Concluſion, but the Commiſſioners demanding a Surrender of all the *Engliſh* Captives, according to the former Articles of Peace, before they would enter upon any new Propoſals, and not having brought *Bommaſeen* with them from *Boſton* to be exchanged, as they expected; the *Indians*

dians broke off the Conference, and went away in Diſguſt. Anno 1695

ADVICE of this was immediately ſent to all the Eaſtern Garriſons, that they might ſtand upon their Guard; notwithſtanding which, Major *Hammond* of *Kettery* fell into an Ambuſcade, and was taken Priſoner, but the Major had the good Fortune to be tranſported to *Canada*, where he received extraordinary Civilities from the Governour Count *Frontenac*, who purchaſed him of his Tawny Maſter, and then generouſly ſent him home to *Boſton*, by a Veſſel which came thither for Exchange of Priſoners. About the middle of *July* two Men were killed at *Exeter*. In *Auguſt* a Party of *Indians* came down to *Billerica* on Horſe-back, plunder'd the Houſe of one *Rogers*, and killed and took about 15 Perſons Priſoners; this was the firſt Time that the *Indians* ever made Uſe of Horſes any other Way than to eat them; about the ſame Time Serjeant *Haley* venturing a little Way out of his Fort at *Saco* was killed; *September* the 9th Serjeant *March* and three Men were killed, and ſix more wounded at *Pemmaquid*, as they were rowing a *Gondula* round an high rocky Point above the *Barbican*; *October* 7, a Party of *Indians* entred Mr. *Brown*'s Houſe at *Newbury*, and carried away nine People into Captivity, but being purſued by Captain *Greenleaf*, were forced to make their Eſcape over a River in the Night, and leave all their Priſoners behind them; 'twas a Wonder they had not buried their Hatchets in their Brains before they left them, but the Captain coming upon them in the Night every one was glad to ſhift for himſelf, and yet at parting, they beat them ſo unmercifully upon the Head with their Clubs, that they all dyed of their Wounds within a Year, except one, who was hurt only on the Shoulder.

Anno 1695 TOWARDS the End of this Year Capt. *March* Governour of *Pemmaquid-Fort* deſiring to lay down his Commiſſion, was ſucceeded by Captain *Chub*, a Traitor to his Country, and a Man void of all true Courage and Honour; one of his firſt Exploits after taking Poſſeſſion of the Fort was his murdering *Edgeremet*, and *Abenquid*, two of the principal *Segamores* of the *Indians*, with one or two of their Friends, who met him on the Faith of a Treaty; an Action ſo baſe, as no Gentleman, or Man of Honour could be guilty of; but the Reader will quickly obſerve ſomething worſe of him, for which he deſerved to have been made an Example to Poſterity: How this Fellow came to be preferr'd to this Poſt is a Myſtery! but the Country was ſo divided within itſelf, that no Care was taken of the publick Safety; the General Aſſembly met, but made no Proviſion for the War; no Money was raiſed, no Soldiers liſted, nor any Enquiry made into the Condition of the Frontier-Garriſons; ſo that if the *French* and *Indians* had been in a Condition to have acted with Vigour, they might have ravaged the beſt Part of the Country, but they were out of Breath; for the *French* wanted a freſh Supply of Stores from *Europe*, and the *Indians* would do nothing without their Aſſiſtance; ſo that there was a Ceſſation of Action for ſeveral Months.

Anno 1696 BUT the next Summer they acted with new Life; *May* 7, *John Church* of *Quochecho*, who had been a Priſoner ſeven Years before, and made his Eſcape, was retaken, and put to Death. *June* 24, *Thomas Coles* of *Wells* and his Wife were ſlain, as they were travelling home from *York*, where they had been making a Viſit to ſome of their Friends. Two Days after, 14 Perſons were killed near *Portſmouth*, and four taken Priſoners, among whom was an old Woman whom they

they ſcalp'd and left for dead, who yet recovered, and lived ſeveral Years after; *July* 26, as the People of *Quochecho* were coming from Church, a Party of *Indians* killed three, wounded three, and carried away three more Priſoners to *Penobſcot*. *Anno* 1696

BUT the moſt fatal Blow that the *Engliſh* received this Year was the Loſs of *Pemmaquid-Fort*, which happen'd after this Manner, the *French* having taken an *Engliſh* Man of War called the *Newport*, landed ſome Officers and Soldiers on the Banks of the River *Pemmaquid*, who being joyn'd by a Party of *Indians* over Land, ſummoned the Governour to ſurrender the Fort into their Hands, *Chub* was ſo frighted with ſeeing a Man of War in the River, and ſome *French* Men aſhore with the *Indians*, that he thought it his beſt Way to ſecure himſelf and his Garriſon by a Capitulation, and ſo baſely ſurrender'd the Fort, without firing a Gun in its Defence, tho' he had 95 Men double-armed, and the *French* not furniſhed with any Materials to beſiege the Place in Form; the Enemy immediately demoliſhed the Fort, and then retired.

WHEN this Piece of News came to *Boſton* the whole Province was alarmed, for they had now no Barrier left to hinder the Enemy's penetrating into the Heart of the Country. Deputy-Gov. *Stoughton* and his Council began therefore to think it neceſſary to take ſome effectual Meaſures to put a Stop to the Triumphs of the Enemy, and prevent their doing any further Miſchief: Accordingly he fitted out 3 Men of War, and ſent them out in Purſuit of the *French* Man of War, but meeting with contrary Winds they could never get Sight of it; Colonel *Gidney* was likewiſe ſent by Land at the Head of 500 Men to ſecure the Frontiers, but the Enemy having done their Buſineſs were retired, ſo that the Colonel had nothing to do but to ſtrengthen the re-

Anno 1696 remaining Garriſons, and return home; the Colonel by Order of the Lieutenant-Governour arreſted *Chub*, and brought him up to *Boſton*, where he was kept in Cuſtody for ſome Time, but after ſeveral Examinations, nothing treaſonable appearing againſt him, the Governour only took away his Commiſſion, and ſent him home to his Houſe at *Andover*, where he lived about a Year, and was then killed with his Wife, and two or three other Perſons in the Midſt of a very hard Winter by a Party of *Indians*.

TOWARD the latter End of the Summer, the Governour diſpatched Col. *Hawthorn* with ſome Soldiers and Frigates to joyn Major *Church*, who was ordered to attack St. *John's* Fort, the Place from whence the *Indians* received all their Supplies of Men and Ammunition from the *French*. It lyes upon a River between *Port-Royal* and the great River of *Canada*, by which (ſays *La Hontan*) the Inhabitants of thoſe Places may hear from one another in 16 or 17 Days, which they can't do by Way of the Sea in a Month, nor then without Danger. But the Winter was ſo far advanced before the Col. arrived, that his Soldiers were ready to mutiny, for Fear of being ſhut in with the Ice, which obliged the Major after he had ſummoned the Place, and made a few Shot at it, to return home.

THUS all the Projects of the *Engliſh* this Year miſcarry'd, their Meaſures were broken, and nothing but Murmurings and Complaints were to be heard from one End of the Province to the other. The *Indians* on the other Hand were ſtrangely exalted with their late Succeſs, and threatned to ruin the whole Country next Summer: In the mean Time they poſted themſelves ſo advantageouſly, that it was hardly ſafe for the People on the Borders to ſtir out of their Houſes; five Soldiers of the Garriſon of *Saco* were ſurpriz'd and

and kill'd on the 13th of *October*, and ſingle Perſons, as they were at Work in the Fields without Number. And to crown the Calamities of the Year, there was a very great Scarcity of all Sorts of Grain in this, as well as in moſt other Countries of *Europe*, whereby the Poor were ready to mutiny for Want of Bread. *Anno* 1696

In the Winter the Enemy were pretty quiet, but upon the 15th of *March* they made a Deſcent upon the Skirts of *Haverhill*, burnt about half a Dozen Houſes, and killed and took 39 Perſons; among the Priſoners was one *Hannah Dunſtan*, a Woman of a maſculine Spirit, who had lain in about a Week, and was in her Bed with only her Nurſe and eight ſmall Children in the Houſe, when the *Indians* ſurrounded it; her Husband was at Work in the Field, and ſeeing the Enemy at a Diſtance ran home, and bid 7 of his 8 Children get away as faſt as they could to ſome Garriſon in the Town; he then informed his Wife of her Danger, but before ſhe could riſe the Enemy were ſo near, that deſpairing to carry her off, he took his Horſe and Arms, reſolving to live or dye with his Children; he overtook them about 40 Rod from his Houſe, and drove them before him, like a Flock of Sheep, as faſt as their little Legs would carry them, 'till they got to a Place of Safety about a Mile or two from his Houſe; the *Indians* purſued him all the while, but he kept in the Rear of his little Flock, and when any of them came within Reach of his Gun, he preſented it at them, which made them retreat. *Anno* 1697

But his Houſe in the mean Time was riſl'd, and burnt, his Wife, Nurſe, and new-born Infant, with about ten or a Dozen of their Neighbours carried into Captivity; the *Indians* had not gone many Paces from the Houſe before they diſpatched the Child, daſhing out its Brains againſt

Anno 1697 againſt a Tree, but Mrs. *Dunſtan* and her Nurſe travelled 12 Miles the firſt Night, and kept up with their new Maſters 'till they had travelled 150 Miles in a few Days; thoſe that tired by the Way had, according to Cuſtom, the Hatchet buried in their Brains. The *Indian* Family that *Dunſtan* and her Nurſe were to ſerve conſiſted of 12 Perſons, two Men, three Women, and ſeven Children, all *Roman-Catholick* Converts, who ſaid their Prayers according to the *French* Inſtructions conſtantly three Times a Day; their Maſter was tolerably civil to them, but reſolved notwithſtanding to carry them to a Rendezvous of *Savages* beyond *Penacook*, about two hundred Miles from the Place where he lived, in order to their running the Gauntlet through the whole Army, which is the Diſcipline that all new Priſoners undergo. The whole Family were to have the Pleaſure of this Sight, but as they were on their Journey, on the 30th of *April*, a little before Day-break, Mrs. *Dunſtan* obſerving them all in a profound Sleep, encouraged her Nurſe, and an *Engliſh* Youth who had been taken from *Worceſter* a Year and half before to ſtand by her, and aſſiſt her in putting them all to Death; ſo each of them furniſhing themſelves with a Hatchet, they ſtruck it into the Brains of ten of them in the dark, before they could make the leaſt Reſiſtance; one of the Women and a Boy got away, but they cut off the Scalps of the reſt, and brought them to *Boſton*; for which heroick Action they received a Reward of Fifty Pounds from the General Aſſembly, beſides ſeveral Preſents from private Hands to a conſiderable Value.

THE *Savages* continuing their Excurſions, killed one Man at *York*, another at *Hatfield*, a third at *Groton*, and two or three more at *Exeter*, from whence they carried two Children into Captivity; they alſo ſurprized and ſhot Major

Froſt

Froſt and two of his Company as they were coming from Church at *Berwick* on a Lord's-Day to their own Houſe which was about five Miles diſtant; and two others that were in Company having rid Poſt to the Garriſon of *Wells* with the unwelcome News, as they were returning back, fell into an Ambuſcade of the Enemy, and were killed. About the latter End of *June* they killed three Men at *Newichawannick* as they were mowing in the Meadows; A little after a Party of *Indians* killed a Man that ſtood Centinel for his Neighbours while they were at Work in the Marſhes at *Wells*, and having taken another Priſoner, they carry'd him a Mile and a half off, and roaſted him to Death. Three Soldiers of *Saco-Fort* as they were cutting Fire-Wood for the Uſe of the Fort on *Cow-Iſland* were ſhot dead on the Spot, while Lieutenant *Fletcher* with his two Sons who were appointed for their Guard were a fowling in the Woods, but the Lieutenant and his Sons paid dear for their Negligence, for as they were returning to their Companions they fell into an Ambuſh of the Enemy, and were all three taken Priſoners; one of the Sons afterwards made his Eſcape, but the other Son and his Father dyed in Captivity: Theſe and ſeveral other Misfortunes befell the *Engliſh* while there were no Forces on the Frontiers, every Week producing ſome ſurprizing Diſaſter. *Anno* 1697

But the moſt important Action of the Summer is yet behind, the *French* King having a Squadron of Men of War at this Time in the Northern Parts of *America*, the Admiral agreed with the Governour of *Quebec* to make a Deſcent upon the Coaſt of *New-England*, while a Body of *Indians* and *French* ſhould invade that Province by Land; Lieutenant Governour *Stoughton* having Notice of their Deſign did every thing

Anno 1697 thing that a wiſe and prudent Governour could do for the Defence of his Country, he repaired the Forts about *Boſton*, raiſed the Militia throughout the whole Province, and order'd them to be kept under ſtrict Diſcipline; and then ſent Major *March* at the Head of 500 Men to the Eaſtern Frontiers to ſcour the Woods, and obſerve all the Enemy's Motions on that Side. Upon the Major's Arrival the *Indians* retired from the Frontiers, but he purſued them as far as *Caſco-Bay*, having hired ſome Tranſports to accommodate his Men in their Paſſage thither; from *Caſco* he ſailed up further among the Eaſtern Iſlands, and landed *September* 9. on the Banks of *Damaſcotta*-River, near *Corbin-Sounds* a little before Day-break; but before his Men were half aſhore the Enemy came down upon them with a loud Huzza, and gave them a Volley, but without doing any Miſchief; the Major fir'd upon them again in his Turn, and as ſoon as it was Day both Parties engaged; the Commanders of the Tranſports came aſhore to the Aſſiſtance of their Friends, and after a brisk Engagement of ſeveral Hours they drove the Enemy before them to their Canoes, which lay out of Sight, and ſaved them from being all cut in Pieces; in this Action the *Engliſh* had 12 Men killed, and about as many more wounded: Among the former was Capt. *Dyminock* of *Barnſtable*, and among the latter Captain *Philips* of *Charles-Town*. This little Skirmiſh, though of no great Importance in itſelf, broke all the Enemy's Meaſures, and put a Stop to the intended Invaſion of the *French* and *Indians*, as that did to the Deſcent of the Fleet upon the Coaſt, which being ſhatter'd by a Storm at Sea, and having Notice of the Defeat of their Confederate-*Indians*, and of the good Poſture of the *Engliſh* in all Places to receive them, return'd to *Europe*, and gave them no further Diſturbance.

WHILE

WHILE the Army was thus employed in the East a Party of the Enemy plunder'd the Town of *Lancaſter*, *September* 11, and killed 20 Men, among whom was Mr. *Whiting* the Miniſter, and carried away five into Captivity; they likewiſe burnt ſeveral Houſes with two or three ancient People in them, and then retired: After which they were no more heard of 'till the Month of *November*, when they killed a poor Man in the Woods near *Oyſter-River*; which was the laſt Action of the Year. *Anno* 1697

ON the 27th of *March* this Year dyed *Simon Bradſtreet*, Eſq; ſometime Governour of the Colony of the *Maſſachuſets*; and the longeſt Liver of all the firſt Planters of *New-England*; he was born at *Horblin* in *Lincoln-ſhire* in the Year 1603, and educated in *Emmanuel-College*, *Cambridge*, of which he was Fellow. Upon his leaving the Univerſity he became Steward firſt to the Earl of *Lincoln*, and afterwards to the Counteſs of *Warwick*, in which Noble Family he continued 'till he marry'd the Daughter of Mr. *Dudley*, by whoſe Perſwaſion he engaged in the Project of making a Settlement in *New-England*; he came over with the firſt Colony in the Year 1630, and ſerved his Country firſt in Quality of Secretary, and then as Governour, 'till their Charter was taken from them; he was a good Man, but a little too warm in his Zeal againſt the *Anabaptiſts* and *Quakers*, as were almoſt all the Magiſtrates of *New-England* in thoſe Times. After the Revolution in the Year 1689, he reſum'd his Place of Governour again, by the unanimous Invitation of the People and continued in it 'till Sir *William Phips* came over with the new Charter. He was the Father of his Country, and it was obſerved of him, *That when he was almoſt 90 Years old his intellectual Force was hardly abated, but he retained a Vigour and Wiſdom that would have recommended a younger Man* *Anno* 1698

Anno 1698 *Man to the Government of a greater Colony.* He dyed at *Salem* in the 95th Year of his Age; and was interred with as much Solemnity as a Man of his great Merit deſerved.

THE next Winter was one of the hardeſt that has been known in the Memory of Man, and yet in the Month of *February* thirty *Indians* made a Deſcent upon *Andover*, and killed Capt. *Chub* and his Family; they had likewiſe taken Col. *Dudley Bradſtreet* and his Family Priſoners, but being purſued they diſmiſſed them without doing them any Miſchief; but as they paſs'd by *Haverhill* they killed two Perſons, and took two Priſoners. At *Spruce-Creek* they murdered an old Man, and carried his three Sons into Captivity; the old Man was killed in cold Blood after he had ſurrender'd himſelf, by a huge Tawny ſeven Foot high; but the Vengeance of Heaven quickly overtook him; for an Hour or two after, as he was halling his Canoe to Shore with the Butt-End of his Musket, holding the Muzzle in his Hand, the Musket went off, and ſhot him dead upon the Spot. At *Hatfield* four *Indians* kill'd a Man and a Boy in the Meadows, and carried away two Boys into Captivity; Advice of which being ſent to *Deerfield*, they ſent out 12 Men to intercept them as they came up the River, who overtook them at 20 Miles Diſtance; the *Indians* were in their Canoes within a Rod or two of the oppoſite Shore; the *Engliſh* immediately fired at the Canoes, and wounded one of the *Indians* in the Back, whereupon they all jump'd aſhore, and the Boys with them; the wounded *Savage* lay in great Miſery, his Back being broke, endeavouring to tear open his Breaſt, and knock out his own Brains with his Hatchet; the two Boys run from their Maſters to avoid the Fire of the *Engliſh*; whereupon one of the *Indians* took up his Hatchet with a Reſolution to knock them

them on the Head, but as he was making to- Anno
wards them, an *Engliſh* Man from the other 1698
Side of the River levell'd his Piece at him, and ſhot him dead upon the Spot; the Boys upon this leap'd into one of the Canoes, and brought it over to their Friends, who mann'd it with five or ſix of their Number to fetch off the other Canoe which lay at an Iſland not far off, but as they were looſing it from the Shore, the two *Indians* that had deſerted it, lying hid in ſome high Graſs, ſhot at the Canoe, killed one of the *Engliſh* dead upon the Spot, and then run away into the Woods: This was the laſt Blood that was ſpilt in the preſent War.

THE News of the Peace concluded at *Ryſwick* between the Kings of *England* and *France* arrived at *America* in *December* laſt; whereupon the Sieur *Frontenac* Governour of *Canada* ſummoned the Chiefs of the *Indians* together, and told them, he was now no longer at Liberty to ſupport them in their War againſt the *Engliſh*, and therefore adviſed them to deliver up their Captives, and make the beſt Terms for themſelves they could: Upon this a Treaty was ſet on Foot after ſome Time, Major *Convers* and Colonel *Philips* being appointed Commiſſioners on the Part of the *Engliſh*; the Major arrived at *Penobſcott*, *October* 14, and after ſix Days, had a Conference with the chief *Sachems* of the Eaſt, who laid the Blame of their laſt Breach of the Peace on the *French* Jeſuits, and added, that unleſs ſome of them were removed they could not promiſe that the preſent Peace would continue very long. They praiſed the Sieur *Frontenac* as a wiſe and prudent Governour; and declared their Reſolution to obey him as their Father; but that they were willing likewiſe to live peaceably with the *Engliſh*, and *Segamore Saquadock* deſired, in the Name of the reſt, that

if

Anno 1698 if any ill Accident ſhould happen between the two Nations we would not preſently declare War againſt them, but endeavour to compoſe the Difference in an amicable Way.

SOME Time after, Col. *Philips* and Major *Convers* had another Conference with them, and brought them to renew their Subſcription to the Articles of Peace formerly made with them in the Year 1693, with theſe Additions.

"AND whereas notwithſtanding the afore-
" ſaid Submiſſion and Agreement, the
" ſaid *Indians* belonging to the Rivers aforeſaid,
" or ſome of them through the ill Counſel and
" Inſtigation of the *French*, have perpetrated ſun-
" dry Hoſtilities againſt his Majeſty's Subjects
" the *Engliſh*, and have not delivered and return-
" ed home ſeveral *Engliſh* Captives in their
" Hands, as in the ſaid Submiſſion they cove-
" nanted.

" WHEREFORE, we whoſe Names are here-
" unto ſubſcribed, *Segamores*, Captains, and prin-
" cipal Men of the *Indians* belonging to the Ri-
" vers of *Kennebeck*, *Ammonoſcoggin*, *Saco*, and
" Parts adjacent, being ſenſible of our great Of-
" fence and Folly in not complying with the
" aforeſaid Submiſſion and Agreement, and alſo
" of the Sufferings and Miſchiefs that we have
" hereby expoſed ourſelves unto, do in all humble
" and moſt ſubmiſſive Manner caſt ourſelves up-
" on his Majeſty's Mercy for the Pardon of all
" our Rebellions, Hoſtilities, and Violations of
" our Promiſes, praying to be received into his
" Majeſty's Grace and Protection, and, for, and
" on Behalf of ourſelves, and of all the other *In-*
" *dians* belonging to the ſeveral Rivers and Places
" aforeſaid within the Sovereignty of his Ma-
" jeſty of *Great-Britain*, do again acknowledge
" and profeſs our hearty and ſincere Obedience
" to the Crown of *England*, and do ſolemnly re-
" new,

" new, ratify, and confirm all and every of the " Articles and Agreements contain'd in the a- " foresaid recited Commission. And in Testi- " mony hereof we the said Segamores, Captains, " and principal Men have hereunto set our " Marks and Seals at *Casco-Bay* near *Mares-* " *Point*, the 7th Day of *January*, in the tenth " Year of the Reign of his Majesty King *Wil-* " *liam* the Third, *Annoque Domini*, 1698-99. *Anno* 1699

Subscribed by Moxus, *and the rest of the Segamores present.*

In the Presence of James Convers, Cyprian Southack, John Giles *Interpreter*, & Scodook, *alias* Sampson.

UPON the Settlement of Affairs in *Europe* his Majesty was pleas'd to appoint the Earl of *Bellamont* Governour of the Plantations of *New-England* and *New-York*; the Earl went over in the *Deptford* Man of War, and after a tedious Passage arrived at *New-York* in the Month of *May*, 1698, and staid there the rest of the Year; next Spring he met the General Assembly of the *Massachuset-Bay* at *Boston*, and opened it with an Excellent Speech in Praise of the Great Actions of the Immortal King *WILLIAM*; he recommended to the Assembly the repairing of their Fortifications, and furnishing them with Warlike Stores, the settling a free Trade with the *Indians*, and that the Laws they should pass be agreeable to the Laws of *England*. The Assembly presented an *Address* of Thanks to the Earl, for his most Excellent Speech, by their *Speaker*, as the Council did, by Lieutenant-Governour *Stoughton*; and the Sessions ended with a good Harmony and Agreement between all Parties: But whether the

Anno 1699. Governour did not like the People, or the Climate of *Boston*; notwithſtanding all the Reſpects they could ſhew him, he return'd to *New-York* the latter End of the Summer, and made that City the Place of his Reſidence as long as he lived, continuing Mr. *Stoughton* in the Place of Lieutenant-Governour, to manage the Affairs of *New-England* in his Abſence.

THUS after a long and expenſive War, attended with the moſt threatning Commotions among themſelves, the Affairs of the Country were ſettled on a ſolid Baſis; Trade began to flouriſh, and the People rejoyced in the Bleſſings of Peace.

CHAP.

THE *Preſent State of* New-England.

CHAP. XIV.

A General Deſcription of the Country. Of the Climate, Soil, and Product of it. A Deſcription of the Town, and Harbour of Boſton, *with an Account of the moſt conſiderable Towns and Villages in the ſeveral Counties of* New-England. *Of the Inhabitants, their Number, their Religion, their Civil Government, their Cuſtoms, and Manners, their Trade, and Political Intereſts.*

NEW-ENGLAND is that Part of the Continent of *America*, which lyes between the Degrees of 41 and 45 North Latitude. Under this Name is uſually comprehended the Colonies of the *Maſſachuſet-Bay*, *New-Plimouth*, and *Connecticut*; the Provinces of *Main*, *New-Hampſhire*, *Rhode-Iſland*, *Providence-Plantation*, and *Accadia*, or *New-Scotland*. It is

bounded by *Canada* or *New-France* on the North, by *New-York* on the Weſt, and by the Ocean on the South and Eaſt; its Length computed on a North-Eaſt and South-Weſt Line from the River *Kennebeck* to the South-Eaſt Boundaries of *New-York* is about 330 Miles; and its Breadth on a South-Eaſt and North-Weſt Line from *Cape Cod*, to the North-Eaſt Boundaries of *New-York* Government is 190 Miles, but in other Places 'tis not ſo broad. The Coaſt bears Weſt-South-Eaſt, and Eaſt-North-Eaſt, and runs about 160 Leagues in Length, without reckoning the Angles.

THE Situation of this Country being nearer the Equinoctial Line than *England* by 8 or 10 Degrees, their Days and Nights are more equally divided; the Sun riſes at *Boſton*, *June* the 11th, at 4 and 26 Minutes in the Morning, and ſets at 7 and 34 in the Evening: And *December* 13, the ſhorteſt Day in the Year, the Sun riſes at 7 and 35 Minutes in the Morning, and ſets at 4 and 27 in the Afternoon.

The Climate. THE Climate of *New-England* is not ſo temperate as ours in *England*, their Summers being ſhorter and hotter, and their Winters longer and colder; nor is it ſo mild and regular as thoſe Parts of *Italy* and *France*, that lie in the ſame Parallel in *Europe*; which, as Naturaliſts have obſerved, is owing to thoſe vaſt freſh-Water Lakes that lye behind it on the North-Weſt ſide of the Country, which being conſtantly froze over in the Month of *November*, occaſion that early Winter which is commonly felt in all the adjacent Country, and is one principal Cauſe of thoſe cold North-Weſt Winds that continually blow there in the Winter, and are ſo fatal to Mariners on the *New-England* Coaſt in that Seaſon of the Year: 'Tis certain however that the Weather is more ſettled than in *England*, for it is common with them to have a clear and dry Sky for ſix Weeks

Weeks or two Months together. In the Winter the Ground is for the moſt Part cover'd with Snow from *November*, to *February*, and in the Summer the Heats are ſo exceſſive in the Months of *June*, *July*, and *Auguſt*, that when a Fire has been accidentally made in the Woods, and not carefully put out, it has run like Wild-Fire, and burnt the Turf and Trees over ſeveral Acres of Ground, 'till Rain has fallen to extinguiſh it. In theſe Months the People are very much troubled with *Muſketoes*, or little Flies like Gnats, *Bugs*, and other Inſects that delight in Heat; but upon the whole, the Air of *New-England* is very healthy, and agrees with our *Engliſh* Conſtitutions. The Summers are not ſo hot but Men may endure the Heat, nor the Winters ſo cold, but with moderate Exerciſe they may bear the ſharpeſt Air for a whole Day together.

The Soil.

WHEN the *Engliſh* firſt landed on the Coaſt the Country look'd like one vaſt Wood, the *Indians* having only cleared here and there a ſmall Spot of Ground for planting Corn; but upon a narrower Survey they found every three or four Miles a fruitful Valley, with a clear freſh Rivulet or Brook gliding through it, and theſe again were ſurrounded with vaſt woody Hills, which afforded a very agreeable Proſpect. The Land from *De la Ware-Bay* to *Cape Cod* is low and flat, like the Shires of *Eſſex*, *Suffolk*, *Norfolk*, *Cambridge*, *Huntington* and *Lincolnſhire*; but the North-Eaſt-Part of the Country is more hilly, reſembling the Counties of *Hampſhire*, *Dorſetſhire*, *Devon*, and *Cornwall*; the inner Part of the Country is for the moſt Part Upland, but near the Coaſts 'tis low and marſhy. The Soil is generally fruitful, but in ſome Places more ſo, than in others; About the *Maſſachuſet-Bay* 'tis as flat and black as in any Part of *England*, and conſequently as fruitful. The firſt Planters found the Graſs in the Vallies above an Ell in Height; and conſequently, pretty rank, for

want of cutting, but their Cattle eat it, and thrive very well with it. Mr. *Higginſon* has a remarkable Story * relating to the Fruitfulneſs of the Soil in the *Maſſachuſett-Bay*; "Credible Per-"ſons have informed me, (ſays he) and the Party "himſelf avouched the Truth of it to me, That "of the ſetting 13 Gallons of Corn, he had 52 "Hogſheads Increaſe, each Hogſhead holding ſeven "Buſhels of *London* Meaſure; that he ſold every "Buſhel to the *Indians* for ſo much Beaver, as was "worth 18 Shillings: So that of 13 Gallons of "Corn, which coſt him 6*s.* 8*d.* he made about "32*l.* in a Year's Time." But tho' this might be true of ſome particular Spots of Ground, 'tis certain the Soil in general is not ſo fruitful, nor capable of producing ſuch Crops of Corn, as the more Southern Plantations of *Carolina*, *Maryland*, and *New-York*. The Uplands more eſpecially being for the moſt Part Gravel, ſandy, or ſomewhat ſtronger, inclining to a Clay-Ground, can but little more than maintain themſelves.

Lakes and Rivers.

THERE are ſix great Lakes to the Weſt and North-Weſt of *New-England*, called *Ontarius*, *Erius*, *Hurons*, *Illinovecks*, *Nadoneſſious*, and *Outolibis*, all which have a Communication with each other in the Order they are mentioned, and fall into the River of *Canada*, or St. *Lawrence*, making the Stream thereof very rapid; ſome of theſe Lakes are 100 Leagues long, and 30 broad. There are alſo ſix leſſer Lakes of 10 or 20 Leagues in Length, as, *Champlain*, St. *Peter*, *Tabitibis*, *Piſcontagamy*, St. *Jean*, and *Timagagring*, which likewiſe fall into *Canada*-River. There are ſome Rivers within the Limits of *New-England* that are navigable for ſeveral Leagues, and would be ſo much further, were it not for the Falls, as, *Piſcataqua*, *Connecticut*, *Merri-*

* New-England *Plantation* 1630. p. 4.

mack,

mack, and *Kennebeck*-Rivers, *&c.* which are ſtored with Plenty of very good Fiſh. There are likewiſe ſeveral freſh Springs, and ſmall Rivulets that water the ſeveral Parts of the Country; and where theſe are wanting, you may ſink a Well, and find freſh Water within 10 or 12 Foot of the Surface of the Earth, in moſt Parts of *New-England*. Several Mines of Lead, Iron, and Copper have been lately diſcover'd, which, if encouraged, may turn to a very good Account, and enable the King of *England* to furniſh his Subjects with thoſe Mettals from his own Provinces.

New-England produces very good Timber; the Woods and Swamps abound with * Oak, Elm, Aſh, Cypreſs, Pine, Cheſnut, Walnut, Cedar, Aſpin, Beech, Fir, Saſſafras, and Sumach, with all other Sorts of Trees that grow in *England*. Their Fir and Deal is of an extraordinary Growth, for Maſts, Yards, and Planks; the Sumach is of Uſe to Dyers and Tanners; the ſhe-Cedar produces ſweet Gums: But the Treaſure and Glory of their Woods is the Monarch-Oak, the Spruce and Fir-Tree, which produce Pitch, Tar, Roſin, and Turpentine; So that the Navy of *England* might be ſupplied from hence with all Sorts of Naval Stores, at a cheaper Rate than from the *Baltick*; 'tis owing to this, that more Ships have been built in this Province, than in all the other Parts of *America* put together. The Dwarf-Oak grows wild here, and was ſent hence into *England* to be cultivated. The Spruce and Fir-Trees yield a Gum, which hangs like Drops, or little Bladders on the Bark, of a very healing Nature, which in Smell and Taſte very much reſembles the Balm of *Gilead*; theſe Excreſcences are

The Product of New-England.

Trees.

* Wood's New-England *Proſpect*, p. 13.

at firſt of a Conſiſtence like Turpentine, but afterwards harden into a Gum. In ſhort, *New-England* produces a prodigious Plenty of Wood for building and firing, and all other Uſes of Life.

Fruit. BESIDES, the Country abounds with all Sorts of Roots for the Table, as Turnips, Parſnips, Carrots, Raddiſhes, *&c.* which are both larger and ſweeter than in *England*, tho' their Seeds were originally carried thence; as alſo, thoſe for Pompions, Muſmelons, Cucumbers, and Onions, which abound here; but the Seed of the Water-Melons, and Squaſhes, which grow here in great Plenty, are ſuppoſed to be brought from *Portugal*, or ſome other Parts of *Europe*.

ALL Sorts of Herbs grew wild among the Graſs, when the Planters firſt took Poſſeſſion of the Country, as, Penny-Royal, Winter-Savory, Sorrel, Brook-Lime, Liver-Wort, Charvil and Water-Creſſes; alſo Leaks, and divers Sorts of Phyſical Herbs; beſides a vaſt Variety of Fruit, as Grapes, Strawberries, Rasberries, Currans, Cheſnuts, Filberds, Walnuts, Small-Nuts, Hurtle-Berries, and Hawes of White-Horn, as big as *Engliſh* Cherries, which grew all over the Woods, and without all Queſtion are ſince very much improved.

'TIS generally obſerved, that all Sorts of Orchard-Fruit, as Apples, Pears, Plumbs, Cherries, Peaches, *&c.* in *New-England* far exceed the ſame Kinds in *England* for Beauty, Largeneſs, and Sweetneſs, tho' carried originally from thence, excepting ſuch Fruit only as has the Advantage of a Wall; there are indeed ſeveral Sorts of Fruit in *England*, which are not to be found in *New-England*, but they are continually ſending for them over, ſo that every Year produces new Improvements.

Plants. THERE is a great Variety of Plants in this Country differing from the *Europeans*, of which Dr. *C. Mather* has long ſince promiſed the World a Catalogue and Deſcription: In the

the mean Time he has given the Royal Society a Specimen of ſome of them; he informs them of a Plant efficacious in curing Inflammations, called *Antieriſypelas*, of another, called *Partridge-Berries*, excellent in curing the Dropſy; of a Root called the *Bleeding-Root*, which cures the Jaundice; of a Thiſtle called the *Boar-Thiſtle*, very ſhort and prickly, with a large and long Root; which with a Decoction of a Root called the *Cancer-Root*, and a Sort of *Devil's-Bit*, cures the King's-Evil, tho' very far gone, a ſmall Quantity being drank every Day, and the bruiſed Roots applied to the ſcrophulous Tumour. But of theſe *American* Plants the Dr. promiſes a larger Crop. †

Indian Corn.

The *Indian* Corn being that which is moſtly planted in this Country, it will not be improper to deſcribe the Culture of it, as we find it communicated to the Royal Society by Mr. *Winthrop*.

* "The Natives call it *Weachin*, and in ſome "Southern Parts of *America* 'tis known by the "the Name of *Maiis*, or *Maize*. The Ear is a "Span long, compoſed of eight Rows of Grain, "or more, according to the Goodneſs of the "Ground, about thirty Grains in a Row; 'tis of "various Colours, as red, white, yellow, blew, "olive, greeniſh, black, ſpeckled, ſtrip'd, &c. "ſometimes in the ſame Field, and in the ſame "Ear, but the white and yellow are the moſt "common; the Ear is defended from the Cold "and Storms by ſtrong, thick Husks; the Stalk "grows ſix or eight Foot high; that of *New-En-*"*gland* is not quite ſo tall as that of *Virginia*, "and at *Canada* 'tis ſhorter than at *New-England*;

† *Philoſophical Tranſactions* Vol. XXIX. p. 63.

* Lowthorp's *Abridgment*, *Philoſophical Tranſactions*, Vol II. p. 630.

"like

" 'tis jointed like a Cane, is full of ſweet Juice
" like the Sugar-Cane, and a Syrup as ſweet as
" Sugar may be made out of it, as has been often
" tried: At every Joint there are long Leaves or
" Flags, and at the Top a Branch of Flowers like
" Rye-Bloſſom. 'Tis generally planted from the
" middle of *April* to the middle of *May*. In the
" Northern Parts the *Mohawk*-Corn is not planted
" 'till *June*, and yet is ripe in Seaſon; the Stalks
" of this Sort are ſhort, the Ears near the Bottom,
" and are of ſeveral Colours. The Manner of
" planting Maize is in Rows at equal Diſtances
" every Way of about five or ſix Feet; the Earth is
" open'd with a Hough four Inches deep, and four
" or five Grains are thrown into it, at a little Di-
" ſtance from one another in the Breadth of a
" Hough; then they are covered with Earth: If
" two grow the Crop will anſwer. The Corn is
" weeded at a Hand's Length, and the Earth is
" looſned about it with a Hough; this Labour muſt
" be repeated as the Weeds come up; when the
" Stalk begins to grow high, a little Earth ſhould
" be drawn about it, and on putting forth the Ear
" ſo much as to make a little Hill like a Hop-Hill.
" 'Tis ripe about the Middle of *September*; it muſt
" be ſtripp'd as ſoon as gather'd, unleſs 'tis laid
" thin to prevent its growing mouldy, or ſprout-
" ing; the common Way is to weave, or brede
" the Ear together in long Traces, by ſome Part
" of the Husk left thereon, which is called Tracing:
" Theſe Traces are hung upon Bearers within
" Doors, and will keep ſo all Winter good and
" ſweet; the *Indians* threſh it as they gather it,
" dry it well on Matts in the Sun, and bury it in
" Holes in the Ground lined with Moſs or Matts
" which are their Barns. The *Engliſh*, of late, plant
" it with the Help of the Plough; they turn up
" ſingle Furrows ſix Foot Diſtance, then plough
" a-croſs at the ſame Diſtance, throw in the Corn

" where

" where theſe meet, and cover it with a Hough, or " run another Furrow over it with the Plough.

" The *Indians* boil it 'till it becomes tender, " and eat it with Fiſh, or Veniſon, inſtead of " Bread; ſometimes they bruiſe it in Mortars, and " ſo boil it. The moſt uſual Way is to parch it " in Aſhes, ſtirring it ſo artificially, as to be very " tender without burning; this they ſift and beat " in Mortars into fine Meal, which they eat dry, " or mix'd with Water, and call *Nocake*. The *En-* " *gliſh* mix it into a very ſoft Paſte, and make " Bread of it, which they bake all Night, or all " Day. The beſt Sort of Food that is made of it " is called *Samp*; to make it, the Corn is watered " half an Hour, beat in a Mortar to the Bigneſs " of Rice, ſifted, boil'd, and then eat with Milk, " or Butter and Sugar, which is a very pleaſant, " wholeſome Diet; this was the moſt uſual Diet " of the firſt Planters, and is ſtill in Uſe among " them, as well in Fevers, as in Health.

" The *Engliſh* have alſo made good Beer of it, " by Malting it, or making it into Bread; when " they Malt it, it muſt chill both Ways, Root and " Blade; to do which, they heap it up at a conve- " nient Time, then take away the Top of the Earth " in a Garden-Field two or three Inches deep, after " which they cover the Ground with the Corn, and " the Corn with the Earth; when the Plat is green " all over with the Corn-Sprouts, which will be in " about ten Days, it muſt be taken up, the Earth " ſhaken from it, and dried, then waſh'd, and dry'd " again in a Kiln: This makes the Malt, and that " Beer, which will be pleaſant, wholeſome, and of " a brown Colour. The Beer made of Bread is " more durable, and altogether as pleaſant: To " do it, they cut the Bread into great Lumps as " big as a Man's Fiſt, maſh, and manage it as " they do Malt, adding, or omitting Hops, as is " deſired.

Beans

Beans. Beans of all kinds grow in *New-England* but the greateſt Plenty is of the Kidney-kind; but neither theſe nor the *Indian* Corn grow wild now, tho' both were found among the Natives when the *Engliſh* firſt went thither. The *Indians* have a Tradition, that a Crow brought the firſt Bean, and a Black-Bird the firſt Grain of *Indian* Corn into thoſe Parts; for which Reaſon thoſe Birds are accounted ſacred by them, tho' they are ſo miſchievous, that the *Engliſh* contrive all Ways they can think of to deſtroy them.

Fowls. There is no Country almoſt where there is greater Variety of Fowl, both wild and tame, than in *New-England*; as, Brants, Partridges, Turkies, Ducks, Geeſe, Herons, Storks, Heathcocks, Cormorants, Swans, Widgeons, Doppers, Black-Birds, and Barn-Door Poultry. Dr. *C. Mather* ſays, they have wild Turkies of 50 or 60 Pound Weight, and vaſt Flights of Pigeons, which come and depart at certain Seaſons of the Year. *

Mr. *Joſſelyn* adds, That he has ſeen a Flight of Pigeons in the Spring, and at *Michaelmas*, when they return to the Southward, that has reached four or five Miles in Length, and darkned the very Sun; but of late they are very much diminiſhed. †

There is no leſs Plenty of all Sorts of *European* Cattle, as Cows, Sheep, Goats, Hogs and Horſes; the latter are generally of a ſmall Breed, not much larger than our *Welch* Horſes, but very ſerviceable; many of them are exported to *Barbadoes*, and the *Leward*-Iſlands for Saddle-Horſes, and ſome for Draught.

---

* *Philoſophical Tranſactions* Vol. xxix. p. 64. † p. 99.

The Beaſts of the Country are Bears, * Luſetans or Ounces, Foxes, Squunks, Ferrets, and Wolves, which are a Species of wild Dogs, like our ordinary Curs in *England*; the *Indians* tame them when they are young, but they make a hideous Yelling againſt rainy Weather; beſides theſe, there are Elks, Deer, Hares, Rabbits, Beavers, Otters, Minks, Rackoons, Muſquaſh, Sables, *&c.* The firſt Planters carried on a profitable Trade with the *Indians* for the Skins of theſe Animals, but 'tis now mightily decreaſed, by the Diſuſe of Beaver, and other Skins of the Fell-Mongers Manufacture. But the moſt valuable and wonderful Animal of *New-England* is the *Moſe*, which Mr. *Joſſelyn* ſays is about 12 Foot high, with fair Horns, and broad Palms; his Body is about the Bigneſs of a Bull's, his Neck reſembles a Stag's, his fore-Legs are longer than his hind, his † Fleſh is of a courſe, big Grain, and eats like Beef; it commonly brings three Calves at a Fall, and timelier than our *Engliſh* Deer by two Months. The Time of hunting this Animal is the Winter, when they run him down ſometimes in half a Day, but they are moſt commonly a whole Day about it; the Ground being then generally cover'd with Snow, the Beaſt ſinks very heavy every Step he takes: when the Sports-Men get up with him they ſhoot at him, and he walks ſlowly after he is wounded, 'till ſpent with Loſs of Blood, he falls like a ruined Building, making the Earth ſhake under him. *Beaſts.*

When the *Engliſh* firſt took Poſſeſſion of the Country it abounded with great Numbers of venomous Animals and Vermin, as is common in Wilderneſſes and Places over-grown with Woods; but *Viperous Animals.*

* *Relations of Two Voyages to* New-England *by Mr.* Joſſelyn, *Gent.* London, 1674, *p.* 82. *where the Reader will find a Deſcription of the ſeveral Beaſts,* &c. *here mentioned.*

† Lowther's *Philoſophical Tranſactions*, Vol. II. p. 437.

the

the Ground being now pretty well cleared, thoſe Animals are ſeldom ſeen: The moſt noted and dangerous is the *Rattle-Snake*, which is four or five Foot long, and has a Rattle conſiſting of about 20 looſe Rings in its Tail, with which it makes a Noiſe for Aſſiſtance, when it apprehends itſelf in Danger; ſo that they who attack one, muſt have a Care that they are not bit by another at the ſame Time. Theſe Rattle-Snakes are not ſo much afraid of a Man, as others of the ſame Species; their Venome is ſaid to lye in a Bag in the Hollow of a forked Tooth, which breaks when they bite, and infuſes ſo much Poyſon into the Wound as proves mortal in a few Hours, if not remedied. They are ſlow in their Motion, and curling their Bodies up with their Heads in the middle, throw themſelves out at Length when they bite the Object of their Indignation.

THE Black-Snake is much longer and ſwifter of Motion, 'tis of an amphibious Kind, not ſo venomous as the Rattle-Snake, but more ſo, than the common Graſs-Snakes of ſeveral Colours.

THERE are ſtill vaſt Numbers of Frogs, Toads, Owls, Batts, and other Vermin upon the Borders of the uncleared Part of the Country, which make ſuch a hideous Noiſe on Summer-Evenings, as would terrify thoſe that are not us'd to it. You may hear it at ſeveral Miles Diſtance, as plainly as if it was within a Quarter of a Mile. In the Midſt of this Noiſe is often heard a Bird that ſeldom or never ſings, but in the Night, called, *Whip poor Will*, becauſe it ſeems to chime thoſe Words in a loud melancholy Tone.

Fiſh.

THE Sea-Coaſt, as well as the ſeveral Rivers of *New-England* afford a vaſt Variety of excellent Fiſh both for Food and Traffick, as Cod, Salmon, Sturgeon, Thornback, Porpus, Haddocks, Herrings, Mackerell, Oyſters, Muſcles, Smelts, Eels, Lampries, Sharks, Seals, Crampus

Crampus, Whales, *&c.* As for Cod, the Fiſhing-Voyages made yearly from *England* for this Purpoſe ſufficiently prove their Plenty; beſides, the Bays and Creeks are full of Lobſters, Scallops, Crabs, Cockles, Praunes; and the Sea is always full of Fiſh on the Coaſts of *New-England* both in fair Weather and foul, but the beſt Months for Fiſhing, are *March*, *April*, *May*, and *June*; 6 or 7 *Starfiſh* were formerly taken near the Shore off of † *Nantucket*, of which Mr. *Winthrop* Governour of *Connecticut*-Colony gave the Royal Society an Account; he obſerves, that this Fiſh divides itſelf into no leſs than 81920 ſmall Parts, by Branchings, and is one of the moſt wonderful Works of the Creation.

SOME Years ſince there ſtranded on the Coaſts of *New-England* a dead Whale of the Sort which they call *Trumpo*, having Teeth like thoſe of a Mill, its Mouth at a good Diſtance from, and under the Noſe or Trunk; and ſeveral Partitions in the Noſe, out of which ran a thin oily Subſtance which candied; the Remainder being a thick fat Subſtance was ſcraped out, and is ſaid to be the *Sperma Ceti*. Theſe Whales are to be met with betwen *New-England* and *New-York*, where they might be caught 8 or 9 Months in the Year; but the Whale-Fiſhery of *New-England* is now very much neglected, the *Newfound-land*-Trade having in a Manner engroſſed it; but ſtill there are vaſt Quantities of all ſorts of Fiſh taken on the Coaſt, ſalted, and ſent to the ſeveral Parts of *Europe*, and the Sugar-Plantations for the Subſiſtance of their white Servants and Negroes.

HAVING thus ſurvey'd the Country in general, it will be proper to go through the ſeveral Counties, and obſerve the moſt remarkable Things in them.

† *Ibid.* p. 833.

THE

General Diviſion of the Country.

THE Reader has obſerved in the Courſe of this Hiſtory, that beſides the leſſer Settlements of *New-Hampſhire* and *Rhode-Iſland*, there were four grand Colonies in *New-England*, namely, *Plimouth*-Colony, the *Maſſachuſet-Bay*, *Connecticut*, and *New-Haven*; which had their diſtinct Charters from the Crown, to encourage their Settlement in a barbarous Country; but in the Reign of King *James* II. their Charters were vacated by a *Quo Warranto* under various Pretences, which ſufficed to juſtify the doing it at that Time; the *Plimouth* and *Maſſachuſet*-Colonies being the largeſt, and moſt conſiderable, were the firſt that felt this arbitrary Invaſion of their Privileges, but the reſt of the Colonies in Effect underwent the ſame Fate, for they were all put into one Commiſſion by King *James* II. under the Government of Sir *Edmond Andros*, but the Proceſs againſt ſome of their Charters not having been executed in Form before the happy Revolution; the leſſer Colonies of *Connecticut* and *Rhode-Iſland* reſumed their ancient Government; while thoſe of *Plimouth* and the *Maſſachuſets* humbly apply'd to King *William* and Queen *Mary*, for the Reſtoration of theirs; but their Majeſties were pleas'd in the Year 1692, by a new Charter to unite the two Governments into one, by the Name of the *Province of the Maſſachuſet-Bay*, for the better Support of the Dignity of the Government.

THE Province of the *Maſſachuſet-Bay* contains beſides its ancient Limits, the whole Juriſdiction of *Plimouth*, the Province of *Main*, and the Territory of *Accadia*, or *Nova Scotia*; in the *Plimouth* Diviſion there are three Counties, *Plimouth*, *Barnſtable*, and *Briſtol*; in the ancient *Maſſachuſet*-Diviſion four, *Suffolk*, *Middleſex*, *Eſſex* and *Hampſhire*.

THE United Colonies of *Connecticut* and *New-Haven*, are a diſtinct Government, by virtue of a Charter granted them by King *Charles* II. 1664, and

and contain four Counties, *Hartford*, *New-London*, *New-Haven*, and *Fairfield*.

New-Hampſhire-Government has no Charter, their Governour and Council being appointed by the Crown of *England*, but their Governour is always the ſame with the *Maſſachuſets*: Within the Limits of this Province is the County of *Main*, which belongs to the *Maſſachuſet-Bay*, and ſends Members to the General Aſſembly.

Rhode-Iſland and *Providence-Plantation* are likewiſe a diſtinct Government, but are always reckon'd a Part of *New-England*.

THE moſt Northern Territory that belongs to *New-England* is *Nova Scotia*, in which the only conſiderable Place is *Annapolis Royal*, formerly known by the Name of *Port-Royal*; 'tis but a ſmall Town, with a few Houſes of two Stories high, but has a very fine Baſin two Leagues long, and one broad, capable of receiving a Thouſand Sail of Ships; at the Entrance of the Baſin there is 16 or 18 Fathom Water on one Side, and 6 or 7 on the other, the Channel being divided by the Iſle of *Chevres*, which ſtands in the middle; there's excellent Anchorage all over the Baſin, and at the Bottom lies a Point of Land which parts two Rivers where the Tide riſes 10 or 12 Foot, and on each Side are pleaſant Meadows. The Place ſubſiſt by the Traffick of Skins, which the Savages bring down in Exchange for *European* Goods; Col. *Nicholſon* had the Honour to take it from the *French* by Capitulation, *October* 5, 1710, and by the Treaty of *Utrecht* it was yielded with the reſt of *Nova Scotia* to the *Britiſh* Crown for ever. 'Tis a good Barrier to *New-England*, not only as it puts the *French* at a greater Diſtance from them, but as it will prevent in a great Meaſure their aſſiſting the Eaſtern *Indians* in Time of War.

THE Iſle of *Cape Breton* was formerly reckoned a Part of *Nova Scotia* being included in K. *James*

the *Firſt*'s Patent; and the Queen, by her Inſtructions to the Duke of *Shrewsbury*, demanded it as ſuch in the late Treaty of *Utrecht*, but it was baſely yielded up to the *French* by the 13th Article of that Treaty, though it be a Place of the laſt Importance to our *Engliſh* Settlements, not only as it commands the Entrance into St. *Lawrence*'s-*Bay*, and by Conſequence covers all *French Canada*, but as the *French* may from hence diſturb our *Newfoundland*-Fiſhery whenſoever they pleaſe.

The next Province is *New-Hampſhire*, which is bounded by *Kennebeck*-River on the Eaſt, and *Merrimack*-River on the Weſt; without the Limits of this Province to the Eaſtward formerly ſtood *William* and *Henry*-Fort on the Banks of *Pemmaquid*-River about 40 Rod from High-Water Mark; it was built by Sir *William Phips* in the Heart of the Enemy's Country, and was the beſt Fortification in the *Engliſh America*, but in the Year 1696 it was betrayed into the Hands of the *French*, and demoliſhed; the River on which it ſtood runs 40 or 50 Miles up into the Country.

The moſt conſiderable Towns in *New-Hampſhire* are,

Dover,	*Exeter* and
Portſmouth,	*Hampton*.

In the midſt of this Province is the County of *Main*, which as I obſerv'd before, belongs to the *Maſſachuſets*, and contains the following conſiderable Towns; thoſe with this (*) Mark before them ſend Members to the General Aſſembly at *Boſton*.

* *Falmouth*,	* *York*,
Scarborough,	* *Kittery*,
* *Wells*,	* *Berwick*,
Hedeck or *Newcaſtle*,	The Iſles of *Shoales*,
* *Edgar-Town*.	* *Biddiford*.

Most

Most of these Towns have some small Fortifications to prevent the Incursions of the Eastern *Indians* who might otherwise over-run the Country in 24 Hours. Six Miles to the East of *Saco*, or *Scarborough* is the Town of *Black-Point*, Eastward of which are the Towns of *Kennebeck* and *Sagadehock*, in all which Places there are Stages for Fishermen: On the Banks of the River *Saco* was a little Fort mounted with 10 or 12 Guns, built in the last War to keep the Eastern *Indians* in Awe. In the Town of *Wells* were above 100 Families before the breaking out of the said War, but before the End of it the Town was in a Manner depopulated.

There are several fine Rivers in this County, as the Rivers of *Kennebeck*, *Sagadehock*, *Casco*, *Saco*, or *Spurnwinck*, *Kenebunck*, *York*, and *Piscataqua*; some of which are navigable for several Leagues up the Country; there are likewise several good Harbours in it, as *Cape-Porpus*, *Winter-Harbour*, *Piscataqua*, and *Casco-Bay*; and several Islands on the Coast, some of which are 10 Miles in Length; the In-land Part of the Country is high and mountainous, and consequently barren, but upon the Coast and by the River's Side 'tis tolerably fruitful; the chief Trade of the Inhabitants is in Beaver, Lumber, and Fish.

The inferior Court of Common Pleas is held at *Portsmouth*, the first *Thursdays* in *March*, *June*, *September*, and *December*, the superior Court the second *Tuesdays* in *February* and *August*.

Southward of *New-Hampshire* is the Province of the *Massachuset-Bay*, which receives its Name from the *Indian* Nation that inhabited those Parts before the *English* took Possession of the Country; it was customary among the Savages to give Names to their little Nations or Clans, from some remarkable Hill, River, or Spring about which they lived, but whether this Name had its

Origin from the *Maſſachuſet*-River now called *Charles-River*, or from a high Hill called *Beacon-Hill*, on the South-Weſt Side of the *Peninſula* on which *Boſton* ſtands is not abſolutely certain, tho' the latter ſeems more probable, from the Account I have received from a learned Gentleman of *Boſton*, whoſe Words are theſe; "The Sachem or "Segamore, who governed the *Indians* in this Part "of the Country, when the *Engliſh* came firſt hi-"ther, had his Seat on a ſmall Hill or Upland, "containing perhaps an Acre and half, about two "Leagues to the Southward of *Boſton*, fronting "*Mount Bay*, and back'd with a large Tract of "Salt Meadow; which Hill or *Hummoth* is now in "Poſſeſſion of Capt. *John Billings*, and lies in the "Shape of an *Indian* Arrow's Head, which Arrow-"Heads were called in their Language *Mos*; or "*Mons*, with an *O Naſal*, and a Hill in their "Language is *Wetuſet*, pronounced according to "us *Wechuſet*; hence this great Sachem's Seat was "called *Moſwetuſet*, which ſignifies *a Hill in the "ſhape of an Arrow's Head*, and his Subjects "the *Moſwetuſet-Indians*, from whence with a ſmall "Variation of the Word, the Province received "the Name of *Maſſachuſet*.

THE Boundaries of this Province are *Merrimack-River* on the North, the Ocean on the Eaſt and South; and the Provinces of *Connecticut* and *New-York* on the Weſt.

THE moſt Northern County is *Eſſex*, which contains the following Towns, thoſe with this (*) Mark before them ſend Members to the General Aſſembly.

* *Amesbury*,	* *Boxford*,
* *Salisbury*,	* *Rowley*,
* *Haverhill*,	** *Ipſwich*,
** *Newbury*,	* *Topsfield*,

Brad-

* *Bradford*,	* *Marblehead*,
* *Gloceſter*,	* *Lyn*,
* *Manchester*,	* *Wenham*,
* *Beverly*,	* *Andover*.
** *Salem*,	

The chief Town in this County is *Salem*, where is one of the fineſt built Churches in the Country; 'tis ſituate on a Plain between two Rivers, and has two Harbours, Winter-Harbour and Summer-Harbour; here the Planters of the *Maſſachuſet*-Colony made their firſt Settlement; the inferiour Court is kept here the laſt *Tueſdays* in *June* and *December*; and the ſuperior, the ſecond *Tueſday* in *November*. Northward of *Salem* is the high Promontory *Trabigzanda*, now called *Cape Anne*, a Place of Fiſhing, and a Harbour for Ships. A little higher is *Ipſwich*, a large Town ſituate by the Side of a fine River; the inferiour Court is kept here the laſt *Tueſday* in *March*, and the ſuperior the third *Tueſday* in *May*. At the Mouth of the River *Merrimack*, *Newbury* is pleaſantly ſituated, where Abundance of Sturgeon are taken and pickled after the Manner uſed in the *Baltick*; the Society for propagating the Goſpel after the Manner of the Church of *England* have a Miſſionary here, to whom they allow 60 *l.* a Year. Over-againſt *Newbury* on the other Side of *Merrimack*-River lyes *Salisbury*, where there is a Ferry, the River between the two Towns being half a Mile broad.

Four Miles Southward of *Salem* is *Marblehead*, where there is a ſmall Harbour, and a rocky Shore; the Society for propagating the Goſpel after the Manner of the Church of *England*, have a Miſſionary here, to whom they allow 50 *l.* a Year; Southward of *Marblehead* is the Town of *Lyn* ſituate in the Bottom of a Bay near a River, which on the breaking up of the Winter empties itſelf with a rapid Torrent into the Sea.

THE Soil of this County is not very fertile, except it be near the Coaſt, where the moſt conſiderable Towns are built for the Convenience of Fiſhery; 'tis watered on the North-Eaſt by the great River *Merrimack*, which were it not barr'd in ſome Places would be navigable for a great many Leagues; a little above one of the Falls of this River at a Place called *Ammuskeag*, is a huge Rock in the midſt of the Stream, on the Top of which are a great Number of Pits made exactly round like Barrels or Hogſheads of different Capacities, ſome of which are capable of holding ſeveral Tons; the Natives * know nothing of the making them, but the neighbouring *Indians* uſed to hide their Proviſions here in their Wars with the *Maquas*, affirming that God had cut them out for that Purpoſe, but they ſeem plainly to be artificial.

THE next County is *Middleſex*, in which are the following Towns.

Middleſex-County.

* *Billerica*,	* *Medford*,
* *Cambridge*,	* *Newton*,
** *Charles-Town*,	*Oxford*,
* *Chelmsford*,	* *Reading*,
* *Concord*,	* *Sherburn*,
* *Lexington*,	* *Stow*,
* *Grotton*,	* *Sudbury*,
* *Lancaſter*,	* *Eaſt Watertown*,
* *Marlborough*,	* *Weſton*,
* *Malden*,	* *Woburn*,
* *Framingham*,	* *Worceſter*.

THE chief Town of this County is *Cambridge*, at firſt called *New Town*, ſituated on the Northern Branch of *Charles-River*. There are ſeveral fine Streets, and good Houſes in it, beſides a flouriſhing Academy, conſiſting of two ſpacious Colleges

* *Philoſophical Tranſactions* Vol. xxix. p. 70.

built

built of Brick, called by the Names of *Harvard-College*, and *Stoughton-Hall*, which are both under the Government of one Preſident, five Fellows, and a Treaſurer; the learned and ingenious Mr. *John Leverett*, Grandſon of the famous Governour *Leverett*, is now Preſident of this Seminary, and is a Gentleman every Way equal to the Poſt he has the Honour to fill; the Academy is at preſent in a very flouriſhing Condition, being encreaſed within theſe laſt 30 Years from 40 to more than 120 Reſident Students, inſomuch that they have built this Year an additional Hall to the two former; 'tis a double Building with a double Front like the firſt College, which it faces, and is three Stories high, beſides the Roof.

I have given a particular Account of the Foundation of this Univerſity, and of the Publick Library under the Year 1637, and ſhall therefore refer the Reader back to it; having only theſe two Things to add, That they ſtill want Endowments for the reading of Publick Lectures in the College by Profeſſors of the ſeveral Sciences, after the Manner of the Univerſities of *Europe*; and that their Library is very defective in modern Authors, which may be one Reaſon why the Stile and Manner of the *New-England* Writers does not equal that of the *Europeans*: I would therefore recommend it to the Gentlemen of Eſtates in *New-England* who owe their Education to this College; and to all generous Lovers of Learning in theſe Parts of the World, to endeavour to ſupply this Defect, that the Clergy of *New-England* may not only be renowned for Learning, but for Humanity and Politeneſs.

This Fountain of Learning is now capable of ſupplying the whole Province with wiſe and learned Men; their Councellors, their Judges, their Miniſters, their School-Maſters, and the Gentlemen of the General Aſſembly owe their Education to

it; nay, the Influences of this Seminary have reached the neighbouring Provinces, many of whoſe preſent Miniſters and School-Maſters were educated in it.

THE inferior Court is held here the ſecond *Tueſday* in *September*, and the ſuperior the laſt *Tueſday* in *July*.

Charles-Town is not inferior to *Cambridge* in Number of Inhabitants, and exceeds it much in Reſpect of Trade, being ſituated between two Rivers, *Miſtick-River* and *Charles-River*, and parted from *Boſton* only by the latter, over which there is a Ferry ſo well tended, that a Bridge is ſcarce wanted, except in Winter, when the Ice will neither bear, nor ſuffer a Boat to move through it, and tho' the River be much broader above the Town, it is not wider in the Ferry-Paſſage than the *Thames* between *London* and *Southwark*; the Profits of the Ferry belong to *Harvard*-College. The Town is ſo large as to take up all the Space between the two Rivers, 'tis beautified with a handſome large Church, a Market-Place by the River-ſide, and two long Streets leading down to it; the inferior Court is kept here the ſecond *Tueſday* in *March* and *December*, and the ſuperior Court the laſt *Tueſday* in *January*.

Reading is an ordinary Town, but commodiouſly ſituated on the Banks of a great Lake; there are two Mills in it, one for Griſt, and another to ſaw Boards.

THE Rivers in this County are ſmall, but there are a great many of them, which water the Paſture-Grounds, and render this one of the pleaſanteſt, and moſt fruitful Spots in *New-England*; the Fields are full of Cattle of all Sorts, and ſupply the Town of *Boſton* with Beef, Pork, *&c.* both for Exportation, and the Home-Conſumption. The Commons are cover'd with Sheep, and reſemble the County of *Devon* in *England*.

THE

THE next County is *Suffolk*, which has the following Towns.

Suffolk-County.

****	*Boſton*,	*	*Milton*,
*	*Braintrey*,	*	*Roxbury*,
*	*Dedham*,	*	*Weymouth*,
*	*Dorcheſter*,	*	*Woodſtock*,
*	*Hingham*,	*	*Wrentham*,
	Hull,	*	*Brooklin*,
*	*Medfield*	*	*Needham*,
*	*Mendon*,		

THE Capital of this County, and of all *New-England* is *Boſton*, which according to the exact Calculation of *Thomas Brattle*, Eſq; is 71 Degrees Weſt from *London*, Latitude 42 Degrees 24 North, Variation of the Needles, neareſt 9 Degrees Weſt. 'Tis pleaſantly ſituated in a Peninſula about four Miles in Compaſs at the Bottom of a fine Bay, guarded from the Roughneſs of the Ocean by ſeveral Rocks appearing above Water; and by above a Dozen Iſlands, many of which are inhabited, and one called *Nottles-Iſland*, within theſe few Years was eſteemed worth 2 or 300 *l. per Annum* to the Owner Colonel *Shrimpton*; there is but one common and ſafe Paſſage into the Bay, and that not very broad, there being hardly Room for three Ships to come in, board and board at a Time, but being once in, there is Room for the Anchorage of 500 Sail. The moſt remarkable of theſe Iſlands is called *Caſtle-Iſland*, from the Caſtle that is built in it; it ſtands about a League from the Town upon the main Channel leading to it, and is ſo conveniently ſituated, that no Ship of Burthen can approach the Town without the Hazard of being torn in Pieces by its Cannon. The Fortifications of this Caſtle were very irregular 'till K. *William*'s Reign;

Reign; when Col. *Romer* a famous Engineer was ſent thither to repair them, the Colonel demoliſhed all the old Works, and raiſed an entirely new regular Fortification, now called *Fort-William*; 'tis mounted with about 100 Pieces of Ordnance, 20 of which were given to the Province by Q. *Anne*, and are placed on a Platform near High-Water Mark, ſo as to rake a Ship fore and aft, before ſhe can bring her Broadſides, to bear againſt the Caſtle; ſome of theſe Cannon carry 42 Pounders. 500 able Men are exempted from all military Duty in Time of War to be ready to attend the Service of the Caſtle at an Hour's Warning upon any Signal of the Approach of an Enemy, but in Time of Peace a Guard of 50 Men only do Duty.

But to prevent any poſſible Surprize from an Enemy, there is a Light-Houſe built on a Rock, appearing above Water about two long Leagues from the Town, which in Time of War makes a Signal to the Caſtle, and the Caſtle to the Town by hoiſting and lowering the Union-Flag, ſo many Times as there are Ships approaching, which if they exceed a certain Number, the Caſtle fires three Guns to alarm the Town of *Boſton*, and the Governour, if Need be, orders a *Beacon* to be fired, which alarms all the adjacent Country; ſo that unleſs an Enemy can be ſuppoſed to ſail by ſo many Iſlands and Rocks in a Fog, the Town of *Boſton* muſt have ſix or more Hours to prepare for their Reception; but ſuppoſing they might paſs the Caſtle, there are two Batteries at the North and South Ends of the Town which command the whole Bay, and make it impoſſible for an Enemy's Ship of Burthen to ride there in Safety, while the Merchant-Men and ſmall Craft may retire up into *Charles-River* out of Reach of their Cannon: 'Tis equally impoſſible for any Ship to be run away with out of this Harbour by a Pirate; for the Caſtle ſuffers no Ship outward-bound, to paſs without

out a *Permit* from the Governour, which is not granted without a Clearing from the Cuſtom-Houſe, and the uſual Notice of ſailing, by looſing their Fore-Top-Sail.

The Bay of *Boſton* is ſpacious enough to contain in a Manner the Navy of *England*; the Maſts of Ships here, and at the proper Seaſons of the Year make a kind of Wood of Trees like that which we ſee upon the River of *Thames* about *Wapping* and *Limehouſe*, which may eaſily be imagined when we conſider, that by Computation given into the Collectors of his Majeſty's Cuſtoms to the Governour upon the building of the Light-Houſes, it appeared that there was 24000 Ton of Shipping cleared annually.

At the Bottom of the Bay is a noble Peer 1800 or 2000 Foot long, with a Row of Ware-houſes on the North Side for the Uſe of Merchants, the Peer runs ſo far into the Bay, that Ships of the greateſt Burthen may unlade without the Help of Boats or Liters; from the Head of the Peer you go up the chief Street of the Town, at the upper End of which is the Town-Houſe or Exchange; a fine Piece of Building, containing beſides the Walk for the Merchants, the Council-Chamber, the Houſe of Commons, and another ſpacious Room for the Seſſions of the Courts of Juſtice; the Exchange is ſurrounded with Bookſellers Shops, which have a good Trade: There are five Printing Preſſes in *Boſton*, which are generally full of Work, by which it appears that Humanity and the Knowledge of Letters flouriſh more here than in all the other *Engliſh* Plantations put together; for in the City of *New-York* there is but one little Bookſeller's Shop, and in the Plantations of *Virginia*, *Maryland*, *Carolina*, *Barbadoes*, and the Iſlands none at all.

The Town of *Boſton* lies in the Form of a half Moon round the Harbour, the ſurrounding Shore being

being high, and affording a very agreeable Proſpect; there are ſeveral handſome large Streets in it, which for the Beauty of the Buildings and Goodneſs of the Pavement may compare with moſt in the City of *London*.

We may gueſs at the Bigneſs of the Town by the Number of its Inhabitants, which are in Compariſon to thoſe of *London* as one to 50 or 52, computing by the Bills of Mortality, for the yearly Bill of Mortality at *Boſton* is much the ſame with one of the weekly Bills at *London*; the yearly Bill for the Year 1718 ſtood thus,

Buried	Whites	334	
	Negroes and Indians		46
Total			380
Decreas'd			71

So that if we compute the Inhabitants of *London*, and the adjacent Villages within the Bills of Mortality at a Million, thoſe of *Boſton* will amount to between 19 and 20000; whence it appears that the Town is conſiderably encreas'd within theſe laſt 10 or 12 Years; for the late ingenious *Tho. Brattle*, Eſq; whoſe M. S. Obſervations are now before me, ſays that in the Year 1708, the Number of Inhabitants did not amount to above 12 or 13000 Souls: He adds further, that the Militia of the Town conſiſted then of eight Companies of Foot of about 150, or 160 in a Company, and one Troop of Horſe; but the Inhabitants being ſince encreaſed above a third Part, their Militia muſt now amount to near 2000 Men.

There are ten Churches or Places of Publick Worſhip in *Boſton*; ſix of the Eſtabliſhment, namely, the *Old Church* ſo called, becauſe 'tis the Mother of

all

all the reſt, whereof the Reverend Mr. *Benjamin Wadſworth*, and Mr. *Thomas Foxcroft* are Paſtors; theſe are reckon'd the moſt narrow in their Principles, and to approach neareſt the *Browniſts*. The *North Church*, whereof the Doctors *Increaſe* and *Cotton Mather* are Paſtors; the *South Church*, whereof the Reverend Mr. *Joſeph Sewall*, and Mr. *Thomas Prince* are Paſtors; the *New Church*, whereof the Reverend Mr. *Benjamin Colman*, and Mr. *William Cooper* are Paſtors; theſe are reckoned the largeſt in their Principles, and to come neareſt the *Presbyterians*, becauſe they neither require the making of publick Confeſſions, nor the owning a particular Church-Covenant, in Order to admitting Perſons to their Communion, as all the other Churches do; as likewiſe, becauſe they read the Scriptures, and recite the Lord's Prayer in their publick Worſhip; the other two Churches are lately built, and are called the *New North*, and the *New South*; Mr. *John Webb* being Paſtor of the one, and Mr. *Samuel Chickly* of the other.

But beſides the forementioned Churches which are properly the Eſtabliſhment of the Country there is one *Epiſcopal* Church, one *French*, one *Anabaptiſt*, and one Congregation of *Quakers*; the *Quakers* are but few in Number, though they are treated at preſent with as much Candour and Goodneſs as they can reaſonably deſire; the *Anabaptiſts* likewiſe are but few, but ſerious modeſt humble Chriſtians: Mr. *Eliſha Callender* is their preſent Paſtor, who was educated in *Harvard-College*, and was lately ordained by the two Doctor *Mathers* and Mr. *Webb*; the *French* are very numerous; and the *Epiſcopal* Church of which the Rev. Mr. *Samuel Miles* and Mr. *Henry Harris* are Miniſters, may conſiſt of about a Thouſand Hearers; the late King *WILLIAM* and Queen *MARY* gave them a Pulpit-Cloth, a Cuſhion, a rich Set of Plate for the Communion-Table; and a Piece of Painting which

which reaches from the Top to the Bottom of the Eaſt End of the Church containing the Ten Commandments, the Lord's Prayer, and the Apoſtles Creed; *Thomas Brattle*, Eſq; gave to this Church a Pair of Organs, and the Governour's Pew is built in a magnificent Manner at the Charge of the publick.

THE Converſation in this Town is as polite as in moſt of the Cities and Towns of *England*; many of their Merchants having travell'd into *Europe*; and thoſe that ſtay at home having the Advantage of a free Converſation with Travellers; ſo that a Gentleman from *London* would almoſt think himſelf at home at *Boſton*, when he obſerves the Numbers of People, their Houſes, their Furniture, their Tables, their Dreſs and Converſation, which perhaps is as ſplendid and ſhowy, as that of the moſt conſiderable Tradeſmen in *London*.

UPON the whole, *Boſton* is the moſt flouriſhing Town for Trade and Commerce in the *Engliſh America*, here the Governour commonly reſides, the General Court and Aſſembly meet, the Courts of Judicature ſit, and the Affairs of the whole Province are tranſacted; 'tis the beſt Port in *New-England*, from whence 3 or 400 Sail of Ships, Ketches, Brigantines, *&c.* are laden every Year with Lumber, Beef, Pork, Fiſh, *&c.* for ſeveral Parts of *Europe* and *America*. The inferior Court of Common Pleas, and Quarter-Seſſions of the Peace, is held here for the County of *Suffolk* on the firſt *Tueſday* in *May* and *November*. The General Court of Election of Councellors is by the Charter on the laſt *Wedneſday* in *May* annually, but there are no Fairs nor Markets in this, nor hardly in any other Town in the Country.

Dorcheſter is the next Town to *Boſton* for Bigneſs; 'tis built at the Mouth of two little Rivers near the Sea-ſide. *Roxbury* and *Braintrey* are noted for their Free-Schools. *Roxbury* is ſeated in the Bottom

tom of a ſhallow Bay, but has no Harbour for Shipping; the Town is well watered with Springs; *Smelt-River* runs through it, and a Quarter of a Mile to the North runs *Stony-River*. The Town of *Weymouth* is the moſt ancient in the Province, but not ſo conſiderable as formerly.

THERE are no leſs than 12 or 14 fine Towns or Villages round about this noble Bay of the *Maſſachuſets* between *Pulling Point* on the North Entrance, and *Merton-Point* on the South; *Pulling-Point* was ſo called, becauſe the Boats were by the Eddies or Roads haled againſt the Tide which is very ſtrong in this Place; *Merton-Point* is about two Leagues from *Boſton* on the other Side of the Bay, and has a ſmall Village upon it, where Ships commonly caſt Anchor.

HERE are no large Rivers in this County, but ſeveral little ones, which render the Country both pleaſant and fruitful.

TO the Weſtward of this and *Middleſex*-Counties, bordering on *Connecticut* lies *Hampſhire*, which has in it the following Towns.

Hampſhire-County.

* *Deerfield*,	* *Northampton*,
* *Enfield*,	* *Springfield*,
* *Hatfield*,	* *Southfield*,
* *Hadley*,	* *Weſtfield*.
* *Brookfield*,	

THIS County is watered by the great River *Connecticut* on the Banks of which all the foremention'd Towns are built, the chief of them are *Northampton*, where the County-Court is kept the laſt *Tueſday* in *March*; and *Springfield*, where 'tis held the laſt *Tueſday* in *September*: But being an inland-County, and hilly, 'tis not ſo fruitful as thoſe that lye nearer the Coaſts.

THE

THE next County Southward on the Coaſt is *Plimouth*, which was formerly a diſtinct Government, and contained under it the Counties of *Barnſtable* and *Briſtol*, all which by the late Charter are annexed to the Province of the *Maſſachuſet*-Bay.

Plimouth-County contains the following Towns.

* *Plimouth*,	* *Scituate*,
* *Bridgwater*,	* *Middleborough*,
* *Duxbury*,	* *Pembrook*,
* *Marſhfield*,	* *Plympton*.

THE chief Town is *New-Plimouth*, the Capital of the County, and the oldeſt in all *New-England*; 'tis ſituated on the South-Weſt Side of a large Bay, now called the Bay of *New-Plimouth*, and contains 3 or 400 Families; but the Land about the Town not being very fruitful, the Town of *Scituate* has of late outgrown it; there are two or three ſmall Rivers which water the County, but the Soil is not ſo rich as that of *Suffolk*.

THE next County takes its Name from the Town of *Barnſtable*, lying in a Bay called by the ſame Name; it has in it the following Towns.

Barnſtable-County.

* *Barnſtable*,	* *Sandwich*,
* *Eaſtham*,	* *Yarmouth*,
Manimoy,	* *Harwich*,
* *Truro*,	* *Nantucket*,
* *Rocheſter*,	

IN paſſing by Sea from *Plimouth* to this County we muſt compaſs *Cape-Cod*, the higheſt and longeſt Promontory on the Coaſt; it makes a large and commodious Bay, capable of receiving 1000 Sail of

of Ships; the Entrance is ſeveral Miles wide, the Country about it is barren; but the Convenience of Fiſhing renders it as populous as moſt Places in *New-England*.

OPPOSITE to the South Bay called *Monument-Bay*, are two Iſlands; one of which is called *Martha's Vineyard*, where Capt. *Goſnold* firſt landed, and where afterwards the *Mayhews*, Father and Son, laboured with Succeſs in the Converſion of the *Indians*; there is but one *Engliſh* Church in the Iſland, it being inhabited chiefly by the *Indian* Converts who are ſerved by Miniſters of their own; as are the Inhabitants of the adjacent Iſland *Nantucket*, where there are no *Engliſh*, but only *Indian* Preachers; the Streights between *Martha's Vineyard* and the Continent called *Malabar*, are very dangerous.

THE next County to this is *Briſtol*, which has the following Towns.

Briſtol-County.

* *Briſtol*,	* *Taunton*,
* *Swanſey*,	* *Dighton*,
* *Rehoboth*,	* *Little Compton*,
* *Norton*,	* *Artleborough*,
* *Dartmouth*,	* *Freetown.*

DR. *Mather* in a Letter to Dr. *Woodward* ſays, that at *Taunton* by the Side of a Tiding River there is a large Rock appearing above Water, on the perpendicular Side of which next the Stream are ſeven or eight Lines about ſeven or eight Foot long, and about a Foot wide, engraven with unaccountable Characters, not like any now known in the World. *

* *Philoſophical Tranſactions*, Vol. XXIX. p. 70.

Rehoboth is a large well-peopled Country ſituate on a Circle upon a Plain about a Mile and half in Diameter; the Church, the Miniſter's Houſe and School-Houſe being in the Middle: Near this Town in the Road to *Boſton* lyes another Plain above 3 Miles over, admired by all Travellers for the Evenneſs of it; but the Land is not very fertile. The Town of *Rehoboth* was firſt ſettled in the Year 1644, by a Number of *Engliſh* Families, who being ſtraitned in their former Settlement at *Weymouth* in the *Maſſachuſet*-Colony came hither, and by the Advice of their Miniſter called the Place *Rehoboth, becauſe the Lord had made Room for them*, but the *Indian* Name of it was *Seconck*, by which it is ſometimes called to this Day.

The Town of *Artleborough* is ſince grown out of the Increaſe of the Inhabitants of *Rehoboth*, and is ſituate on the North-ſide of it.

Swanſey is a large ſcattered Town conſiſting of 3 or 4 Villages inhabited by ſo many Sects or Parties of Chriſtians, as *Church-men*, *Independents*, *Anabaptiſts* and *Quakers*.

Briſtol is the laſt built Town in this County, but is at preſent the moſt populous, and has the greateſt Trade, having the Advantage of a very commodious Harbour. This Town is built on the only Land acquired by Conqueſt from the *Indians*, which for its pleaſant Situation, and the Advantages of good Fiſhing and Hunting was reſerved by the *Indian* King *Philip* for himſelf and his People, after he had ſold all the adjacent Country to the *Engliſh*. About the Year 1678, when King *Philip* and his Men were put to the Sword, the Land was ſold towards defraying the Charges of the War, and being bought by Men of ſome Figure, they laid out the Town with greater Regularity than perhaps any other Town in the Province, and by its Situation, and the Reſort of People to it, it promiſes to be a conſiderable Place. Near this Town is a re-

remarkable Hill, called *Mount Hope*, ſaid to contain a Quarry of Marble, at the Foot of which King *Philip* was killed.

Rhode-Iſland lyes upon the Borders of this County, but is now a diſtinct Government, King *Charles* the Second after his Reſtoration having granted the Inhabitants a Charter; it was called by the Natives *Aquetnet*, and lyes in the *Narrhagunſet-Bay*, being 14 or 15 Miles long, and about 4 or 5 broad; it was firſt inhabited by the Sectaries who were baniſhed from *Boſton* in the Year 1639 and has been the Aſylum of ſuch Perſons ever ſince; but the Inhabitants begin now to be more civilized, ſince there have been two Churches in the Iſland, one according to the *New-Engliſh* Model, the other according to the Church of *England*; of which latter the Reverend Mr. *Honeyman* is the preſent Incumbent, to whom the Society for propagating the Goſpel in foreign Parts allow 55 *l. per Annum:* As for the Place, 'tis deſervedly called the Paradiſe of *New-England*, for the Fruitfulneſs of the Soil, and Temperateneſs of the Climate, which though it be not above ſixty-five Mile South of *Boſton* is a Coat warmer in Winter, and being ſurrounded by the Ocean, is not ſo much affected in Summer with the hot Land Breezes, as the Towns on the Continent are.

Providence and *Warwick*, two large Towns in the *Narrhaganſet* Country upon the Continent are under this Government, and have the leaſt Appearance of Order of any Towns in *New-England*; the Inhabitants of theſe Places are likewiſe the Deſcendants of thoſe Sectaries who were baniſhed the *Maſſachuſet*-Juriſdiction between the Years 1630 and 1640, as the Reader has obſerved in the foregoing Hiſtory; but they now live in great Amity with their Neighbours, and though every Man does what he thinks right in his own Eyes, it is rare that any notorious Crimes are committed by them, which

may be attributed in ſome Meaſure to their great Veneration for the Holy Scriptures, which they all read from the leaſt to the greateſt, though they have neither Miniſters nor Magiſtrates to recommend it to them. They have an Averſion to all Sorts of Taxes, as the Inventions of Men to ſupport *Hirelings*, as they call all ſuch Magiſtrates and Miniſters as won't ſerve them for nothing. They are very hoſpitable to Strangers; a Traveller paſſing through theſe Towns may call at any Houſe with the ſame Liberty as if he were at an Inn, and be kindly entertained with the beſt they have for nothing. The raiſing of Cattle, and making Butter and Cheeſe is their chief Employ, by which they have very much enriched themſelves. The Society for propagating the Goſpel after the Manner of the Church of *England* have lately planted a Miſſionary in theſe Parts (*viz.*) the Reverend Mr. *Guy*, to whom they allow 20*l. per Annum*.

The Reader has now had the beſt Account I can give him of the moſt conſiderable Towns and Rivers in the Province of the *Maſſachuſet*-Bay; I have mention'd all the Towns that ſend Members to the General Aſſembly, except * *Chilmark* and *Tisbury*, which chooſe one between them; ſo that by looking over the Liſt he may ſee what Towns chooſe Repreſentatives; and, by counting the Aſteriſms, how many each Town chooſes, and what Numbers the whole conſiſts of. I have obſerved that the Soil of the Country is not ſo rich as to enable the Inhabitants to ſupply their Neighbours with Corn, at ſo eaſy a Rate, as the other Plantations; but the Rivers and Harbours of *New-England* are very noble; ſeveral of them, as *Boſton*, *Piſcataqua* and *Caſco*-Bay being capable of receiving 500 Sail of Ships.

Westward of the Province of the *Maſſachuſet*-Bay lye the United Colonies of *Connecticut* and *New-Haven*, who by virtue of a Charter granted them by

by King *Charles* the Second after his Reſtoration, chooſe their own Governor, and have a diſtinct General Aſſembly from the *Maſſachuſets*. The Province is in Length from *Stoniton* in *New-London*-County, to *Rye* on the Borders of *New-York* about 100 Miles; and in Breadth from *Saybrook* in *New-London*-County, to the Borders of *Hampſhire* about 70.

The firſt County on the Coaſt is *New-London*-County, in which are the following Towns.

New-London-County.

Stoniton,	*New-London*,
Saybrook,	*Lyme*,
Preſton,	*Lebanon*,
Dauſick,	*Killingworth*,
Norwich,	

New-London is ſeated on the *Thames*, which is a conſiderable River with ſeveral ſmall Branches, the firſt of which is called *Glaſs River*; the ſecond, *Ruſſel's Delight*; and the third, the *Indian River*; the reſt are ſo ſmall, that they are not worth naming.

Saybrook is the oldeſt Town in the County, it ſtands at the Mouth of *Connecticut*-River, on the Weſt Side; as *Lyme* does over againſt it on the Eaſt. *Saybrook*-Fort was the Security of the Infant Colony againſt the fierce Nation of the *Pequots*, who made War upon them in the Year 1637, and had like to have driven them from their Settlements. The River *Connecticut* which runs through the Heart of this Province, is one of the largeſt and beſt Rivers in *New-England*; it divides itſelf into ſeveral Branches, and is navigable above 60 Miles within Land. The Eaſt Parts of this County are pleaſant and fruitful, but the Weſtern are ſwampy and mountanous.

may be attributed in ſome Meaſure to their great Veneration for the Holy Scriptures, which they all read from the leaſt to the greateſt, though they have neither Miniſters nor Magiſtrates to recommend it to them. They have an Averſion to all Sorts of Taxes, as the Inventions of Men to ſupport *Hirelings*, as they call all ſuch Magiſtrates and Miniſters as won't ſerve them for nothing. They are very hoſpitable to Strangers; a Traveller paſſing through theſe Towns may call at any Houſe with the ſame Liberty as if he were at an Inn, and be kindly entertained with the beſt they have for nothing. The raiſing of Cattle, and making Butter and Cheeſe is their chief Employ, by which they have very much enriched themſelves. The Society for propagating the Goſpel after the Manner of the Church of *England* have lately planted a Miſſionary in theſe Parts (*viz.*) the Reverend Mr. *Guy*, to whom they allow 20*l. per Annum*.

The Reader has now had the beſt Account I can give him of the moſt conſiderable Towns and Rivers in the Province of the *Maſſachuſet*-Bay; I have mention'd all the Towns that ſend Members to the General Aſſembly, except * *Chilmark* and *Tisbury*, which chooſe one between them; ſo that by looking over the Liſt he may ſee what Towns chooſe Repreſentatives; and, by counting the Aſteriſms, how many each Town chooſes, and what Numbers the whole conſiſts of. I have obſerved that the Soil of the Country is not ſo rich as to enable the Inhabitants to ſupply their Neighbours with Corn, at ſo eaſy a Rate, as the other Plantations; but the Rivers and Harbours of *New-England* are very noble; ſeveral of them, as *Boſton*, *Piſcataqua* and *Caſco*-Bay being capable of receiving 500 Sail of Ships.

Westward of the Province of the *Maſſachuſet*-Bay lye the United Colonies of *Connecticut* and *New-Haven*, who by virtue of a Charter granted them by

by King *Charles* the Second after his Reſtoration, chooſe their own Governor, and have a diſtinct General Aſſembly from the *Maſſachuſets*. The Province is in Length from *Stoniton* in *New-London*-County, to *Rye* on the Borders of *New-York* about 100 Miles; and in Breadth from *Saybrook* in *New-London*-County, to the Borders of *Hampſhire* about 70.

THE firſt County on the Coaſt is *New-London*-County, in which are the following Towns.

New-London-County.

Stoniton,	*New-London*,
Saybrook,	*Lyme*,
Preſton,	*Lebanon*,
Danſick,	*Killingworth*,
Norwich,	

New-London is ſeated on the *Thames*, which is a conſiderable River with ſeveral ſmall Branches, the firſt of which is called *Glaſs River*; the ſecond, *Ruſſel's Delight*; and the third, the *Indian River*; the reſt are ſo ſmall, that they are not worth naming.

Saybrook is the oldeſt Town in the County, it ſtands at the Mouth of *Connecticut*-River, on the Weſt Side; as *Lyme* does over againſt it on the Eaſt. *Saybrook*-Fort was the Security of the Infant Colony againſt the fierce Nation of the *Pequots*, who made War upon them in the Year 1637, and had like to have driven them from their Settlements. The River *Connecticut* which runs through the Heart of this Province, is one of the largeſt and beſt Rivers in *New-England*; it divides itſelf into ſeveral Branches, and is navigable above 60 Miles within Land. The Eaſt Parts of this County are pleaſant and fruitful, but the Weſtern are ſwampy and mountanous.

NEXT to this within Land is *Hartford*-County, which contains the following Towns.

Hartford-County.

Farmington,	*Waterbury*,
Glaſſenbury,	*Weathersfield*,
Hadham,	*Windſor*,
Hartford,	*Farm.*
Middle-Town,	*Windham.*
Simsbury,	

Hartford is the moſt conſiderable Town in this County, and the Mother of all the reſt; it lyes on the Banks of *Connecticut*-River, and has 2 Churches or Meeting-Houſes, the *Old* and the *New*.

NEAR *Hadham* is an Iſland in *Connecticut* River, called *Thirty Mile Iſland*, being that Diſtance from the River's Mouth. In the Weſtern Parts of this County are ſeveral Ridges of Hills, and thick Foreſts which afford Plenty of Game.

THE two next Counties make the Colony of *New-Haven*, and both of them run along the Coaſt. In *New-Haven* County are the following Towns.

New-Haven-County.

Brainford,	*Milford*,
Derby,	*New-Haven*,
Guilford,	*Wallingford*.

THE Capital of this Province is *New-Haven*, which is at preſent a very flouriſhing Town; they have lately built a College in it for the Reception of Students, which is like to prove a flouriſhing Foundation, and will be a great Bleſſing to that Part of the Country; *Jeremiah Dummer*, Eſq; their Agent at *London* by his Application and Intereſt with generous Perſons, has ſent them a noble Foun-

Foundation of a Library; the Name of the College is *Yale-Hall.*

Near *Brainford* there is a ſmall Iron-Work on a Branch of a little River that runs into the Sea; the Place is from thence called *Iron-mill.* There is another little River that runs into the Sea at *Milford*, and another at *Guilford.*

The next County is *Fairfield*-County, in which are the following Towns.

Fairfield-County.

Danbury,	*Rye*,
Fairfield,	*Stamford*,
Greenwich,	*Stratford*,
Norwalk,	*Woodbury*,

There is no navigable River in this County; moſt of the Towns are built upon ſmall Creeks, and are of no very great Note, either for Trade or Buſineſs, the Inland Part of the County 8 or 10 Miles from the Shore is full of Hills and Swamps, which are uninhabited.

Southward of this County lyes *Long-Iſland*, ſo called from it's Form, being 120 Miles in Length, and not above 16 in Breadth, 'tis a noble Country for Corn and Cattle, but belongs to the Juriſdiction of *New-York.*

There are ſeveral other ſmall Iſlands along the Coaſt of *New-England*, as *Faulcon-Iſland*, *Fiſhers-Iſland*, *Block-Iſland*, *&c.* in all to the Number of near 200, which ſerve to break the Winds and Seas from the ſeveral Shores on which they lye.

Upon the whole, *New-England* is a Country furniſhed with all the Neceſſaries and Conveniences of Life; though it muſt be acknowledged, that the vaſt Improvements that have been made in it beyond the neighbouring Provinces, are not owing ſo much to the Richneſs of the Soil, or any ex-

traordinary Produce of the Country, as to the hard Labour and Induſtry of the Inhabitants; but the Country is yet capable of conſiderable Improvements, if they had but Money and Hands to do it with.

The Inhabitants of New-England.

THE Inhabitants of *New-England* are the Poſterity of the old *Engliſh Puritans* or *Nonconformiſts* to the Church of *England*, who choſe to leave their native Country, and retire into a Wilderneſs, rather than ſubmit to ſuch Rites and Ceremonies in Religion as they apprehended ſinful. They did not differ with the Church in any of the Articles of her Faith, but they ſcrupled the Veſtments, kneeling at the Sacrament, ſome Parts of the Common-Prayer, and the promiſcuous Admiſſion of all Perſons to the Communion; for theſe things they were ſilenced and deprived of their Livings, which put great Numbers of the Miniſters under a Neceſſity of removing with their Followers to *America*.

Their Numbers, and military Strength.

THE Number of Planters that went over to *New-England* before the Year 1640, were about 4000; after which for the next 20 Years they had no Increaſe but what ſprung up from among themſelves; In the Reigns of King *Charles* II. and King *James* II. great Numbers of *Diſſenters*, both Miniſters and People went over, to avoid the Hardſhips they ſuffer'd from the Church; and it deſerves to be taken Notice of, that the Increaſe of the *Engliſh* Plantations abroad depends very much on the Treatment the Diſſenters from the Eſtabliſhed Church of *England* meet with at home: When they are allowed the free Exerciſe of their Civil and Religious Liberties, they love their native Country too well to leave it; but when they are oppreſs'd in ſo tender a Point as their Conſciences,

ſciences, 'tis but reaſonable to ſuppoſe, that many of them will go where they can make themſelves eaſy; for the Confirmation of this Obſervation, we need look no further at preſent than *Ireland*, from whence, if I am rightly inform'd, above 6000 *Scotch Presbyterians* have ſhipp'd off themſelves and their Effects within theſe few Years for the Plantations of *America*, chiefly on the Account of the Uneaſineſſes they were under, with Regard to the free Exerciſe of their Religion: And great Numbers are ſtill going over every Summer, which if the Legiſlature are not pleas'd to take into Conſideration, may in Time very much weaken, if not totally ſubvert the Proteſtant Religion in that Kingdom.

To ſuch Cauſes as theſe, *New-England* owes the vaſt Increaſe of its Inhabitants, which according to Sir *William Petty* in his Political Arithmetick, * publiſh'd in the Year 1691, amounted then to about 150,000; he computes thus, that 16000 Men being muſtered in Arms, there muſt be 24000 Men able to bear Arms, which being reckon'd a ſixth Part of the Inhabitants, makes the whole about 150,000: But I queſtion the Exactneſs of Sir *William*'s Calculations; for Mr. *Thomas Brattle* the greateſt Mathematician that *New-England* ever produced, ſays that in the Year 1708, there were not in his Judgment above 100 or 120,000 Souls at moſt in all the Country, and of them not above 20 or 25000 fighting Men; now, if the Inhabitants of all *New-England* were 120,000, in the Year 1708, when theſe of *Boſton* were computed at Twelve or Thirteen Thouſand; the Inhabitants of *Boſton* being now increaſed to 18 or 20000; the whole Number of Inhabitants muſt now amount to 160 or 165,000, and of them

* Page 75.

about

about 30 or 35000 fighting Men, which is the Military Strength of the Country.

FROM this Calculation we may conclude, that the Province of *New-England* is in no great Danger at preſent from any of its Neighbours, for the *Indians* are an inconſiderable Body of themſelves, and if the *French* ſhould joyn them, though they might ravage the Frontiers by their flying Parties, they could make no Impreſſions upon the Heart of the Country; beſides the *Indians* are divided, ſome being in Alliance with the *French*, and others with the *Engliſh*; ſo that in caſe of a War they may be play'd one againſt the other. In the Year 1710, four *Indian* Kings of the ſix Nations that lye between *New-England* and *Canada* came into *England*; namely, *Teeyeeneenhogaprow*, and *Sagayeanquaprahton* of the *Maquas*; *Elowohkaom*, and *Ohneeyeathtonnoprow* of the River *Sachem*, and the *Ganajohahore Sachem*; the Court being then in Mourning, they were cloathed with black Breeches, Waſtecoat, Stockings and Shoes after the *Engliſh* Faſhion, and a Scarlet in Grain Cloth Mantle edged with Gold over all; on the 19th of *April* they had an Audience of the QUEEN, being conducted to St *James*'s, by Sir *Charles Cotterel* in two of her Majeſty's Coaches, and introduced into the Royal Preſence by the Lord Chamberlain; Major *Pidgeon* one of the Officers that came over with them, read their Speech in *Engliſh*, to this Effect.

Great Queen,

"WE have undertaken a long Voyage, which "none of our Predeceſſors could be "prevail'd with to undertake, to ſee our Great "Queen, and relate to her thoſe things which we "thought abſolutely neceſſary for the Good of "Her

" Her, and us her Allies on the other Side the " Water.

" We doubt not but our Great Queen has " been acquainted with our long and tedious War " in Conjunction with her Children againſt her " Enemies the *French*, and that we have been as a " ſtrong Wall for their Security, even to the Loſs " of our beſt Men.

" We were mightily rejoiced when we heard " our Great Queen had reſolved to ſend an Army " to reduce *Canada*; and immediately in Token of " our Friendſhip, we hung up the *Kettle*, and took " up the *Hatchet*, and with one Conſent aſſiſted " Col. *Nicholſon* in making Preparations on this " Side the Lake; but at length we were told, our " Great Queen by ſome important Affairs was " prevented in her Deſign at preſent; which made " us ſorrowful, leſt the *French* who had hitherto " dreaded us, ſhould now think us unable to make " War againſt them. The Reduction of *Canada* is " of great Weight to our free Hunting, ſo that if " our Great Queen ſhould not be mindful of us, " we muſt with our Families forſake our Country, " and ſeek other Habitations, or ſtand neuter; ei- " ther of which will be much againſt our Inclina- " tions.

" In Token of the Sincerity of the ſix Nations, " we do, in their Name preſent our Great Queen " with the Belts of *Wampam*, and in Hopes of our " Great Queen's Favour, leave it to her moſt gra- " cious Conſideration.

Pursuant to this *Addreſs*, an Expedition to *Canada* was undertaken the next Year, which miſ-carry'd through the Treachery of them that were at the Head of it; for the Force that was in that Fleet, in the Opinion of the beſt Judges, was ſufficient not only to drive the *French* out of *Quebeck*, but out of all their Settlements in the Country.

But

BUT though the *French* Power in *Canada* is not very formidable at preſent, yet if ever they ſhould open a Communication with the River *Miſſiſipi*, which runs upon the Back of the *Engliſh* Settlements, as they will certainly do, if the Company ſucceed in their vaſt Deſigns, they will then encloſe all our Plantations, and perhaps, in a Century or two, drive them off the very Continent of *America*.

Their Civil Government.

THE Civil Government of *New-England* underwent a conſiderable Alteration by their new Charter; for before that Time, all their Magiſtrates and Officers of State, were choſen annually by the General Aſſembly, whereas now the Nomination of the Governour and Lieutenant-Governour is wholly reſerved to the Crown; the Militia is abſolutely in the Hands of his Majeſty's Governour as Captain-General; all Judges, Juſtices of the Peace, and Sheriffs are likewiſe nominated and appointed by the Governour with the Conſent of his Council; and all Officers of the Admiralty are to receive their Commiſſions from *England*; nay, the Charters of *Connecticut* and *Rhode-Iſland* being ſilent as to any Power on the Sea, the Governour of *New-England* is appointed Vice-Admiral of the Seas that waſh their reſpective Shores; and a Judge of the Admiralty, commiſſioned by the Lord High-Admiral of *Great-Britain*, determines all Maritime Caſes which are without the Juriſdiction of the ordinary Courts of Juſtice; in ſhort, the Governour of *New-England* has a Negative on all Laws, Elections, and Acts of Government done by the Council or General Aſſembly.

The Council.

THE Governour's Council is made up of 28 of the moſt conſiderable Gentlemen of the Country, choſen annually by the General Aſſembly, and pre-

preſented to his Excellency the Governour for his Approbation; Of theſe, 18 are always choſen out of the Inhabitants or Proprietors of Lands within the ancient Limits of the Province of the *Maſſachuſet-Bay*; four out of the ancient Juriſdiction of *New-Plimouth*; three out of the Province of *Main*; one out of the Territories between *Sagadehock* and *Nova Scotia*; and two out of the Inhabitants or Proprietors of Land within any Part of the Province; In all 28. This Council is a Part of the Legiſlature, and is deſigned not only to aſſiſt the Governour in all Affairs of State, but likewiſe to be a Check upon his Adminiſtration, for the executive Part of the Governour's Power depends entirely on the Approbation of his Council.

The General Aſſembly.

The General Aſſembly conſiſts at preſent of 103 Members, of which the Town of *Boſton* chooſes four, *Salem* two, *Ipſwich* two, *Newbury* two, *Charles-Town* two, and the reſt of the Towns before-mention'd one a-piece, except *Chilmark* and *Tisbury*, which chooſe but one between them. The Aſſembly is choſen annually, and meets at *Boſton* the latter End of *May*: As ſoon as the Houſe is called over, and the ſeveral Members have taken the Oaths, repeated, and ſubſcribed the *Declaration*, and took, and ſubſcribed the *Oath of Abjuration*, they proceed to the Choice of their *Speaker*, whom they preſent to the Governour for his Approbation; after which they elect the new *Council* which is a Part of the Legiſlature, like our Upper Houſe of Parliament, and preſent their Names to the Governour, who under-writes his Approbation in theſe Words; *I conſent to this Election of Councellors*, Given under my Hand this Day of *May*. *N. N.* The Governour then ſends for the whole Houſe into the Council-Chamber, and makes a Speech to them, after which having choſen two *Monitors* to ſee that the

the Orders of the Houſe are obſerved, they proceed to Buſineſs.

The General Aſſembly at *Boſton* has in ſome Reſpects more Power than the Parliament of *England*, for they elect the Governour's Council; they conſtitute and ſettle all Civil Officers under certain Reſtrictions and Reſervations; they erect Courts of Judicature, levy Taxes, and make Laws from Time to Time not repugnant to the Laws of *England*, only it muſt be obſerved, that all their Laws, tho' approved by the Governour and Council, are to be tranſmitted to *England* for the Royal Approbation, and if diſallowed within the Space of three Years to be void.

It appears from hence, that the Government of *New-England* reſembles very much that of *England*, for as the Legiſlature here conſiſts of *King*, *Lords*, and *Commons*, 'tis there made up of the *Governour*, the *Council*, and *General Aſſembly*, without whoſe joint Conſent no Law can paſs into an Act. Every one who has 40 *s.* a Year in Land, or 50 *l.* perſonal Eſtate is a Burgeſs, and every Houſekeeper paying Scot and Lot is a Freeman of the Town where he lives, and is qualify'd by taking the uſual Oaths to ſerve his Country in any Civil or Military Employment, without being obliged to take the Sacrament in any particular Communion.

But if the Reader would acquaint himſelf more exactly with the Privileges of the People, or the diſtinct Powers of the ſeveral Parts of the Legiſlature of *New-England*; I muſt refer him to their Charter, which I have publiſh'd in the *Appendix*.

Their Trade.

As the Government of *New-England* is dependant on the Crown of *England*, ſo is their Trade; 'tis impoſſible to make an exact Eſtimate of the Exports and Imports from *New-England*, without examining the Cuſtom-Houſe-Books, but 'tis computed by

by the moſt experienced Merchants trading to thoſe Parts, that they receive from hence all Sorts of Woollen-Drapery, Silks, Stuffs, and Hats; all Sorts of Linnen, and printed Callicoes, all Sorts of Iron Manufacture, and *Birmingham* Ware, as Tools for Mechanicks, Knives, Sciſſars, Buckles, Nails, *&c.* to the Value of 100,000 *l.* annually, and upwards.

In Return for theſe Goods, our Merchants export from thence about 100,000 * Quintals of dried Cod-fiſh yearly, which they ſend to *Portugal*, *Spain*, and the ſeveral Ports of *Italy*, the Returns for which are made to *London* out of the Product of thoſe Countries, and may amount to the Value of about 80,000 *l.* annually. The direct Trade from *Boſton* to *London* is not ſo conſiderable, though our Merchants receive from thence Maſts and Yards for the King's Ships, Pitch, Tar, Turpentine, Skins, Furs, Oyl, Whale-Fins, Logwood, Ships, about 3000 Tons annually.

The *New-England* Merchants trade to the other Plantations in *America* with Lumber for Building, that is Boards, Maſts, Pipe-Staves, *&c.* with Beef, Pork, Fiſh, and other Sorts of Proviſion; and have in Return, Sugar, Logwood, Melaſſes, and Rum, to the Value of about 50,000 Pounds annually.

'Tis the Unhappineſs of this Country to have no Staple-Commodity to ſend for *England* in lieu of the Merchandize they receive from thence, but what may be had cheaper from ſome Part of *Europe* or other; there are indeed very good Copper and Iron Mines in *New-England*, which might be improved and turn to a good Account, but the Parliament of *England* have not thought fit to ſuffer them to manufacture thoſe Metals for the home Con-

* *N. B.* A Quintal is 112 *Pound Weight.*

ſumption,

ſumption, much leſs to ſend them abroad; and whether they can ever make it worth their while to ſend them over in Oar or Bars is a very great Queſtion. Great Improvements likewiſe might be made in their Timber, Plank, Deals, Hemp, Pitch, Tar, and Turpentine; and it might be worth our Merchants while to import them from thence, provided Care was taken by the General Aſſembly to prevent Abuſes in making up thoſe Commodities, and a larger Bounty could be obtained upon the importing them into *England*.

Their Money.

But as Things are at preſent, *New-England* muſt be poor, for as they have no Staple-Merchandize worth trading to *England* with, ſo they have no Money, neither Silver nor Gold: About 50 or 60 Years ago there was Money, coin'd in the Country, but there is hardly enough left now for the Retail Buſineſs; all their Payments among themſelves being made in Province-Bills made legal by Act of the General Aſſembly which deſcend as low as half a Crown, ſo that the Gentlemen of *New-England* carry all their Money in their Pocket-Books; hence it is that the Courſe of Exchange runs ſo much to the Diſadvantage of the Country, that 100 *l.* to be paid in *London*, is this Year worth 220 and 225 *l.* paid in *New-England*; ſo that if a Merchant of *Boſton* ſhould remit his Eſtate to *London*, it would not be worth half ſo much as it is there; but on the other Hand, if a Merchant of *London* worth 1000 *l.* ſhould have a Mind to ſettle in *New-England*, and carry his Effects along with him, he might be worth 3000 *l.* on his Arrival there, and live as well upon it, as upon 3000 *l.* here.

Their Religion.

A late Reverend Divine of *Boſton* has told us, that there are above 100 Religious Aſſemblies and Congregations in the Province of the *Maſſachuſet* Bay, beſides above 30 Aſſemblies of Chriſtian *Indians*,

dians, who profeſs the ſame Faith, Order, and Worſhip with the *Engliſh* Churches in thoſe Parts; and that there are not above three or four Congregations who in their Form of Worſhip and Diſcipline profeſs themſelves of the Perſwaſion of the Church of *England*, * whoſe Miniſters are ſupported by the *Corporation for Propagating the Goſpel in the Parts beyond the Seas*; though 'tis a little ſtrange they ſhould put themſelves to ſuch an Expence in *New-England*, when there is another *Society*, whoſe Charter confines them to the propagating of Chriſtian Knowledge in this Province, and whoſe Labours have been attended with ſuch Succeſs among the *Indians*, as is hardly to be paralel'd; beſides, how this can ſo properly be called *Propagating the Goſpel*, when the Chriſtian Religion was planted in thoſe Parts long before the Societies Miſſionaries ſettled in them, I don't well underſtand; unleſs we will ſay, that the *New-Engliſh* Miniſters don't preach the Chriſtian Doctrine, or, that the Goſpel can't ſubſiſt without the *Engliſh* Liturgy and Diſcipline. I agree 'tis reaſonable, that Miniſters of all Perſwaſions ſhould have Liberty to preach the Goſpel in all Parts of the World, and the People to hear; but if the Religious Liberties of the Plantations are invaded, by the ſetting up of Spiritual Courts, *&c.* in any Part of his Majeſty's Dominions in *America*, I am ſatisfied they will feel the ſad Effects of it in a very little Time.

THE Eſtabliſh'd Doctrines of the Churches of *New-England* are the ſame with the *Aſſembly of Divines at Weſtminſter*, or with the Doctrinal Articles of the Church of *England*, underſtanding them in the Senſe of the *Calviniſts*; for the whole Body of the Clergy are of that

* *State of the Province of the* Maſſachuſet-Bay, *preſented to King* GEORGE.

Sentiment; Their Diſcipline is Congregational or Independant, every particular Society being a compleat Church, with Power to exerciſe all Eccleſiaſtical Juriſdiction, without Appeal to any Claſſis, Convocation or Synod: They allow of Synods for Counſel and Advice, but not to exerciſe the Power of the *Keys*, as I have ſhewn under the Year 1637.

IT muſt be allowed, that the Churches of *New-England* were formerly very narrow in their Principles, and uncharitable to thoſe who differed from them; they had no Notions of Liberty of Conſcience, but were for forcing Men to their publick Aſſemblies by Fines and Impriſonment; but I muſt do the preſent Magiſtrates and Miniſters of the Country ſo much Juſtice as to inform the World, that they are Men of truly moderate Principles, who have a becoming Zeal for Truth, but are Enemies to all Sorts of Perſecution for Conſcience-Sake. Remarkable are the Words of the Reverend Mr. *Coleman*, one of the Miniſters of *Boſton*, in his Sermon preached on a Faſt-Day, *March* 22, 1716. "* If "there be any Cuſtoms in our Churches (ſays he) "derived from our Anceſtors, wherein thoſe Terms "of Church-Communion are impoſed which Chriſt "has not impoſed in the *New Teſtament*, they ought "to be laid aſide, for they are juſtly to be con-"demned by us, becauſe we complain of Impoſi-"tions in other Communions, and our Fathers fled "from the ſame. If there ever was a Cuſtom a-"mong us, whereby Communion in our Churches "was made a Teſt for the Enjoyment of Civil Pri-"vileges in the State, we have done well long "ſince to aboliſh ſuch corrupt and perſecuting "Maxims, which are a Miſchief to any free People, "and a Scandal to any Communion to retain. If "there were of old among our Fathers any Laws

* *Page* 20, 21, 22,

enacted,

" enacted, or Judgments given, and Executions " done according to thoſe Laws which have carry'd " too much the Face of Cruelty and Perſecution, " we ought to be humbled greatly for ſuch Errors " of our Fathers, and confeſs them to have been " ſinful; and bleſſed be God for the more Catho- " lick Spirit of Charity, which now diſtinguiſhes " us: Or, if any of our Fathers have dealt " proudly in cenſuring and judging others who " differ'd from them in Modes of Worſhip, let us " their Poſterity the rather be clothed with Hu- " mility, Meekneſs, and Charity, preſerving Truth " and Holineſs with the laudable Zeal of our Pre- " deceſſors." And Dr. *Cotton Mather* has a Paſſage to the ſame Purpoſe worthy the Reader's Obſervation. " * In this Capital City of *Boſton* (ſays " he) there are Ten Aſſemblies of Chriſtians of " different Perſwaſions, who live ſo lovingly and " peaceably together, doing all the Offices of good " Neighbourhood for one another in ſuch a Man- " ner, as may give a ſenſible Rebuke to all the Bi- " gots of Uniformity, and ſhew them how con- " ſiſtent a Variety of Rites in Religion may be " with the Tranquillity of humane Society, and " may demonſtrate to the World, that Perſecution " for conſcientious Diſſents in Religion is *an Abo- " mination of Deſolation*, a Thing whereof all wiſe " and juſt Men will ſay, *Curſed be its Anger, for it " is fierce, and its Wrath, for it is cruel.*"

THE Ordination of Miniſters in *New-England* is perform'd by the Impoſitions of the Hands of the Paſtors of the neighbouring Churches, after the Manner of the *Presbyterians* in *England*, with this Difference, that they never ordain, but to a *Cure*, or upon an Election of ſome Church to the Pa-

* *Fellowſhip of the Churches annex'd to the Ordination-Sermon of Mr.* Prince, *p.* 76. Boſton, 1718.

ſtoral Office among them; they have one *Peculiarity* in their Ordinations, which is no-where elſe to be met with, that is, the Deputies of the ſeveral Churches being aſſembled in Council, before the Solemnity is performed, commiſſion one of their Miniſters to take the ordained Perſon by the Hand immediately after his Inveſtiture into his Office, and in their Names give him the *Right-Hand of the Fellowſhip of the Churches.*

The Salaries of the Miniſters of *Boſton* are made up of the voluntary Contributions of the People collected every Lord's Day in their Meeting-Houſes in Time of Divine Service, after the Manner of the *Dutch* Churches, which are paid them by the Deacons every *Monday* Morning; and it muſt be confeſs'd, to the Honour of that Town, that their Miniſters are very well provided for; but in the Countries, the Miniſter contracts with his People for a certain Stipend, which is uſually but ſmall, and very indifferently paid; the Miniſter indeed has his Remedy at Law againſt Defaulters, but if he ſhould ſue any of his Pariſhioners, he muſt bid adieu to his Preaching in that Place; and after all, the Maintenance of the Country Miniſters is but barely ſufficient to ſupport themſelves and their Families, which is not only a Diſcouragement to Learning, but tends to render the Sacred Office of the Miniſtry itſelf contemptible.

The Laws of the Country againſt Prophaneneſs and Immorality are ſtrictly put in Execution, inſomuch that there is as great an Appearance of Sobriety and Virtue in *New-England*, as in any Place in the World: There are no Games, nor Plays; Swearing, Drunkenneſs, and all Sorts of Debauchery are out of Faſhion, ſo that a Rake that goes thither from *Europe* is not only out of his Element, but will find no Perſons of Reputation or Character to keep him Company; there are no idle Vagabonds, nor ſo much as a Beggar in the whole

whole Country, which is owing in Part to the Religious Care of the *New-Engliſh* Planters in the Education of their Youth, for every Town of fifty Families is obliged by Law to maintain a School for Writing and Reading; and every Town of an Hundred Families a Grammar-School; ſo that there is hardly a Child of nine or ten Years old throughout the whole Country but can read and write, and ſay his Catechiſm. Upon the whole, the People of *New-England* are a ſober and induſtrious People, ſtrict in their Morals, and very regular in their Lives; they have as much Knowledge and good Senſe in Religion as any of their Neighbours, and value themſelves as much upon it.

Their Cuſtoms and Manners.

Their Cuſtoms and Manners are much the ſame with the *Engliſh*; but as their Mode of Worſhip differs from ours, ſo they have ſome *Peculiarities*, which perhaps the *Engliſh* Reader may not be acquainted with; as for Example, they have no *Liturgy* or *Form of Prayer* for publick Worſhip: They obſerve no Saints Days, nor any of the Faſts and Feaſts of the Church of *England*, or any other Church: But their Grand Feſtivals are the Day of the annual Election of Magiſtrates at *Boſton*, which is the latter End of *May*; and the Commencement at *Cambridge*, which is the laſt *Wedneſday* in *July*, when all Buſineſs is laid aſide, and the People are as chearful among their Friends and Neighbours, as the *Engliſh* are at *Chriſtmas*.

They have a greater Veneration for the Evening of *Saturday* than for that of the *Lord's Day* itſelf, looking upon it more agreeable to the *Moſaic* Inſtitution, which ſays, *the Evening and Morning were the firſt Day*; ſo that all Buſineſs is laid aſide all over *New-England* by Sun-ſet, or 6 a-Clock on *Saturday*-Night. The Sabbath itſelf is kept with great Strictneſs; no-body being to be ſeen in the Streets

Streets in Time of Divine Service, except the Conſtables, who are appointed to ſearch all the publick Houſes; but in the Evening they allow themſelves a great Liberty and Freedom.

The firſt Planters ſcrupled the Ceremony of Kiſſing the Book when they took an Oath; and many honeſt People under the arbitrary Government of Sir *Edmund Andros* were put by ſerving on Juries on this Account; though the ancient Cuſtom of the Colony, and even the Law itſelf enjoyns the Rite of lifting up the Hand in Swearing, which is the common Practice at this Time.

All Marriages in *New-England* were formerly perform'd by the Civil Magiſtrate, but of late they are more frequently ſolemnized by the Clergy who imitate the Method preſcribed by the Church of *England*, except in their Collects, and the Ceremony of the Ring. They have no Service for the Dead, but bury without the Town, after the Manner of the Diſſenters in *England*.

But in the Concerns of Civil Life, as in their Dreſs, Tables, and Converſation, they affect to be as much *Engliſh* as poſſible; there is no Faſhion in *London*, but in three or four Months is to be ſeen at *Boſton*, nay, they are fond of the very Name and Perſon of an *Engliſh* Man, inſomuch that ſome who have had no great Affection for the People on the Account of their Preciſeneſs, have yet been ſo agreeably entertain'd by them, as to leave the Country with Regret. In ſhort, the only Difference between an *Old* and a *New-Engliſh* Man is in his *Religion*; and here the Diſagreement is chiefly about the Liturgy, and Church-Government, the one being for a National Church, govern'd by *Arch-Biſhops*, *Biſhops*, and a *Convocation*: The other eſteeming all Miniſters to be of the ſame Order, and every Society of Chriſtians meeting together in the ſame Place, a compleat Chriſtian Church, having all Eccleſiaſtical Juriſdiction within itſelf, with-

without being ſubject to a Claſſis, Synod, or Convocation any further than for Advice.

Their Political Intereſts.

It can't be denied but there are two State-Factions in *New-England*, as well as in moſt Kingdoms of *Europe*, which have ariſen partly from a private narrow *Spirit* in ſome leading Men, who are a Sort of Spies upon the Goverment they live under, and expreſs their Diſlike of the Management of publick Affairs in all Companies, chiefly becauſe themſelves have no Share in it; but I can aſſure the World, that *Religion* is no Part of the Quarrel, for there being no Sacramental Teſt for Preferments in the State, all Parties of Chriſtians among them are eaſy; Happy People! as long as Religion and the State continue on a ſeparate Baſis; the Magiſtrate not medling in Matters of Religion any further than is neceſſary for the Preſervation of the publick Peace; nor the Churches calling for the Sword of the Magiſtrate to back their Eccleſiaſtical Cenſures with corporal Severities. May they long continue on this Foot a Sanctuary to oppreſſed *Proteſtants* in all Parts of the World!

But after all, it will be impoſſible for *New-England* to ſubſiſt of itſelf for ſome Centuries of Years; for tho' they might maintain themſelves againſt their Neighbours on the Continent, they muſt ſtarve without a free Trade with *Europe*, the Manufactures of the Country being very inconſiderable; ſo that if we could ſuppoſe them to rebel againſt *England*, they muſt throw themſelves into the Arms of ſome other *Potentate*, who would protect them no longer than he could ſell them to Advantage; the *French* and *Spaniards* are Enemies to their Religion and Civil Liberties, and the *Dutch* are too cautious a People, to run the Hazard of loſing their own Country, for the Alliance of another at ſo great a Diſtance; 'Tis therefore the Grand Intereſt of

New-

New-England to remain ſubject to the Crown of *England*, and by their dutiful Behaviour to merit the Removal of thoſe few Hardſhips and Inconveniences they complain of; no other *Power* can, or will protect them, and next to their own, 'tis impoſſible their Religion and Civil Liberties ſhould be in better Hands than in a Parliament of *England*.

And I muſt do the People of *New-England* ſo much Juſtice as to acquaint the World, that their Inclinations as well as Duty lead them to this; they love the *Engliſh* Conſtitution, and would live and dye in the Defence of it, becauſe when that is gone, they know their own muſt ſoon follow; In the Reigns of King *Charles* and King *James* II. all the Men of Reflection throughout the Country ſeem'd to be diſpirited, and in Pain for the *Proteſtant Religion*, and *Engliſh Liberty*, but when the good Providence of God brought about the Happy Revolution, they began a Jubilee of Joy, which has continued almoſt ever ſince. When the Proteſtant Succeſſion in the Illuſtrious Houſe of *Hannover* was in Danger, no People in the World pray'd more heartily for its taking Place; and when it pleaſed Almighty God to bring His Majeſty to the Throne of his Anceſtors, none of his Subjects in any Part of his Dominions celebrated the Auſpicious Day with louder Acclamations of Joy and Thankfulneſs. In a Word, the People of *New-England* are a Dutiful and Loyal People, and *that* which the Proteſtant-Diſſenters of the City of *London*, declared with ſo much Juſtice to His Majeſty, in their *Addreſs* occaſioned by the late Rebellion, is litterally true of their Brethren in this Country, That King George *is not known to have a ſingle Enemy to His Perſon, Family, or Government in all* New-England.

FINIS.

APPEN-



APPENDIX.

[NUMB. I.]

The CHARTER *granted by their Majeſties King* WILLIAM *and Queen* MARY, &c.

WILLIAM and MARY, by the Grace of GOD, of *England*, *Scotland*, *France* and *Ireland*, King and Queen, Defenders of the FAITH, &c. To all to whom theſe Preſents ſhall come greeting; Whereas his late Majeſty King *James* the Firſt, our Royal Predeceſſor, by his Letters Patents under the Great Seal of *England*, bearing Date at *Weſtminſter* the third Day of *November*, in the 18th Year of his Reign, did give and grant unto the Council eſtabliſhed at *Plimouth*, in the County of *Devon*, for the planting, ruling, ordering, and governing of *New-England* in *America*, and to their Succeſſors and Aſſigns, all that part of *America* lying and being in Breadth from 40 Degrees of Northerly Latitude from the Equinoctial Line to the 48th Degree of the ſaid Northerly Latitude inclusively, and in length of, and within all the Breadth aforeſaid, throughout all the main

Lands from Sea to Sea, together alſo with all the firm Lands, Soils, Grounds, Havens, Ports, Rivers, Waters, Fiſhings, Mines and Minerals, as well Royal Mines of Gold and Silver, as other Mines and Minerals, precious Stones, Quarries, and all, and ſingular other Commodities, Juriſdictions, Royalties, Privileges, Franchiſes and Preheminences, both within the ſaid Tract of Land upon the Main, and alſo within the Iſlands and Seas adjoining; provided always, that the ſaid Lands, Iſlands, or any the Premiſes by the ſaid Letters Patents intended, and meant to be granted, were not then actually poſſeſſed, or inhabited by any other Chriſtian Prince or State, or within the Bounds, Limits, or Territories of the ſouthern Colony then before granted, by the ſaid late King *James* the Firſt, to be planted by divers of his ſubjects in the ſouth parts: To have, to hold, poſſeſs and enjoy all, and ſingular the aforeſaid Continent-Lands, Territories, Iſlands, Hereditaments, and Precincts, Seas, Waters, Fiſhing, with all, and all manner of their Commodities, Royalties, Liberties, Preheminences, and Profits that ſhould from thenceforth ariſe from thence, with all, and ſingular their Appurtenances, and every Part and Parcel thereof unto the ſaid Council, and their Succeſſors and Aſſigns for ever, to the ſole and proper Uſe and Benefit of the ſaid Council, and their Succeſſors and Aſſigns for ever: To be holden of his ſaid late Majeſty King *James* the Firſt, his Heirs and Succeſſors, as of his Mannor of *Eaſt-Greenwich* in the County of *Kent*, in free and common ſoccage, and not *in Capite*, nor by Knight's ſervice; yielding and paying therefore to the late King, his Heirs and Succeſſors, the fifth Part of the Oar of Gold and Silver, which ſhould from Time to Time, and at all Times then after happen to be found, had, and obtained, in, at, or within any of the ſaid Lands, Limits, Territories, or Precincts, or, in, or within any Part, or Parcel thereof, for, or in Reſpect of all, and all manner of Duties, Demands, and Service whatſoever, to be done, made, or paid to the ſaid late King *James* the Firſt, his Heirs and Succeſſors, (as in, and by the ſaid Letters Patents, amongſt ſundry other Clauſes, Powers, Privileges, and Grants therein contain'd, more at large appeareth): And whereas the ſaid Council eſtabliſhed at *Plimouth*, in the County of *Devon*, for the planting,

planting, ruling, ordering, and governing of *New-England* in *America*, did by their Deed indented under their common ſeal, bearing Date the 19th of *March*, in the Third Year of the Reign of our Royal Grand-Father King *Charles* the Firſt, of ever-bleſſed Memory, give, grant, bargain, ſell, infeoff, alien, and confirm to Sir *Henry Roſwell*, Sir *John Young*, Knights, *Thomas Southcott*, *John Humphreys*, *John Endicott*, and *Simon Whetcombe*, their Heirs and Aſſigns, and their Aſſociates, for ever all that Part of *New-England* in *America* aforeſaid, which lyes and extends between a great River there, commonly called *Monamack*, *alias Merimack*, and a certain other River there called *Charles-River*, being in a Bottom of a certain Bay there, commonly called *Maſſachuſetts*, *alias Mattachuſetts*, *alias Maſſatuſetts-Bay*; and alſo all, and ſingular thoſe Lands, and Hereditaments whatſoever lying within the ſpace of three *Engliſh* Miles on the ſouth part of the ſaid *Charles-River*, or of any, and every part thereof; and alſo all, and ſingular the Lands, and Hereditaments whatſoever, lying, and being within the ſpace of three *Engliſh* Miles to the ſouthward of the ſouthermoſt part of the ſaid Bay, called *Maſſachuſets*, *alias Mattachuſets*, *alias Maſſatuſets-Bay*; and alſo all thoſe Lands and Hereditaments whatſoever which lye, and be within the ſpace of three *Engliſh* Miles to the Northward of the ſaid River, called *Monomack*, *alias Merimack*, or to the Northward of any, and every Part thereof, and all Lands and Hereditaments whatſoever, lying within the limits aforeſaid north and ſouth in latitude, and in breadth, and in length, and longitude, of, and within all the Breadth aforeſaid throughout the main Lands there, from the *Atlantick* and weſtern Sea and Ocean on the Eaſt part, to the ſouth Sea on the Weſt Part, and all Lands and Grounds, Place and Places, Soil, Woods, and Wood-Grounds, Havens, Ports, Rivers, Waters, Fiſhings and Hereditaments whatſoever, lying within the ſaid Bounds and Limits, and every Part and Parcel thereof, and alſo, all Iſlands lying in *America* aforeſaid, in the ſaid Seas, or either of them on the Weſtern or Eaſtern Coaſts, or Parts of the ſaid Tracts of Land, by the ſaid Indenture mentioned to be given and granted, bargained, ſold, enfeoffed, aliened, and confirm'd, or any of them; and alſo, all Mines and Mi-

nerals, as well Royal Mines of Gold and Silver, as other Mines and Minerals whatſoever in the ſaid Lands and Premiſſes, or any Part thereof, and all Juriſdictions, Rights, Royalties, Liberties, Freedoms, Immunities, Privileges, Franchiſes, Preheminences, and Commodities whatſoever, which they the ſaid Council eſtabliſh'd at *Plimouth*, in the County of *Devon*, for the planting, ruling, ordering, and governing of *New-England* in *America*, then had, or might uſe, exerciſe, or enjoy, in, or within the ſaid Lands or Premiſſes, by the ſame Indenture mentioned to be given, granted, bargained, ſold, enfeoffed, and confirm'd in, or within any Part, or Parcel thereof: To have, and to hold the ſaid Part of *New-England* in *America*, which lyes and extends, and is abutted as aforeſaid, and every Part and Parcel thereof, and all the ſaid Iſlands, Rivers, Ports, Havens, Waters, Fiſhings, Mines, Minerals, Juriſdictions, Franchiſes, Royalties, Liberties, Privileges, Commodities, Hereditaments and Premiſſes whatſoever, with the Appurtenances, unto the ſaid Sir *Henry Roſwell*, Sir *John Young*, *Thomas Southcott*, *John Humphreys*, *John Endicott*, and *Simon Whetcombe*, their Heirs and Aſſigns, and their Aſſociates for ever, to the only proper and abſolute Uſe and Behoof of the ſaid Sir *Henry Roſwell*, Sir *John Young*, *Thomas Southcott*, *John Humphreys*, *John Endicott*, and *Simon Whetcombe*, their Heirs, and Aſſigns, and their Aſſociates for evermore: To be holden of our ſaid Royal Grandfather King *Charles* the Firſt, his Heirs and Succeſſors, as of his Mannor of *Eaſt-Greenwich*, in the County of *Kent*, in free and common ſoccage, and not *in Capite*, nor by Knights ſervice, yielding, and paying therefore unto our ſaid Royal Grand-Father, his Heirs, and Succeſſors, the fifth part of the Oar of Gold and Silver, which ſhould from Time to Time, and at all Times hereafter, happen to be found, gotten, had, and obtain'd in any the ſaid Land within the ſaid Limits, or, in, or within any Part thereof, for, and in ſatisfaction of all manner of Duties, Demands, and ſervices whatſoever, to be done, made, or paid to our ſaid Royal Grandfather, his Heirs or Succeſſors, (as in and by the ſaid recited Indenture may more at large appear): And whereas our ſaid Royal Grandfather in, and by his Letters Patents under the Great Seal

of

of *England*, bearing Date at *Weſtminſter* the 4th Day of *March*, in the 4th Year of his Reign, for the conſideration therein mentioned, did give, grant, and confirm unto the ſaid Sir *Henry Roſwell*, Sir *John Young*, *Thomas Southcott*, *John Humphreys*, *John Endicott*, and *Simon Whetcombe*, and their Aſſociates before-named, *viz.* Sir *Richard Salſtonſtall*, Knight, *Iſaac Johnſon*, *Samuel Alderſey*, *John Ven*, *Mathew Craddock*, *George Harwood*, *Increaſe Nowell*, *Richard Perry*, *Richard Bellingham*, *Nathaniel Wright*, *Samuel Vaſſall*, *Theophilus Eaton*, *Thomas Goffe*, *Thomas Adams*, *John Brown*, *Samuel Brown*, *Thomas Hutchins*, *William Vaſſal*, *William Pincheon*, and *George Foxcroft*, their Heirs and Aſſigns, all the ſaid part of *New-England* in *America*, lying and extending between the Bounds and Limits in the ſaid Indenture expreſſed, and all Lands, and Grounds, Place, and Places, Soils, Woods, and Wood-grounds, Havens, Ports, Rivers, Waters, Mines, Minerals, Juriſdictions, Rights, Royalties, Liberties, Freedoms, Immunities, Privileges, Franchiſes, Preheminences, and Hereditaments whatſoever, bargained, ſold, enfeoffed, and confirm'd, or mentioned, or intended to be given, granted, bargained, ſold, enfeoffed, alien'd, and confirm'd to them the ſaid Sir *Henry Roſwell*, Sir *John Young*, *Thomas Southcott*, *John Humphreys*, *John Endicott*, and *Simon Whetcombe*, their Heirs and Aſſigns, and to their Aſſociates for ever, by the ſaid recited Indenture, to have, and to hold the ſaid part of *New-England* in *America*, and others the Premiſſes thereby mentioned to be granted and confirmed, and every Part and Parcel thereof, with the Appurtenances, to the ſaid Sir *Henry Roſwell*, Sir *John Young*, Sir *Richard Salſtonſtall*, *Thomas Southcott*, *John Humphreys*, *John Endicott*, *Simon Whetcombe*, *Iſaac Johnſon*, *Samuel Alderſey*, *John Ven*, *Matthew Craddock*, *George Harwood*, *Increaſe Nowell*, *Richard Perry*, *Richard Bellingham*, *Nathaniel Wright*, *Samuel Vaſſall*, *Theophilus Eaton*, *Thomas Goffe*, *Thomas Adams*, *John Brown*, *Samuel Brown*, *Thomas Hutchins*, *William Vaſſall*, *William Pincheon*, and *George Foxcroft*, their Heirs and Aſſigns for ever, to their only, proper, and abſolute Uſe and Behalf for evermore, to be holden of our ſaid Royal Grandfather, his Heirs and Succeſſors, as of his Mannor of *East-Greenwich* aforeſaid, in free

and common ſoccage, and not *in Capite*, nor by Knight's ſervice, and alſo yielding, and paying therefore to our ſaid Royal Grandfather, his Heirs, and Succeſſors, the fifth Part only of all the Oar of Gold and Silver, which from Time to Time, and at all Times after ſhould be there gotten, had, or obtained, for all Services, Exactions, and Demands whatſoever, according to the Tenor and Reſervation in the ſaid recited Indenture expreſſed. And further, our ſaid Royal Grandfather by the ſaid Letters Patents did give and grant unto the ſaid Sir *Henry Roſwell*, Sir *John Young*, Sir *Richard Saltonſtall*, *Thomas Southcott*, *John Humphreys*, *John Endicott*, *Simon Whetcombe*, *Iſaac Johnſon*, *Samuel Alderſey*, *John Ven*, *Matthew Craddock*, *George Harwood*, *Increaſe Nowell*, *Richard Perry*, *Richard Bellingham*, *Nathaniel Wright*, *Samuel Vaſſall*, *William Pincheon*, and *George Foxcroft*, their Heirs and Aſſigns, all that ſaid part of *New England* in *America*, which lyes and extends between a great River there, commonly called *Monomack*, *alias Merimack-River*, and a certain other River there called *Charles River*, being in the Bottom of a certain Bay there commonly called *Maſſachuſetts*, *alias Mattachuſetts*, *alias Maſſacuſetts Bay*; and alſo all and ſingular thoſe Lands and Hereditaments whatſoever; lying within the ſpace of three *Engliſh* Miles, on the South Part of the ſaid River called *Charles-River*, or of any, or every Part thereof, and alſo all and ſingular the Lands and Hereditaments whatſoever, lying, and being within the ſpace of three *Engliſh* Miles to the ſouthward of the ſouthermoſt Part of the ſaid Bay called *Maſſachuſetts*, *alias Mattacuſetts*, *alias Maſſachuſetts Bay*, and alſo all thoſe Lands and Hereditaments whatſoever, which lye and be within the ſpace of three *Engliſh* Miles to the Northward of the ſaid River called *Monomack*, *alias Merimack*, or to the Northward of any and every Part thereof, and all Lands and Hereditaments whatſoever lying within the Limits aforeſaid, North and ſouth in Latitude, and in Breadth, and in Length, and Longitude of, and within all the Breadth aforeſaid, throughout the main Lands there, from the *Atlantick* or Weſtern Sea and Ocean on the Eaſt Part, to the ſouth Sea on the Weſt Part, and all Lands, Grounds, Place and Places, Soils, Woods, and Wood lands, Ha-

vens,

vens, Ports, Rivers, Waters, and Hereditaments whatſoever, lying within the ſaid Bounds and Limits, and every Part and Parcel thereof; and alſo, all Iſlands in *America* aforeſaid in the ſaid Seas, or either of them on the Weſtern or Eaſtern Coaſts, or Parts of the ſaid Tracts of Lands, thereby mention'd to be given and granted, or any of them, and all Mines and Minerals, as well Royal Mines of Gold and Silver, as other Mines and Minerals whatſoever in the ſaid Lands and Premiſſes, or any Part thereof, and free Liberty of Fiſhing in, or within any of the Rivers, or Waters within the Bounds and Limits aforeſaid, and the Seas thereunto adjoining, and all Fiſhes, Royal Fiſhes, Whales, Balene, Sturgeon, and other Fiſhes of what Kind or Nature ſoever, that ſhould at any Time thereafter be taken in, or within the ſaid Seas, or Waters, or any of them, by the ſaid Sir *Henry Roſwell*, Sir *John Young*, Sir *Richard Salſtonſtall*, *Thomas Southcott*, *John Humphreys*, *John Endicott*, *Simon Whetcombe*, *Iſaac Johnſon*, *Samuel Alderſey*, *John Ven*, *Matthew Craddock*, *George Harwood*, *Increaſe Nowell*, *Richard Perry*, *Richard Bellingham*, *Nathaniel Wright*, *Samuel Vaſſall*, *Theophilus Eaton*, *Thomas Goffe*, *Thomas Adams*, *John Brown*, *Samuel Brown*, *Thomas Hutchins*, *William Vaſſall*, *William Pincheon*, and *George Foxcroft*, their Heirs, or Aſſigns, or by any other Perſon, or Perſons whatſoever there inhabiting, by them, or any of them to be appointed to fiſh therein. Provided always, that if the ſaid Lands, Iſlands, or any the Premiſſes beforementioned, and by the ſaid Letters Patents laſt mentioned, intended, and meant to be granted, were at the Time of the granting of the ſaid former Letters Patents, dated the third Day of *November*, in the 18th Year of the Reign of his late Majeſty King *James* the Firſt, actually poſſeſs'd, or inhabited by any other Chriſtian Prince, or State, or were within the Bounds, Limits, or Territories of the ſaid ſouthern Colony then before granted by the ſaid King, to be planted by divers of his loving ſubjects in the ſouth part of *America*, that then the ſaid Grant of our ſaid Royal Grandfather ſhould not extend to any ſuch parts or parcels thereof ſo formerly inhabited, or lying within the Bounds of the ſouthern Plantation as aforeſaid. But as to thoſe parts or parcels ſo poſſeſſed,

or inhabited by any ſuch Chriſtian Prince or State, or being within the Boundaries aforeſaid, ſhould be utterly void; to have, and to hold, poſſeſs, and enjoy the ſaid parts of *New-England* in *America*, which lye, extend, and are abutted, as aforeſaid, and every part and parcel thereof, and all the Iſlands, Rivers, Ports, Havens, Waters, Fiſhings, Fiſhes, Mines, Minerals, Juriſdictions, Franchiſes, Royalties, Liberties, Privileges, Commodities, and Premiſſes whatſoever, with the Appurtenances, unto the ſaid Sir *Henry Roſwell*, Sir *John Young*, Sir *Richard Salſtonſtall*, *Thomas Southcott*, *John Humphreys*, *John Endicott*, *Simon Whetcombe*, *Iſaac Johnſon*, *Samuel Alderſey*, *John Ven*, *Matthew Craddock*, *George Harwood*, *Increaſe Nowell*, *Richard Perry*, *Richard Bellingham*, *Nathaniel Wright*, *Samuel Vaſſall*, *Theophilus Eaton*, *Thomas Goffe*, *Thomas Adams*, *John Brown*, *Samuel Brown*, *Thomas Hutchins*, *William Vaſſall*, *William Pincheon*, and *George Foxcroft*, their Heirs and Aſſigns for ever, to the only Uſe and Behoof of the ſaid Sir *Henry Roſwell*, Sir *John Young*, Sir *Richard Salſtonſtall*, *Thomas Southcott*, *John Humphreys*, *John Endicott*, *Simon Whetcombe*, *Iſaac Johnſon*, *Samuel Alderſey*, *John Ven*, *Matthew Craddock*, *George Harwood*, *Increaſe Nowell*, *Richard Perry*, *Richard Bellingham*, *Nathaniel Wright*, *Samuel Vaſſall*, *Theophilus Eaton*, *Thomas Goffe*, *Thomas Adams*, *John Brown*, *Samuel Brown*, *Thomas Hutchins*, *William Vaſſall*, *William Pincheon*, and *George Foxcroft*, their Heirs and Aſſigns for evermore, to be holden of our Royal Grandfather, his Heirs and Succeſſors, as of his Mannor of *Eaſt Greenwich* in the County of *Kent*, within the Realm of *England*, in free and common ſoccage, and not *in Capite*, nor by Knight's ſervice: And alſo yielding and paying therefore to our ſaid Royal Grandfather, his Heirs and Succeſſors, the fifth part only of all the Oar of Gold and Silver, which from Time to Time, and at all Times hereafter ſhould be gotten, had, or obtained for all Services, Exactions and Demands whatſoever: Provided always, and his Majeſty's expreſs Will and Meaning was, that only one fifth part of all the gold and ſilver Oar above-mentioned in the whole, and no more ſhould be anſwered, reſerv'd, or payable unto our ſaid Royal Grandfather, his Heirs and Succeſſors, by colour or vertue of the ſaid laſt mentioned

Letters

Letters Patents, the double Reſervation, or Recitals aforeſaid, any thing contain'd therein notwithſtanding. And to the end that the affairs and Buſineſs which from Time to Time ſhould happen and ariſe concerning the ſaid Lands, and the Plantations of the ſame might be the better manag'd and order'd, and for the good government thereof; Our ſaid Royal Grandfather King *Charles* the Firſt did by his ſaid Letters Patents create and make the ſaid Sir *Henry Roſwell*, Sir *John Young*, Sir *Richard Salſtonſtall*, *Thomas Southcott*, *John Humphreys*, *John Endicott*, *Simon Whetcombe*, *Iſaac Johnſon*, *Samuel Alderſey*, *John Ven*, *Matthew Craddock*, *George Harwood*, *Increaſe Nowell*, *Richard Perry*, *Richard Bellingham*, *Nathaniel Wright*, *Samuel Vaſſall*, and *Theophilus Eaton*, *Thomas Goffe*, *Thomas Adams*, *John Brown*, *Samuel Brown*, *Thomas Hutchins*, *William Vaſſall*, *William Pincheon*, and *George Foxcroft*, and all ſuch others as ſhould thereafter be admitted and made free of the company and ſociety therein aftermentioned, one Body corporate and politick in Fact and Name, by the Name of, *The Governour and Company of the Maſſachuſetts Bay in New England*; and did grant unto them and their ſucceſſors, divers Powers, Liberties, and Privileges, as in, and by the ſaid Letters Patents may more fully and at large appear: And whereas the ſaid Governour and Company of the *Maſſachuſetts Bay* in *New England*, by vertue of the ſaid Letters Patents did ſettle a Colony of the *Engliſh* in the ſaid parts of *America*, and divers good ſubjects of this Kingdom encouraged and invited by the ſaid Letters Patents, did tranſport themſelves and their Effects into the ſame, whereby the ſaid Plantation did become very populous, and divers Counties, Towns, and Places were created, erected, made, and ſet forth, or deſigned within the ſaid parts of *America*, by the ſaid Governour and Company for the Time being: And whereas in the ſaid Term of the *Holy Trinity*, in the 36th Year of the Reign of our deareſt Uncle King *Charles* II. a Judgment was given in our Court of *Chancery* then ſitting at *Weſtminſter*, upon a Writ of *ſcire facias*, brought and proſecuted in the ſaid Court againſt the Governour and Company of the *Maſſachuſetts Bay* in *New England*, that the ſaid Letters Patents of our ſaid Royal Grandfather King

Charles

Charles the Firſt, bearing Date at *Weſtminſter* the 4th Day of *March*, in the Fourth Year of his Reign, made and granted to the ſaid Governour and Company of the *Maſſachuſetts Bay* in *New England*, and the Enrollment of the ſame, ſhould be cancell'd, vacated and annihilated, and ſhould be brought into the ſaid Court to be cancell'd (as in and by the ſaid Judgment remaining upon Record in the ſaid Court, doth more at large appear): And whereas ſeveral perſons employ'd as Agents in behalf of our ſaid Colony of the *Maſſachuſetts-Bay* in *New-England*, have made their humble Application unto us, That we would be graciouſly pleaſed by our Royal Charter, to incorporate our Subjects in our ſaid Colony, and to grant and confirm unto them ſuch Powers, Privileges and Franchiſes as in our Royal Wiſdom ſhould be thought moſt conducing to our Intereſt and Service, and to the Welfare and happy State of our Subjects in *New-England*; and we being graciouſly pleaſed to gratify our ſaid Subjects, and alſo to the end our good Subjects within our Colony of *New Plymouth* in *New-England*, aforeſaid, may be brought under ſuch a Form of Government, as may put them in a better Condition of Defence; and conſidering as well the granting unto them as unto our Subjects in the ſaid Colony of the *Maſſachuſetts-Bay*, our Royal Charter, with reaſonable Powers and Privileges, will much tend, not only to the Safety, but to the flouriſhing Eſtate of our Subjects in the ſaid Parts of *New England*, and alſo to the advancing of the Ends for which the ſaid Plantations were firſt encourag'd; Of our ſpecial Grace, certain Knowledge, and mere Motion, have will'd and ordain'd, and we do by theſe Preſents for us, our Heirs and Succeſſors, will and ordain, That the Factories and Colonies, commonly called and known by the Names of the Colony of the *Maſſachuſſetts Bay*, and Colony of *New-Plymouth*, the Province of *Main*, the Territories call'd *Acadia*, or *Nova Scotia*; and that all the Tract of Land lying between the ſaid Territories of *Nova Scotia* and the ſaid Province of *Main*, be erected, united and incorporated; and we do by theſe Preſents unite, erect and incorporate the ſame into one real Province, by Name of our Province of the *Maſſachuſetts Bay* in

New-

New-England, and of our eſpecial Grace, certain Knowledge, and mere Motion, we have given and granted, and by theſe Preſents for us, our Heirs and Succeſſors, do give and grant unto our good Subjects, the Inhabitants of our ſaid Province, or Territory of the *Maſſachuſetts Bay*, and their Succeſſors, all that part of *New-England* in *America*, lying and extending from the great River, commonly call'd *Monomack* alias *Merimack*, on the North part, and from three Miles Northward of the ſaid River to the Atlantick, or Weſtern Sea or Ocean, on the South part, and all the Lands and Hereditaments whatſoever, lying within the Limits aforeſaid, and extending as far as the outermoſt Points or Promontories of Land call'd *Cape Codd*, and *Cape Mallabar*, North and South, and in Latitude, Breadth, and in Length and Longitude, of and with all the Breadth and Compaſs aforeſaid, throughout the main Land there, from the ſaid *Atlantick* or Weſtern Sea, and Ocean on the Eaſt part, towards the *South-Sea*, or Weſtward as far as our Colonies of *Rhode-Iſland*, *Connecticutt*, and the *Narrhaganſet* Country; and alſo all that part and portion of main Land, beginning at the Entrance of *Piſcataqua Harbour*, and ſo to paſs up the ſame into the River of *Newichwannick*, and through the ſame into the furtheſt Head thereof, and from thence Northweſtward, till one Hundred and Twenty Miles be finiſhed, and from *Piſcataqua* Harbour Mouth aforeſaid, North-eaſtward along the Sea-Coaſt to *Sagadehock*; and from the period of one Hundred and 20 Miles aforeſaid, to croſs over Land to the One Hundred and Twenty Miles, before reckon'd up, into the Land of *Piſcataqua* Harbour, through *Newichwannick* River, and alſo the North half of the Iſles of *Shoals*, together with the Iſles of *Capawock* and *Nantucket*, near *Cape Codd*, aforeſaid; and all the Lands and Hereditaments lying and being in the Country or Territory commonly call'd *Acadia*, or *Nova Scotia*; and all thoſe Lands and Hereditaments lying and extending between the ſaid Country or Territory of *Nova Scotia*, and the ſaid River of *Sagadehock*, or any part thereof, aud all Lands, Grounds, Places, Soils, Woods and Wood-grounds, Havens, Ports, Rivers, Waters, and other Hereditaments and Premiſes whatſoever, lying within the ſaid

Bounds

Bounds and Limits aforeſaid, and every part and parcel thereof; and alſo all Iſlands and Iſlets lying within Ten Leagues directly oppoſite to the main Land within the ſaid Bounds, and all Mines and Minerals, as well Royal Mines of Gold and Silver, as other Mines and Minerals whatſoever in the ſaid Lands and Premiſes, or any part thereof. To have and to hold the ſaid Territories, Tracts, Countries, Lands, Hereditaments, and all and ſingular other the Premiſſes, with theſe and every of theſe Appurtenances to our ſaid Subjects, the Inhabitants of our ſaid Province of the *Maſſachuſetts-Bay* in *New-England*, and their Succeſſors, to their only proper Uſe and Behoof for evermore, to be holden of us, our Heirs and Succeſſors, as of our Mannors of *Eaſt-Greenwich*, in the County of *Kent*, by Fealty only in free and common ſoccage, yeilding and paying therefore yearly to us, our Heirs and Succeſſors, the fifth part of all gold and ſilver Oar and precious Stones, which ſhall from time to time, and at all times hereafter happen to be found, gotten, had and obtained in any of the ſaid Lands and Premiſſes, or within any part thereof: Provided nevertheleſs, and we do for us, our Heirs and Succeſſors, grant and ordain, that all and every ſuch Lands, Tenements and Hereditaments, and all other Eſtates, which any perſon or perſons, or Bodies politick, or corporate Towns, Villages, Colleges or Schools, do hold and enjoy, or ought to hold and enjoy, within the Bounds aforeſaid, by or under any Grant or Eſtates, duly made and granted by any general Court formerly held, or by Virtue of the Letters Patents herein before recited, or by any other lawful Right or Title whatſoever, ſhall be by ſuch Perſon and Perſons, Bodies politick and corporate, Towns, Villages, Colleges or Schools, their reſpective Heirs, Succeſſors and Aſſigns, for ever hereafter held and enjoy'd, according to the Purport and Intent of ſuch reſpective Grant, under and ſubject nevertheleſs to the Rents and Services thereby reſerv'd or made payable, any Matter or Thing whatſoever to the contrary notwithſtanding; and provided alſo, That nothing herein contained ſhall extend, or be underſtood or taken, to impeach or prejudice any Right, Title, Intereſt or Demand, which *Samuel Allen* of *London*, Merchant,

Merchant, claiming from and under *John Maſon*, Eſq; deceas'd, or any other Perſon or Perſons, hath or have, or claimeth to have, hold or enjoy, of, into or out of any Part or Parts of the Premiſſes ſituate within the Limits abovementioned; but that the ſaid *Samuel Allen*, and all and every ſuch Perſon and Perſons, may and ſhall have, hold, and enjoy the ſame, in ſuch manner (and no other than) as if theſe Preſents had not been or made. It being our further Will and Pleaſure, That no Grants or Conveyances of any Lands, Tenements or Hereditaments to any Towns, Colleges, Schools of Learning, or to any private Perſon or Perſons ſhall be judg'd or taken, to be voided or prejudiced, for, or by reaſon of any Want or Defect of Form, but that the ſame ſtand and remain in force and be maintain'd and adjudg'd, and have Effect in ſuch manner, as the ſame ſhould or ought before the time of the ſaid recited Judgment, according to the Laws and Rules then and there uſually practis'd and allow'd. And we do further, for us, our Heirs and Succeſſors, will, eſtabliſh and ordain, That from henceforth for ever, there ſhall be one Governour, one Lieutenant, or Deputy-Governour, and one Secretary of our ſaid Province or Territory, to be from time to time appointed and commiſſionated by us, our Heirs and Succeſſors, and eight and Twenty Aſſiſtants, or Counſellors, to be adviſing and aſſiſting to the Governour of our ſaid Province or Territory for the Time being, as by theſe Preſents is hereafter directed and appointed; which ſaid Counſellors or Aſſiſtants are to be conſtituted, elected and choſen, in ſuch Form and Manner, as hereafter in theſe Preſents is expreſs'd. And for the better Execution of our Royal Pleaſure and Grant in this behalf, We do by theſe Preſents, for us, our Heirs and Succeſſors, nominate, ordain, make and conſtitute our Truſty and Well-beloved *Simon Broadſtreet*, *John Richards*, *Nathaniel Salſtonſtall*, *Wait Winthrop*, *John Phillips*, *James Ruſſel*, *Samuel Sewall*, *Samuel Appleton*, *Bartholomew Gedney*, *John Hathorn*, *Eliſha Hutchinſon*, *Robert Pike*, *Jonathan Corwin*, *John Jolliffe*, *Adam Winthrop*, *Richard Middlecot*, *John Fiſher*, *Peter Serjeant*, *Joſeph Lynd*, *Samuel Heyman*, *Stephen Maſon*, *Thomas Hinkley*, *William Bradford*, *John Walley*, *Barnabas Lothrop*, *Job Alcot*, *Samuel Daniel*,

Daniel, and *Silvanus Davies*, Eſqs, the firſt and preſent Counſellors or Aſſiſtants of our ſaid Province, to continue in their ſaid reſpective Offices of Truſts of Counſellors or Aſſiſtants, until the laſt *Wedneſday* in *May*, which ſhall be in the Year of our Lord 1693, and until other Counſellors or Aſſiſtants ſhall be choſen and appointed in their ſtead, in ſuch manner as in theſe Preſents is expreſſed. And we do further, by theſe Preſents, conſtitute and appoint our Truſty and Well-beloved *Iſaac Addington*, Eſq; to be our firſt and preſent Secretary of our ſaid Province, during our Pleaſure. And our Will and Pleaſure is, That the Governour of our ſaid Province for the Time being, ſhall have Authority, from time to time, at his Direction, to aſſemble and call together the Counſellors or Aſſiſtants of our ſaid Province for the time being; and that the ſaid Governour, with the ſaid Aſſiſtants or Counſellors, or ſeven of them at the leaſt, ſhall and may, from time to time, hold and keep a Council for the ordering and directing the Affairs of our ſaid Province. And further, we will, and by theſe Preſents for us, our Heirs and Succeſſors, do ordain and grant, that there ſhall and may be convened, held and kept by the Governour for the time being, upon every laſt *Wedneſday* in the Month of *May* every Year for ever, and at all ſuch other times as the Governour of our ſaid Province ſhall think fit, and appoint, a great and general Court or Aſſembly; which ſaid great and general Court or Aſſembly ſhall conſiſt of the Governour and Council or Aſſiſtants for the time being, and of ſuch Freeholders of our ſaid Province or Territory, as ſhall be from time to time elected or deputed by the major part of the Freeholders, and other Inhabitants of the reſpective Towns or Places, who ſhall be preſent at ſuch Elections, each of the ſaid Towns and Places being hereby impowered to elect and depute two perſons, and no more, to ſerve for, and repreſent them reſpectively in the ſaid great and general Court or Aſſembly; To which great and general Court or Aſſembly to be held aforeſaid, we do hereby for us, our Heirs and Succeſſors, give and grant full Power and Authority from time to time to direct, appoint and declare what Number each County, Town and Place ſhall elect and depute, to ſerve for, and repreſent

ſent them reſpectively in the ſaid great and general Court or Aſſembly. Provided always, that no Freeholder, or other Perſon, ſhall have a Vote in the Election of Members to ſerve in any great and general Court or Aſſembly, to be held as aforeſaid, who at the time of ſuch Election ſhall not have an Eſtate of Freehold in Land within our ſaid Province or Territory, to the Value of Forty Shillings *per Annum* at the leaſt, or other Eſtate of Fifty pounds *Sterling*; and that every perſon who ſhall be ſo elected, ſhall, before he ſit or act in the ſaid great and general Court or Aſſembly, take the Oaths mentioned in an Act of Parliament, made in the firſt Year of our Reign, entitled, *An Act for Abrogating of the Oaths of Allegiance and Supremacy, and appointing other Oaths, and thereby appointed to be taken inſtead of the Oaths of Allegiance and Supremacy*: and ſhall make, repeat, and ſubſcribe the Declaration mentioned in the ſaid Acts, before the Governour, or Lieutenant, or Deputy-governour, or any Two of the Aſſiſtants for the Time being, who ſhall be thereunto authorized and appointed by our ſaid Governour. And that the Governour for the Time being, ſhall have full Power and Authority, from time to time, as he ſhall judge neceſſary, to adjourn, prorogue and diſſolve all great and general Courts or Aſſemblies, met and convened as aforeſaid. And our Will and Pleaſure is, and we do hereby, for us, our Heirs and Succeſſors, grant, eſtabliſh and ordain, That yearly, once in every Year, for ever hereafter, the aforeſaid Number of Eight and Twenty Counſellors or Aſſiſtants, ſhall be by the general Court or Aſſembly newly choſen: That is to ſay, Eighteen at leaſt of the Inhabitants of, or Proprietors of Lands within the Territory formerly called *The Colony of the Maſſachuſett's Bay*, and four at the leaſt of the Inhabitants of, or Proprietors of Lands within the Territories formerly called *New-Plymouth*; and three at the leaſt of the Inhabitants of, or Proprietors of Land within the Territory formerly call'd *The Province of Main*, and one at the leaſt of the Inhabitants of, or Proprietors of Lands, within the Territory lying between the River of *Sadagahock* and *Nova Scotia*; and that the ſaid Counſellors or Aſſiſtants, or any of them, ſhall or may at any time hereafter be removed or diſplaced from

from their reſpective Places or Truſt of Counſellors or Aſſiſtants, or any of them, ſhall or may at any time hereafter be remov'd or diſplac'd from their reſpective Places or Truſt of Counſellors or Aſſiſtants, by any great or general Court or Aſſembly, and that if any of the ſaid Counſellors or Aſſiſtants ſhall happen to die, or be remov'd, as aforeſaid, before the general Day of Election, that then, and in every ſuch caſe, the great and general Court or Aſſembly, at their firſt ſitting, may proceed to a new Election of one or more Counſellors or Aſſiſtants, in the room or place of ſuch Counſellors or Aſſiſtants ſo dying or remov'd. And we do further grant and ordain, that it ſhall and may be lawful for the ſaid Governour, with the advice and conſent of the Counſel or Aſſiſtants, from time to time to nominate and appoint Judges, Commiſſioners of *Oyer* and *Terminer*, Sheriffs, Provoſts, Marſhals, Juſtices of the Peace, and other Officers, to our Council and Courts of Juſtice belonging: Provided always, that no ſuch Nomination or Appointment of Officers, be made without Notice firſt given, or Summons iſſued out ſeven Days before ſuch Nomination or Appointment unto ſuch of the ſaid Counſellors or Aſſiſtants as ſhall be at that time reſiding within our ſaid Province. And our Will and Pleaſure is, that the Governour, and Lieutenant or Deputy-Governour, and Counſellors or Aſſiſtants for the time being, and all other Officers to be appointed or choſen, as aforeſaid, ſhall, before the undertaking the Execution of their Offices and Places reſpectively, take their ſeveral and reſpective Oaths for the due and faithful Performance of their Duties in their ſeveral and reſpective Offices and Places; and alſo the Oaths appointed by the ſaid Act of Parliament made in the firſt Year of our Reign, to be taken inſtead of the Oaths of Allegiance and Supremacy, and ſhall make, repeat and ſubſcribe the Declaration mention'd in the ſaid Act, before ſuch perſon or perſons, as are by theſe Preſents herein after appointed: That is to ſay, the Governour of our ſaid Province or Territory, for the time being, ſhall take the ſaid Oaths, and make, repeat and ſubſcribe the ſaid Declaration before the Lieutenant or Deputy-Governour; or, in his Abſence, before any two or more of the ſaid Perſons hereby nominated and appoint-

appointed the preſent Counſellors or Aſſiſtants of our ſaid Province or Territory, to whom we do by theſe Preſents give full Power and Authority to give and adminiſter the ſame to our ſaid Governour accordingly; and after our ſaid Governour ſhall be ſworn, and ſhall have ſubſcribed the ſaid Declaration, that then our Lieutenant or Deputy-governour, for the time being, and the Counſellors or Aſſiſtants before by theſe Preſents nominated and appointed, ſhall take the ſaid Oaths, and make, repeal and ſubſcribe the ſaid Declaration before our ſaid Governour; and that every ſuch perſon or perſons, as ſhall (at any time of the Annual Elections, or otherwiſe upon Death or Removal) be appointed to be the new Counſellors or Aſſiſtants, and all other Officers to be hereafter choſen from time to time, ſhall take the Oaths to their reſpective Offices and Places belonging; and alſo the ſaid Oaths appointed by the ſaid Act of Parliament, to be taken inſtead of the ſaid Oaths of Allegiance and Supremacy, and ſhall make, repeal and ſubſcribe the Declaration mentioned in the ſaid Act, before the Governour or Lieutenant-governour, or any two or more Counſellors or Aſſiſtants, or ſuch other perſon or perſons as ſhall be appointed thereunto by the Governour for the time being; to whom we do therefore by theſe Preſents, give full Power and Authority from time to time, to give and adminiſter the ſame reſpectively, according to our true Meaning herein before declar'd, without any Commiſſion or further Warrant, to be had and obtain'd from us, our Heirs and Succeſſors in that behalf. And our Will and Pleaſure is, and we do hereby require and command, that all and every perſon and perſons hereafter by us, our Heirs and Succeſſors, nominated and appointed to the reſpective Offices of Governour, or Lieutenant, or Deputy-governour, and Secretary of our ſaid Province or Territory (which ſaid Governour, or Lieutenant, or Deputy-governour, and Secretary of our ſaid Province or Territory for the time being; we do hereby reſerve full Power and Authority to us, our Heirs and Succeſſors, to nominate and appoint accordingly) ſhall, before he or they be admitted to the Execution of their reſpective Offices, take as well the Oaths for the due and faithful performance of the ſaid Offices reſpectively,

as alſo the Oath appointed by the ſaid Act of Parliament, made in the firſt Year of our Reign, to be taken inſtead of the ſaid Oaths of Allegiance and Supremacy, and ſhall alſo make, repeat and ſubſcribe the Declaration appointed by the ſaid Act in ſuch manner, and before ſuch perſons as aforeſaid. And further, our Will and Pleaſure is, and we do hereby for us, our Heirs and Succeſſors, grant, eſtabliſh and ordain, That all and every of the Subjects of us, our Heirs and Succeſſors, which ſhall come to and inhabit within our ſaid Province and Territory, and every of their Children which ſhall happen to be born there, or on the Seas in going thither, or returning from thence, ſhall have and enjoy all Liberties and Immunities of free and natural Subjects within any of the Dominions of us, our Heirs and Succeſſors, to all Intents, Conſtructions and purpoſes whatſoever, as if they and every of them were born within this our Realm of *England*. And for the greater Eaſe and Encouragement of our loving Subjects, inhabiting our ſaid Province or Territory of the *Maſſachuſetts Bay*, and of ſuch as ſhall come to inhabit there, we do by theſe preſents for us, our Heirs and Succeſſors, grant, eſtabliſh and ordain, that for ever hereafter, there ſhall be a Liberty of Conſcience allow'd in the Worſhip of God to all Chriſtians (except Papiſts) inhabiting, or which ſhall inhabit or be reſident within our ſaid Province or Territory; and we do hereby grant and ordain, that the Governour, or Lieutenant or Deputy-governour of our ſaid Province or Territory for the Time being, or either of them, or any two or more of the Council or Aſſiſtants for the Time being, as ſhall be thereunto appointed by the ſaid Governour, ſhall and may at all Times, and from Time to Time hereafter, have full Power and Authority to adminiſter and give the Oaths appointed by the ſaid Acts of Parliament, made in the Firſt Year of our Reign, to be taken inſtead of the Oaths of *Allegiance* and *Supremacy*, to all and to every perſon and perſons which are now inhabiting or reſiding within our ſaid Province or Territory, or which ſhall at any Time or Times hereafter go or paſs thither. And we do of our further Grace, certain Knowledge, and mere Motion, grant, eſtabliſh and ordain, for us, our Heirs

and Succeſſors, that the great and general Court or Aſſembly of our ſaid Province or Territory for the time being, convened as aforeſaid, ſhall for ever have full Power and Authority to erect and conſtitute Judicatories and Courts of Record, or other Courts, to be held in the Name of us, our Heirs and Succeſſors, for the hearing, trying and determining of all manner of Crimes, Offences, Pleas, Proceſſes, Plaints, Actions, Matters, Cauſes, and Things whatſoever, ariſing or happening within our ſaid Province or Territory, or between Perſons inhabiting or reſiding there, whether the ſame be criminal or civil, and whether the ſaid Crimes be capital or not capital, and whether the ſaid Pleas be real, perſonal, or mixt, and for the awarding and making out of Executions thereupon; to which Courts and Judicatories, we do hereby for us, our Heirs and Succeſſors, give and grant full power and authority, from Time to time to adminiſter Oaths for the diſcovery of Truth in any Matter in controverſy, or depending before them; and we do for us, our Heirs and Succeſſors, grant, eſtabliſh and ordain, that the Governour of our ſaid Province or Territories for the Time being, with the Council or Aſſiſtants, may do, execute or perform all that is neceſſary for the Probate of Wills, and granting of Adminiſtrations for, touching, or concerning any Intereſt or Eſtate which any perſon or perſons ſhall have within our ſaid Province or Territory. And whereas we judge it neceſſary, that all our Subjects ſhould have liberty to appeal to us, our Heirs and Succeſſors, in caſes that may deſerve the ſame, we do by theſe Preſents ordain, that in caſe either Party ſhall not reſt ſatisfied with the Judgment or Sentence of any Judicatories or Courts within our ſaid Province or Territory in any perſonal Action, wherein the Matter in difference doth exceed the Value of Three Hundred pounds Sterling, that then he or they may appeal to us, our Heirs and Succeſſors, in our or their Privy Council, provided, that ſuch appeal be made within fourteen Days after the Sentenee or Judgment given, and that before ſuch appeal be allow'd, ſecurity be given by the party or parties appealing, in the Value of the Matters in difference, to pay or anſwer the Debt or Damages for the which Judgment or Sentence is given,

with ſuch coſts and damages as ſhall be awarded by us, our Heirs or Succeſſors, in caſe the Judgment or Sentence be affirmed: And provided alſo, that no Execution ſhall be laid or ſuſpended, by reaſon of ſuch Appeal to us, our Heirs and Succeſſors, in our or their privy-council, ſo as the party ſuing, or taking out Execution, do in the like manner give ſecurity to the Value of the Matter in difference, to make Reſtitution in caſe the ſaid Judgment or Sentence be reverſed or annulled upon the ſaid Appeal. And do further, for us, our Heirs and Succeſſors, give and grant to the ſaid Governour, and the great and general Court or Aſſembly of our ſaid Province or Territory, for the Time being, full Power and Authority, from Time to Time, to make, ordain and eſtabliſh all manner of wholſom and reaſonable Orders, Laws, Statutes and Ordinances, Directions and Inſtructions, either with Penalties or without, (ſo as the ſame be not repugnant or contrary to the Laws of this our Realm of *England*) as they ſhall judge to be for the good and Welfare of our ſaid Province or Territory, and for the Government and ordering thereof, and of the People inhabiting, or who ſhall inhabit the ſame, and for the neceſſary ſupport and defence of the Government thereof. And we do for us, our Heirs and Succeſſors, give and grant that the ſaid general Court or Aſſembly ſhall have full Power and Authority to Name and ſettle annually, all civil Officers within the ſaid Province, ſuch Officers excepted, the Election and Conſtitution of whom we have by theſe preſents reſerv'd to us, our Heirs and Succeſſors, or to the Governour of our ſaid Province for the Time being; and to ſet forth the ſeveral duties, powers and limits of every ſuch Officer, to be appointed by the ſaid general Court or Aſſembly, and the Forms of ſuch Oaths not repugnant to the Laws and Statutes of this our Realm of *England*, as ſhall be reſpectively adminiſtred unto them for the execution of their ſeveral Offices aud Places, and alſo to impoſe Fines, Mulcts, Impriſonments, and other Puniſhments; and to impoſe and levy proportionable and reaſonable Aſſeſſments, Rates and Taxes upon the Eſtates and Perſons of all and every the Proprietors or Inhabitants of our ſaid Province or Territory, to be iſſued and diſpos'd of by Warrant, under the Hand of the

the Governour of our ſaid Province for the Time being, with the Advice and Conſent of the Council, for our Service in the neceſſary defence and ſupport of our Government of our ſaid Province or Territory, and the Protection and Preſervation of the Inhabitants there, according to ſuch Acts as are or ſhall be in Force within our ſaid Province, and to diſpoſe Matters and Things whereby our Subjects and Inhabitants of our ſaid Province may be religiouſly, peaceably, and civilly govern'd, protected, and defended, ſo as their good Life and orderly Converſation may win the *Indians*, Natives of the Country, to the Knowledge and Obedience of the only and true God and Saviour of Mankind, and the Chriſtian Faith, which his Royal Majeſty our Royal Grandfather King *Charles* the firſt, in his ſaid Letters Patents declared was his Royal Intentions, and the Adventurers free Profeſſion to be the principal End of the ſaid Plantation. And for the better ſecuring and maintaining Liberty of Conſcience hereby granted to all Perſons, at any Time being and reſiding within our ſaid Province or Territory as aforeſaid, willing, commanding and requiring, and by theſe Preſents, for us, our Heirs and Succeſſors, ordaining, and appointing, that all ſuch Orders, Laws, Statutes and Ordinances, Inſtructions and Directions, as ſhall be ſo made and publiſhed under our Seal of our ſaid Province or Territory, ſhall be carefully and duly obſerv'd, kept and perform'd, and put in Execution, according to the true Intent and Meaning of theſe Preſents: Provided always, and we do by theſe Preſents for us, our Heirs and Succeſſors, eſtabliſh and ordain, that in the framing and paſſing of all ſuch Orders, Laws, Statutes and Ordinances, and in all Elections and Acts of Government whatſoever, to be paſſed, made, or done by the ſaid General Court or Aſſembly, or in Council, the Governour of our ſaid Province or Territory of the *Maſſachuſet-Bay* in *New-England* for the Time being, ſhall have the Negative Voice: And that without his Conſent or Approbation ſignified and declared in Writing, no ſuch Orders, Laws, Statutes, Ordinances, Elections, or other Acts of Government whatſoever, ſo to be made, paſſed, or done by the ſaid General Aſſembly, or in Council, ſhall be of any Force, Effect, or Validity, any

Thing herein contained to the contrary in any wiſe notwithſtanding; and we do for us, our heirs and ſucceſſors, eſtabliſh and ordain, that the ſaid Orders, Laws, Statutes and Ordinances be by the firſt Opportunity after the making thereof, ſent or tranſmitted unto us, our heirs and ſucceſſors, under the publick ſeal, to be appointed by us, for our or their Approbation, or Diſallowance, and that in caſe all, or any of them ſhall at any Time within the ſpace of three Years, next after the ſame ſhall have been preſented to us, our heirs and ſucceſſors, in our or their Privy Council, be ſo diſallowed and rejected, and ſo ſignified by us, our heirs and ſucceſſors, under our or their ſign manual and ſignet, or by Order in our or their Privy Council, unto the Governour for the Time being, then ſuch and ſo many of them as ſhall be ſo diſallowed and rejected, ſhall thenceforth ceaſe and determine, and become utterly void, and of none Effect. Provided always that in caſe we, our heirs or ſucceſſors, ſhall not within the Term of three Years after the preſenting of ſuch Orders, Laws, Statutes, or Ordinances, as aforeſaid, ſignify our or their Diſallowance of the ſame, then the ſaid Orders, Laws, Statutes, or Ordinances ſhall be and continue in full Force and Effect, according to the true Intent and Meaning of the ſame, until the Expiration thereof, or, that the ſame ſhall be repealed by the general Aſſembly of our ſaid province for the Time being. Provided alſo, that it ſhall and may be lawful for the ſaid Governour and general Aſſembly, to make, or paſs any grant of lands lying within the Bounds of the Colonies formerly called the Colonies of the *Maſſachuſetts Bay*, and *New Plimouth*, and Province of *Maine*, in ſuch manner as heretofore they might have done by vertue of any former Charter or Letters Patents; which grants of lands within the bounds aforeſaid, we do hereby will and ordain to be and continue for ever of full Force and Effect, without our further approbation or conſent, and ſo as nevertheleſs, and it is our Royal will and pleaſure, that no grant, or grants of any lands lying, or extending from the River of *Sagadahoc* to the *Gulph* of St. *Laurence* and *Canada* Rivers, and to the main Sea Northward and Eaſtward,

to

to be made or paſs'd by the Governor and general Aſſembly of our ſaid province, be of any Force, Validity, or Effect, until we, our heirs and ſucceſſors, ſhall have ſignified our or their Approbation of the ſame: And we do by theſe preſents for us, our heirs and ſucceſſors, grant, eſtabliſh, and ordain, that the Governour of our ſaid province or territory for the Time being, ſhall have full power by himſelf, or by any chief Commander, or other Officer, or Officers, to be appointed by him from Time to Time, to train, inſtruct, exerciſe, and govern the Militia there: And for the ſpecial defence and ſafety of our ſaid province or territory, to aſſemble in martial Array, and put in warlike poſture the Inhabitants of our ſaid province or territory, and to lead and conduct them, and with them to encounter, expulſe, repel, reſiſt, and purſue by Force of Arms, as well by ſea as by land, within, or without the limits of our ſaid province or territory, and alſo, to kill, ſlay, deſtroy, and conquer, by all fitting ways, enterprizes, and means whatſoever, all and every ſuch perſon and perſons, as ſhall at any Time hereafter attempt, or enterprize the Deſtruction, Invaſion, Detriment, or Annoyance of our ſaid province or territory; and to uſe and exerciſe the Law martial in Time of actual War, Invaſion, or Rebellion, as Occaſion ſhall neceſſarily require; and alſo from Time to Time to erect Forts, and to fortify any place or places within our ſaid province or territory, and the ſame to furniſh with all neceſſary Ammunition, proviſion and ſtores of War for Offence or Defence, and to commit from Time to Time the cuſtody and government of the ſame to ſuch perſon or perſons as to him ſhall ſeem meet; and the ſaid Forts and Fortifications to demoliſh at his pleaſure, and to take and ſurprize by all ways and means whatſoever, all and every ſuch perſon or perſons, with their ſhips, arms, ammunition, and other goods, as ſhall in a hoſtile manner invade, or attempt the invading, conquering, or annoying of our ſaid province or territory; provided always, and we do by theſe preſents, for us, our heirs and ſucceſſors, grant, eſtabliſh, and ordain, that the ſaid governour ſhall not at any Time hereafter, by virtue of any powers hereby granted, or hereafter

to be granted to him, tranſport any of the Inhabitants of our ſaid province or territory, or oblige them to march out of the limits of the ſame without their free and voluntary conſent, or the conſent of the great and general Court or Aſſembly of our ſaid province or territory, nor grant commiſſions for exerciſing the law martial upon any the Inhabitants of our ſaid province or territory, without the advice and conſent of the Council, or Aſſiſtants of the ſame; provided in the like manner, and we do by theſe preſents, for us, our heirs and ſucceſſors conſtitute, and ordain, that when, and as often as the Governour of our ſaid province for the Time being, ſhall happen to dye, or be diſplac'd by us, our heirs or ſucceſſors, or to be abſent from his government; that then, and in any of the ſaid caſes, the Lieutenant, or Deputy-governour of our ſaid province, for the Time being, ſhall have full power and authority to do, and execute all, and every ſuch acts, matters, and things, which our Governour of our ſaid province; for the Time being, might or could, by vertue of theſe our Letters Patents lawfully do, or execute, if he were perſonally preſent, until the return of the Governour ſo abſent, or arrival, or conſtitution of ſuch other Governour as ſhall, or may be appointed by us, our heirs, or ſucceſſors in his ſtead: And that when, and as often as the Governour, and Lieutenant, or Deputy Governour of our ſaid province or territory, for the Time being, ſhall happen to dye, or be diſplac'd by us, our heirs or ſucceſſors, or be abſent from our ſaid province; and that there ſhall be no perſon within the ſaid province commiſſionated by us, our heirs or ſucceſſors, to be Governour within the ſame; then, and in every of the ſaid caſes, the Council or Aſſiſtants of our ſaid province ſhall have full power and authority, and we do hereby give, and grant unto the ſaid Council or Aſſiſtants of our ſaid province, for the Time being, or the major part of them, full power and authority to do, and execute all, and every ſuch Acts, Matters, and Things which the ſaid Governour, or Lieutenant, or Deputy Governour of our ſaid province or territory, for the Time being, might, or could lawfully do, or exerciſe, if they, or either of them were per-

perſonally preſent, until the Return of the Governour, or Lieutenant, or Deputy Governour ſo abſent, or arrival, or conſtitution of ſuch other Governour, or Lieutenant, or Deputy Governour, as ſhall and may be appointed by us, our heirs or ſucceſſors, from Time to Time. Provided always, and it is hereby declared, that nothing herein ſhall extend, or be taken to erect, or grant, or allow the exerciſe of any Admiral, Court, Juriſdiction, Power, or Authority, but that the ſame ſhall be, and is hereby reſerved to us and our ſucceſſors, and ſhall from Time to Time be erected, granted, and exerciſed, by vertue of Commiſſions to be iſſued under the great ſeal of *England*, or under the ſeal of the High Admiral, or the Commiſſioners for executing the Office of High Admiral of *England*. And further, our expreſs will and pleaſure is, and we do by theſe preſents, for us, our heirs and ſucceſſors, ordain, and appoint, that theſe our Letters Patents ſhall not in any manner enure, or be taken to abridge, bar, or hinder any of our loving ſubjects whatſoever, to uſe and exerciſe the Trade of Fiſhing upon the coaſts of *New England*, but that they, and any of them, ſhall have full and free power and liberty to continue and uſe their ſaid Trade of Fiſhing upon the ſaid coaſts, in any of the Seas thereunto adjoyning, or any arms of the ſaid Seas, or ſalt-water Rivers, where they have been wont to fiſh; and to build, and ſet upon the lands within our ſaid Province or Colony lying waſte, and not then poſſeſſed by particular proprietors, ſuch Wharfs, Stages, and Work-Houſes as ſhall be neceſſary for the ſalting, drying, keeping, and packing of their Fiſh, to be taken, or gotten upon that coaſt, and to cut down and take ſuch Trees, and other materials there growing, or being upon any parts or places lying waſte, and not then in poſſeſſion of particular proprietors, as ſhall be needful for that purpoſe, and for all other neceſſary Eaſements, Helps, and Advantages, concerning the Trade of Fiſhing there, in ſuch manner, and form, as they have been heretofore at any Time accuſtomed to do, without making any wilful waſte or ſpoil, any thing in theſe preſents containing to the contrary notwithſtanding. And laſtly, for the better providing and furniſhing of Maſts for our Royal Navy, we do hereby reſerve to us, our heirs and ſuc-

ſucceſſors, all Trees of the Diameter of 24 Inches, and upwards, of 12 Inches from the ground, growing upon any ſoil, or Tract of Land within our ſaid province or territory, not heretofore granted to any private perſons; and we do reſtrain, and forbid all perſons whatſoever, from felling, cutting, or deſtroying any ſuch Trees, without the Royal Licence of us, our heirs and ſucceſſors firſt had and obtained, upon penalty of forfeiting *One Hundred Pounds Sterling* unto us, our heirs and ſucceſſors, for every ſuch Tree ſo felled, cut, or deſtroyed, without ſuch Licence had, or obtained in that Behalf: Any thing in theſe preſents contain'd to the contrary notwithſtanding. In Witneſs whereof we have cauſed theſe our Letters to be made Patents, Witneſs Ourſelves at *Weſtminſter*, the 7th Day of *October*, in the third Year of our Reign.

By Writ of Privy Seal.

PIGOT.

NUMB. II.

An Abridgment of the Platform of Church-Diſcipline, agreed upon by the Elders and Meſſengers of the Churches aſſembled in the Synod *of* Cambridge *in* New-England, *to be preſented to the Churches and General Court, for their Conſideration and Acceptance in the Year* 1648.

CHAP. I.

Of the Form of Church-Government, and that it is one, immutable, and preſcribed in the Word of God.

§. I. CHURCH-GOVERNMENT is nothing elſe but the Form and Order to be obſerved in the Church of Chriſt on Earth, both as to its Conſtitution and all its Adminiſtrations.

§. II, III. The

§. II, III. The Parts of Church-Government are all exactly deſcribed in the Word of God; ſo that it is not left in the Power of Men, Officers, Churches, or any State in the World, to add, diminiſh, or alter any thing in it.

§. IV. The circumſtances of time and place, &c. belonging to Order and Decency are not ſo left to Men, as that under pretence of them, they may thruſt their own Inventions upon the Churches, but the Apoſtolical preſcription is to be obſerved, that all Things be done decently, and in Order, and for Edification, according to the Nature of the things themſelves.

CHAP. II.

Of the Nature of the Catholick Church in general, and in ſpecial of a particular Viſible Church.

§. I. The Catholick Church is the whole company of them that are elected and redeemed, and in time effectually called unto a State of Grace and Salvation in Chriſt.

§. II, III, IV. This Church is either *triumphant* in Heaven, or *militant* on Earth; the Church militant is inviſible or viſible; *inviſible* comprehends all that are united to Chriſt by the Holy Spirit and Faith: *Viſible*, ſuch as make a publick Profeſſion of their Faith in particular Churches.

§. V. The State of the Members of the militant viſible Church, was under the Law National, but ſince the coming of Chriſt only *Congregational*, and therefore neither National, Provincial, nor Claſſical, (the Term *Independant* we approve not.)

§. VI. A Congregational Church, is by the Inſtitution of Chriſt, a Part of the Militant Viſible Church, conſiſting of a company of Saints by calling, united into one Body by an holy Covenant, for the publick Worſhip of God, and mutual Edification of one another in the Fellowſhip of Chriſt.

CHAP. III.

Of the Matter of the Viſible Church, both in Reſpect of Quality and Quantity.

§. I, II. The Matter of the Viſible Church are Saints by calling, that is, ſuch as underſtand the principles of Religion, and together with the Profeſſion of their Repentance and Faith in the Lord Jeſus Chriſt walk in blameleſs Obedience to his Commands.

§. IV. The Matter of the Church, as to its Quantity ought not to be more than may conveniently meet together in one Place, nor fewer than may conveniently carry on Church-Work.

§. V. Every particular Church has a Miniſtry appointed and ordained for its particular Service; the Scripture making no Mention of ordinary Officers appointed over the Catholick Church; ſo that there is no greater Church than a congregation which may ordinarily meet in one Place.

CHAP. IV.

Of the Form of the Viſible Church, and of Church-Covenant.

§. I, II, III. The Form of a particular Viſible Church is the Viſible Covenant, Agreement, or Conſent, whereby they give up themſelves to the Lord to the obſerving of the Ordinances of Chriſt together in the ſame Society, which is uſually called the *Church-Covenant*.

§. IV. This voluntary Agreement or Covenant we conceive is in ſubſtance kept, where there is a real agreement and conſent of a company of faithful Perſons, to meet conſtantly together in one congregation, for the publick Worſhip of God for their mutual Edification, though they do not expreſs it by Writing, or any particular Form of Words.

§. VI. All

§. VI. All Believers ought, as they have Opportunity to joyn to a particular Church, that they may profeſs their ſubjection to the Order and Ordinances of the Goſpel, in compliance with the command of Chriſt, and for their own Edification; for ſhould all Believers neglect this Duty, it might follow, that Chriſt ſhould not have a viſible political Church upon Earth.

CHAP. V.

Of the firſt Subject of Church-Power, or to whom Church-Power doth firſt belong.

§. I. The firſt ſupreme Object of Church-power is the Lord Jeſus Chriſt, but Miniſterial, ordinary Church-Power, belongs to the Church.

§. II. Ordinary Church-Power is either Power of Office, which belongs to the Elderſhip; Or Power of Privilege, which belongs to the Brotherhood; the latter is given them formally by Chriſt, but the former can't be exerciſed by them, but is in them only, as they appoint the Perſons to Office who are to exerciſe that Power.

CHAP. VI.

Of the Officers of a Church, and eſpecially of Paſtors and Teachers.

§. I, II. Tho' Officers are not abſolutely neceſſary to the Being of a Church, yet they are neceſſary to its Well-being, and therefore are appointed by Chriſt to continue to the End of the World.

§. III. Theſe Officers are either extraordinary, as Apoſtles Prophets, Evangeliſts, who as they were called extraordinarily by Chriſt, ſo their Office ended with themſelves. Ordinary Officers are Elders and Deacons.

§. IV. Of Elders (who are alſo in Scripture called Biſhops) ſome attend chiefly to the Miniſtry of the World,

Word, as the Paſtors and Teachers, others to its Rule, who are therefore called Ruling Elders.

§. V, VI. The Offices of Paſtor and Teacher in the Church are diſtinct, the one being to attend to Exhortation, the other to Doctrine; but both are to preach, to adminiſter the Sacraments and Church-Cenſures.

CHAP. VII.

Of Ruling Elders and Deacons.

§. I. Ruling Elders are not ſo called, to exclude the Paſtors or Teachers from Ruling, becauſe Rule is common to them all, whereas Preaching and Teaching is peculiar to the latter.

§. II. The Office of the Ruling Elder is to joyn with the Paſtor and Teacher in ſuch Acts of Rule as are diſtinct from the Miniſtry of the Word and Sacraments, as in admitting, or excluding Members by the conſent of the Church, in ordaining Officers choſen by the Church, in calling the Church together on proper Occaſions. In preparing Matters in private to be laid before the Church. In keeping Order in Church-Debates. In ſeeing that none of the Church live diſorderly. In preventing and healing Offences in the Church. In feeding the Flock with a Word of Admonition. In praying over their ſick Brethren, as they ſhall be ſent for, and at other Times, as Opportunity ſhall ſerve.

§. III. The Office and Work of a Deacon is to receive the Offerings of the Church; Gifts given to the Church, and to keep the Treaſury of the Church, and therewith to ſerve the Tables which the Church is to provide for, as the Lord's Table, the Miniſter's Table, and the Poor's Table, to whom they are to diſtribute in ſimplicity.

§. IV. The Office of a Deacon being limited to the care of the Temporal good Things of the Church, it extends not to the Attendance upon, and Adminiſtra-

tion

tion of the ſpiritual Things thereof, as the Word, Sacraments, and the like.

§. VI. Theſe being all the Officers that Chriſt has appointed in the Church, all others are to be looked on as the Inventions of Men, and conſequently unlawful, as Popes, Cardinals, Patriarchs, Archbiſhops, Lord-Biſhops, Archdeacons, Officials, Commiſſaries, and the like.

§. VII. The Lord has appointed ancient Widows to miniſter in the Church, in giving Attendance to the ſick, and relieving their Neceſſities.

CHAP. VIII.

Of the Election of Church-Officers.

§. I, II, III, IV. 'Tis requiſite that before any be ordained, or choſen Officers, the Church ſhould have Trial of their Gifts and Virtues that belong to their reſpective Offices, becauſe Hands are to be laid ſuddenly on no Man.

§. V, VI, VII. The Right of Election is in that particular Church to whom the Officers are to miniſter, and as the Church has Power to conſtitute in Office, it follows, that in caſe of Scandal or Delinquency, it may remove from Office.

§. VIII. From whence it follows, that the choice of Church-Officers belongs not to the Civil Magiſtrate, nor to Dioceſan Biſhops, nor Patrons.

CHAP. IX.

Ordination, by Impoſition of Hands.

§. I. Church-Officers are not only to be choſen by the Church, but to be ordained by Impoſition of Hands and Prayer.

§. II. Ordination is nothing elſe but the ſolemn putting a Man into his Office, which he had a Right

to

to before by Election; ſo that Ordination does not conſtitute an Officer, nor give him the Eſſentials of his Office, that being done before by his Election.

§. III, IV, V. Where there are Elders in a Church, Impoſition of Hands is to be perform'd by them, but where there are no Elders, it may be done by ſome of the Brotherhood orderly choſen thereunto by the Church; or, if the Church deſire it, it may be perform'd by the Elders of other Churches.

§. VI, VII. Church-Officers are Officers to one particular Church; ſo that if an Officer be diſcharged from his Office in that Church where he was a Miniſter, he may not exerciſe Office-power in another Church, unleſs he be again called to Office, which when it ſhall be, we know nothing to hinder, but Impoſition of Hands in his Ordination ought to be uſed towards him again.

CHAP. X.

Of the Power of the Church, and its Presbytery.

§. I, II, III, IV. The Government of the Church is Monarchical, with Reſpect to Chriſt its Head, but with Reſpect to the Church itſelf 'tis partly Democratical, and partly Ariſtocratical.

§. V, VI. The Power granted by Chriſt to the Democracy or Brotherhood of the Church, conſiſts in admitting Members, chooſing Officers, and depoſing them for Male-Adminiſtration, and in hearing, and determining Differences in the Church.

§. VII, VIII, IX. The Power granted to the Elders of the Church, is to feed and rule the Church of God, to call the Church together on weighty Occaſions, to preſide and keep Order in all Debates, to examine Officers or Members before they are received by the Church, to receive Accuſations, and prepare them for the Churches Hearing, and to pronounce Sentence with the conſent of the Church. They have Power likewiſe when they diſmiſs the People, to bleſs them in the Name of the Lord.

§. X, XI. From hence it appears, that in an Organic Church all Church-Acts proceed after the manner of a mix'd Adminiſtration, ſo as no Church-Act can be conſummated without the conſent both of the Elders and Brotherhood.

CHAP. XI.

Of the Maintenance of Church-Officers.

§. I, II. The Scripture declares, that they that preach the Goſpel ſhould live of the Goſpel; People are not therefore left at Liberty to do, or not to do, what and when they pleaſe in this Matter, but are to look on it as their Duty to miniſter of their *Carnal Things* to them that labour in the Word and Doctrine, according to their Abilities, and that not as an Alms, but as a due Debt, and an Ordinance of Chriſt.

§. III, IV. Not only Members of Churches but the Hearers are to contribute to the preaching of the Word; if Congregations are defective in their contributions, the Deacons are to call upon them to do their Duty, if their Call ſuffice not, the Church is to require it of them; and if this is not ſufficient to attain the End, the Magiſtrate is to ſee that the Miniſtry be duly provided for.

CHAP. XII.

Of the Admiſſion of Members into the Church.

§. I, II. All that are admitted into the Church as Members, are firſt to be examined and tried, whether they are fit to be received into Church-Society, or not; that is, whether they have Repentance towards God, and Faith in Jeſus Chriſt.

§. III. The weakeſt meaſure of Faith is to be accepted, and ſuch charity and tenderneſs is to be uſed in Examinations, that the weakeſt Chriſtian, if ſincere, may neither be diſcouraged, nor excluded.

§. IV, V. A

§. IV, V. A perſonal and publick Confeſſion of the manner of God's working on the Soul is both lawful and uſeful, and where Perſons have Abilities 'tis moſt expedient; but if any through Fear or other Infirmity be unable to do it, 'tis ſufficient that the Elders receive private Satisfaction, and relate it in publick before the Church; they teſtifying their Aſſents thereunto.

§. VI, VII. This Profeſſion of Faith and Repentance may be required by the Church of thoſe who remove from other Churches to them; and from thoſe who were born and baptized in the Church, by virtue of their Parents Relation to it; ſuch are to be eſteemed under Church-watch, and conſequently ſubject to its admonitions and cenſures.

CHAP. XIII.

Of the Removal of Church-Members from one Church to another, and of Recommendation and Diſmiſſion.

§. I. Church-Members may not depart from one Church to another, as they pleaſe, becauſe ſuch Departure tends to the Diſſolution of the whole Body.

§. II. Church-Members on ſuch an Occaſion ſhould adviſe with the Church, that they may have their Approbation.

§. III. If the Church judge a Member's Departure unſafe or ſinful, they may not conſent to it.

§. IV. Juſt Reaſons for a Member's Removal are, (1.) If he can't continue without partaking in Sin. (2.) In caſe of Perſecution. (3.) In caſe of a real want of ſubſiſtence, a Door being open for a better ſupply in another place.

§. V. But to ſeparate from a Church, out of contempt of their Fellowſhip; or covetouſneſs, or want of Love; or out of a ſpirit of contention, in Reſpect of ſome Unkindneſs; or for ſome Evil only conceived, or really in the Church, which might and ſhould be tolerated, and healed with a ſpirit of Meekneſs; and of

which Evil the Church is not yet convinced, though himſelf be; for theſe Reaſons to withdraw from publick Communion in word, in ſeals, or cenſures is unlawful and ſinful.

§. VII. When a Member removes he ſhould have Letters Teſtimonial, and of Diſmiſſion, and until the other Church receives him, he ceaſes not to be a Member of the Church he is going from.

§. VIII, IX. If a Member removes only for a time, Letters of Recommendation only are ſufficient for communion with another Church.

CHAP. XIV.

Of Excommunication, and other Cenſures.

§. I. Church-cenſures are appointed by Chriſt for removing Offences for reclaiming offending Brethren, for deterring others from the like Offences, for vindicating the Honour of Chriſt, and of his Churches, and preventing the Wrath of God, which might fall upon them, if they ſhould willfully ſuffer his ſeals to be prophaned.

§. II. If an Offence be private, the Offender is to acknowledge his Fault in private; but if he refuſe to do ſo, when admoniſhed by his offended Brother, the offended Brother is to take one or two with him, and if he refuſes them, the offended Brother is by the Mouth of the Elders to tell the Church; if he appears willing to hear the Church, but is not convinced of his Offence, as in caſe of Hereſy, he is firſt to be admoniſh'd, whereby he is ſuſpended from the communion at preſent; and if he remain obſtinate, he is to be excommunicated.

§. III. But if the Offence be publick and ſcandalous, the Church is to caſt him out at once.

§. IV, V. Offenders are to be dealt with, with great Meekneſs, and yet with Faithfulneſs: when an Offender is caſt out of the Church, the faithful are to refrain from all ſpiritual communion with him, and from civil

civil communion likewiſe, any further than the neceſſary concerns of Life require.

§. VI. Excommunication does not deprive Men of their civil Rights, and therefore touches not Princes or Magiſtrates in Reſpect of civil Authority; nor does it prohibit ſuch from hearing the Word, nor the Church from giving them occaſional Admonitions.

§. VII. Penitent Offenders, though excommunicate, are to be reſtored.

§. VIII, IX. Members are not to ſeparate from a Church, becauſe of ſome diſorderly Perſons in it, when they can't get them removed; no, nor to abſent themſelves from the communion on that Account.

CHAP. XV.

Of the Communion of Churches with one another.

§. I, II. Churches ought to hold communion with one another; by mutual care for each other, by conſulting one with another in caſes of Difficulty, and by admoniſhing each other in caſe of offence; and if an offending Church will not hearken to the Admonition of the offended Church, the offended Church may acquaint other Churches with it, who may joyn in the Admonition (if they think it juſt); and if the offending Church continue obſtinate, may pronounce in a Synod the ſentence of Non-communion with them. Further, Churches ſhould hold communion, by admitting the Members of each other occaſionally to the Lord's Supper; by recommending their Members at a Diſtance to the care of the Churches where they reſide, and in caſe of Need, by furniſhing each other with able Officers, and relieving each other's poor.

§. III, IV. When a Church is to be gather'd, the help and preſence of neighbouring Churches ſhould be deſired, that they may have the Right-hand of Fellowſhip; and when a Church grows too numerous for one Aſſembly, it ſhould propagate another by ſending forth

ſuch Members as are willing to remove, and by procuring ſome Officers who may incorporate with them.

CHAP. XVI.

Of Synods.

§. I. Synods are not neceſſary to the Being, but very often to the Well-being of Churches.

§. II. The Elders and Meſſengers of the ſeveral Churches met together in the Name of Chriſt, and by Delegation from the Churches they repreſent, are the matter of a Synod.

§. III. Magiſtrates may call a Synod; or, the Churches may do it of themſelves.

§. IV. It belongs to Synods, to debate and determine controverſies of Faith, and caſes of conſcience, to give Direction from the Scriptures for the Worſhip of God, and good Government of the Church, and to bear Witneſs againſt corruption of Manners, and male-Adminiſtration in any particular Church; but they are not to exerciſe Church-cenſures in way of Diſcipline, nor any Act of Church-Authority, or Juriſdiction.

§. V. The Directions and Determinations of Synods are to be received with Reverence, as far as conſonant with the Word of God, not only for their Agreement with God's Word, but ſecondarily, for the power whereby they are made, as being an Ordinance of God appointed thereunto in his Word.

§. VI. Synods are to conſiſt both of Elders and other Church-Members endued with Gifts, and ſent by the Churches, not excluding the preſence of any of the Brethren in the Churches.

CHAP. XVII.

Of the Civil Magiſtrate's Power in Eccleſiaſtical Matters.

§. I. Chriſtians may gather themſelves into Churches without the conſent of the Magiſtrate, if it can't be had.

§. II. Church-

§. II. Church-Government is not inconſiſtent with the power of the civil Magiſtrate, but rather ſtrengthens their Hands by encouraging the people in their obedience to them.

§. III, IV, V. Magiſtrates may not compel their ſubjects to become Church-Members, and partake of the Lord's Supper; nor medle with the work proper to Church-Officers.

§. VI, VII, VIII. The power of the Magiſtrate extends to the preſervation of the peace of the ſubjects in matters of moral Righteouſneſs and Honeſty, yea, and of Godlineſs too; ſo that Idolatry, Blaſphemy, Hereſy, vending corrupt and pernicious opinions which deſtroy the Foundation; open contempt of the word preached, prophanation of the Lord's Day, diſturbing the peaceable Adminiſtration and Exerciſe of the Worſhip and holy Things of God, and the like, are to be reſtrained and puniſh'd by them.

§. IX. If any Church or Churches grow Schiſmatical, rending themſelves from the communion of other Churches, or walk contrary to the Rule of the Word; the Magiſtrate in ſuch caſe is to put forth his coercive power, as the matter ſhall require.

NUMB. III.

Heads of Agreement, assented to by the United Ministers, *formerly call'd* Presbyterian *and* Congregational.

I. *Of Churches and Church-Members.*

1. WE acknowledge our *Lord Jesus Christ* to have one *Catholick Church*, or *Kingdom*, comprehending all that are united to him, whether in Heaven or Earth; and do conceive the whole multitude of visible Believers, and their Infant-seed (commonly call'd the *Catholick Visible Church*) to belong to Christ's spiritual Kingdom in this World: But for the Notion of a *Catholick Visible Church* here, as it signifies its having been collected into any formed Society, under

a visible humane Head on Earth, whether one person singly, or many collectively, we, with the rest of Protestants, unanimously disclaim it.

2. We agree, that particular societies of visible Saints, who, under Christ their Head, are statedly joyned together, for ordinary communion with one another in all the Ordinances of Christ, are *particular Churches*, and are to be owned by each other, as instituted Churches of Christ, though differing in *Apprehensions* and *Practice* in some lesser Things.

3. That none shall be admitted as Members, in order to communion in all the special Ordinances of the Gospel, but such persons as are knowing, and sound in the *fundamental Doctrines of the Christian Religion*, without scandal in their Lives; and to a Judgment regulated by the Word of God, are persons of visible Holiness and Honesty; credibly professing cordial subjection to Jesus Christ.

4. A competent number of such *visible Saints*, (as before described) do become the capable subjects of stated communion in all the *special Ordinances of Christ* upon their mutual declared consent and agreement to *walk together therein according to Gospel-Rule*. In which Declaration, different Degrees of *Explicitenes*, shall no ways hinder such Churches from owning each other, as instituted Churches.

5. Though *parochial Bounds* be not of divine Right, yet for common Edification, the Members of a *particular Church* ought (as much as conveniently may be) to live near one another.

6. That each *particular Church* hath Right to use their own Officers; and being furnished with such as are *duly qualified* and *ordained* according to the Gospel-Rule, hath Authority from Christ for exercising *Government*, and of enjoying all the *Ordinances* of *Worship* within itself.

7. In the Administration of *Church Power*, it belongs to the *Pastors* and other Elders of every particular Church, if such there be to *rule* and *govern*, and to the Brotherhood to *consent* according to the *Rule of the Gospel*.

8. That all Professors, as before described, are bound in Duty, as they have opportunity to joyn themselves as

fixed

fixed Members of ſome particular Church; their thus joyning, being part of their profeſſed ſubjection to the *Goſpel of Chriſt*, and an inſtituted Means of their Eſtabliſhment and Edification; whereby they are under the *paſtoral care*, and in caſe of *ſcandalous* or *offenſive walking*, may be authoritatively admoniſhed or cenſured for their Recovery, and for vindication of the *Truth*, and the *Church* profeſſing it.

9. That a *viſible Profeſſor* thus joined to a *particular Church* ought to continue ſtedfaſt with the ſaid Church; and not forſake the Miniſtry, and Ordinances there *diſpenſed*, without an orderly *ſeeking* a *Recommendation* unto another Church, which ought to be given, when the caſe of the perſon apparently requires it.

II. *Of the Miniſtry.*

1. WE agree that the *Miniſterial Office* is inſtituted by Jeſus Chriſt for the gathering, guiding, edifying and governing of his Church; and to continue to the End of the World.

2. They who are called to this *Office* ought to be endued with *competent Learning* and *miniſterial Gifts*, as alſo with the Grace of God, ſound in Judgment, not Novices in the Faith and Knowledge of the Goſpel; without ſcandal, of holy converſation, and ſuch as *devote* themſelves to the work and ſervice thereof.

3. That ordinarily none ſhall be ordained to the Work of this Miniſtry, but ſuch as are *called* and *choſen* thereunto by a particular Church.

4. That in ſo great and weighty a Matter as the calling and chuſing a *Paſtor*, we judge it ordinarily requiſite, that every ſuch Church conſult and adviſe with the *Paſtors* of neighbouring congregations.

5. That after ſuch *Advice* the perſon conſulted about, being choſen by the Brotherhood of that *particular Church* over which he is to be ſet, and he accepting, be duly ordained and *ſet apart* to his Office over them; wherein 'tis ordinarily requiſite, that the *Paſtors* of *neighbouring Congregations* concur with the *preaching Elder* or *Elders*, if ſuch there be.

6. That

6. That whereas ſuch *Ordination* is only intended for ſuch as *never before had been* ordained to the *miniſterial Office*; if any judge, *that in the caſe alſo* of the *Removal* of one *formerly ordained*, to a new ſtation, or *paſtoral Charge*, there ought to be a like, ſolemn Recommending him and his *Labours to the Grace and Bleſſing of God*; no different ſentiments or practice herein ſhall be any occaſion of *Contention* or *breach of Communion* among us.

7. It is expedient, that they who enter on the *Work of preaching the Goſpel*, *be* not only qualified for Communion of Saints; but alſo that, except in *Caſes extraordinary*, they give proof of their *Gifts* and *Fitneſs* for the ſaid *Work*, unto the *Paſtors* of Churches, of *known Abilities* to diſcern and judge of their *Qualifications*; that they may be ſent forth with ſolemn *Approbation* and *Prayer*; which we judge needful, that no Doubt may remain concerning their being called unto the Work; and for preventing (as much as in us lieth) ignorant and raſh Intruders.

III. *Of Cenſures.*

1. AS it cannot be avoided, but that in the pureſt Churches on Earth there will ſometimes Offences and Scandals ariſe, by Reaſon of Hypocriſy and prevailing corruption; ſo Chriſt hath made it the Duty of every Church, to reform itſelf by ſpiritual Remedies appointed by him to be applied in all ſuch caſes, *viz. Admonition* and *Excommunication.*

2. *Admonition*, being the rebuking of an offending Member, in order for conviction, is in caſe of private Offences, to be perform'd according to the Rule in *Matth.* xviii. 15, 16, 17. and in caſe of publick Offences, openly before the Church, as the Honour of the Goſpel, and the Nature of the Scandal ſhall require: And, if either of the *Admonitions* take place for the Recovery of the *fallen perſon*, all further proceedings in a Way of *Cenſure* are thereon to ceaſe, and *ſatisfaction* to be declared accordingly.

3. When

3. When all due Means are uſed, according to the *Order of the Goſpel*, for the reſtoring an *offending and ſcandalous Brother*, and he, notwithſtanding remains impenitent, the cenſure of *Excommunication* is to be proceeded unto; wherein the *Paſtor* and other *Elders* (if there be ſuch) are to lead and go before the *Church*; and the Brotherhood to give their conſent in a Way of Obedience unto Chriſt, and to the *Elders*, as over them in the Lord.

4. It may ſometimes come to paſs, that a *Church-Member*, not otherwiſe ſcandalous may *ſinfully withdraw*, and divide himſelf from the *Communion of the Church* to which he belongeth: In which caſe, when all *due Means* for the reducing him, prove ineffectual, he having hereby cut himſelf off from *that Churches Communion*; the Church may juſtly eſteem and declare itſelf diſcharged of any further Inſpection over him.

IV. *Of Communion of Churches.*

1. WE agree that particular Churches ought not to walk ſo diſtinct and ſeparate from each other, as not to have care and tenderneſs towards one another. But their Paſtors ought to have frequent Meetings together, that by mutual Advice, Support, Encouragement, and brotherly Intercourſe, they may ſtrengthen the Hearts and Hands of each other in the *Ways of the Lord*.

2. That none of our particular Churches ſhall be ſubordinate to one another, each being endued with Equality of Power from *Jeſus Chriſt*. And that none of the ſaid particular Churches, their Officer or Officers, ſhall exerciſe any Power, or have any Superiority, over any other Church or their Officers.

3. That known Members of particular Churches conſtituted as aforeſaid, may have occaſional communion with one another in the Ordinances of the Goſpel, *viz.* the *Word*, *Prayer*, *Sacraments*, *ſinging of Pſalms*, diſpenſed according to the Mind of Chriſt: Unleſs

Unleſs that Church with which they deſire Communion, hath any juſt Exception againſt them.

4. That we ought not to admit any one to be a Member of our reſpective congregations, that hath joyn'd himſelf to another, without Endeavours of mutual ſatisfaction of the *Congregations concerned*.

5. That one *Church* ought not to blame the proceedings of another, until it hath heard, what that *Church* charged, its Elders or Meſſengers, can ſay in Vindication of themſelves from any charge of irregular or injurious proceedings.

6. That we are moſt willing and ready to give an Account of our Church-proceedings to each other, when deſired; for preventing or removing any Offences, that may ariſe among us. Likewiſe, we ſhall be ready to give the Right-Hand of Fellowſhip, and walk together according to the Goſpel-Rules of Communion of *Churches*.

V. *Of Deacons and Ruling-Elders.*

WE agree, the Office of a Deacon is of Divine Appointment, and that it belongs to their Office to receive, lay out, and diſtribute the *Church's* ſtock to its proper Uſes, by the Direction of the Paſtor, and Brethren, if Need be. And whereas divers are of Opinion, that there is alſo the Office of Ruling-Elders, who labour not in Word and Doctrine; and others think otherwiſe; we agree, that this Difference make no Breach among us.

VI. *Of occaſional Meeting of Miniſters.*

1. WE agree, that in order to concord, and in other weighty and difficult caſes it is needful, and according to the Mind of *Chriſt*, that the Miniſters of ſeveral *Churches* be conſulted and adviſed with about ſuch Matters.

2. That

2. That ſuch Meetings may conſiſt of ſmaller or greater Numbers, as the Matter ſhall require.

3. That particular *Churches*, their reſpective Elders and Members, ought to have a Reverential Regard to their Judgment, ſo given, and not diſſent therefrom without apparent Grounds from the Word of God.

VII. *Of our Demeanour towards the Civil Magiſtrate.*

1. WE do reckon ourſelves obliged continually to pray for God's Protection, Guidance and Bleſſing upon the Rulers ſet over us.

2. That we ought to yield unto them not only ſubjection in the Lord, but ſupport, according to our Station and Abilities.

3. That if at any Time it ſhall be their Pleaſure to call together any Number of us, to require an Account of our Affairs, and the State of our congregations, we ſhall moſt readily expreſs all dutiful Regard to them herein.

VIII. *Of a Confeſſion of Faith.*

AS to what appertains to ſoundneſs of Judgment in Matters of Faith, we eſteem it ſufficient that a *Church* acknowledge the Scriptures to be the Word of God, the perfect and only Rule of Faith and Practice, and own either the Doctrinal Part of thoſe commonly called, *the Articles of the Church of England*, or the *Confeſſion* or *Catechiſms* ſhorter or larger, compiled by the *Aſſembly* at *Weſtminſter*, or the *Confeſſion* agreed on at the *Savoy*, to be agreeable to the ſaid Rule.

IX. *Of our Duty and Deportment towards them that are not in Communion with us.*

1. WE judge it our Duty to bear a *Chriſtian* Reſpect to all *Chriſtians*, according to their ſeveral Ranks and Stations, that are not of our Perſwaſion or Communion.

2. As

2. As for ſuch as may be ignorant of the Principles of the *Chriſtian Religion*, or of *vicious Converſation*, we ſhall in our reſpective Places, as they give Opportunity, endeavour to explain to them the Doctrine of Life and Salvation, and to our utmoſt perſwade them to be reconciled to God.

3. That ſuch who appear to have the eſſential Requiſites to *Church-Communion*, we ſhall willingly receive them in the Lord, not troubling them with Diſputes about leſſer Matters.

As we aſſent to the fore-mentioned *Heads of Agreement*, ſo we unanimouſly reſolve, as the *Lord* ſhall enable us, to *practiſe* according to them.

NUMB. IV.

An Abridgment of the Laws, and Ordinances of New-England, *to the Year* 1700.

A.

ACTIONS, Actions of Debts, Accounts, Slander, Actions of the caſe concerning Debts or Accounts, the Plaintiff may try where he will within the Juriſdiction of the Court, where he or the Defendant lives; by conſent, they may be try'd any where elſe. Other Actions muſt be try'd where the Cauſe did ariſe.

If the Plaintiff in an Action of Treſpaſs pretends Damage above 40 *s*, and has receiv'd leſs, he ſhall be Non-ſuited, and pay Coſts.

No Action to be enter'd after the firſt Day of the Court's ſitting. Double Fees, for thoſe enter'd after Noon not to be recover'd of the Defendant.

Who-

Whoever brings an Action without cauſe, muſt pay the charges the Court ſhall judge he occaſion'd, and any Fine they impoſe; as likewiſe the Defendant, if they find him in Fault; Vexatious Actions, or Suits, to pay treble coſts, and to be fin'd 40*s.* to the Treaſury.

Adultery. If any Perſon commit Adultery with a marry'd Woman, Maid, or Woman eſpouſed, both Man and Woman ſhall be put to Death.

Age. No Perſon under 21 Years of Age, ſhall convey Lands or Hereditaments, or val in Eleccons of publick Offices, or give Verdict, or paſs Sentence in any civil or criminal Court, or cauſe.

Orphans may chooſe their Guardians at 14.

None under the Age of 21, ſhall plead, or be impleaded in civil caſes, but in the Names of their Parents, Maſters, or Guardians.

But in criminal caſes, they muſt anſwer for their Miſdemeanours, and inform againſt others in their owu Names.

Apparel. All Perſons not worth 200*l.* wearing Gold or Silver Lace, or Buttons, or Bone-Lace, above 2*s. per* Yard, or Silk Hoods, or Scarfs, may be preſented by the Grand-Jury, and ſhall pay 10*s.* for every Offence.

The ſelect Men of every Town may aſſeſs thoſe who dreſs above their Rank, at 200*l.* Eſtate, and make them pay, as thoſe to whom their Dreſs is ſuitable, except Magiſtrates, their Wives, and Children, Officers, civil or military, Soldiers in Time of Service; or ſuch as have had a high Education, or are ſunk from a higher Fortune, *Anno* 1651.

If any Perſon's Dreſs ſhould be adjudg'd by theGrand Jury, or County-Court above his Rank, they are to be admoniſh'd for the firſt Offence, to pay 20*s.* for the ſecond, 40*s.* for the third, and 40*s.* for every Offence afterwards, *Anno* 1662,

A Taylor who makes Cloaths for Children, or Servants, contrary to the Mind of their Parents or Maſters, is for the firſt Offence, to be admoniſhed, and for the ſecond, to pay double the Value of the Cloaths, half to the Owner, and half to the County, 1662. The Grand-Jury are enjoin'd to preſent all Offenders in Apparel. *Ibid.*

Appeal. Any Perſon may appeal from an inferior to a ſuperior Court, provided they tender their Appeal before the Judges of the Court they appeal to, put in Bail to proſecute it, and to pay Damages before Execution, which can't be 'till 12 Hours after Judgment, unleſs by ſpecial Order.

Appellants in criminal caſes to give Security for Appearance and good Behaviour.

Appeals in Matter of Law, to be determin'd by the Bench; in Matter of Fact, by Bench and Jury.

In an Appeal to the Court of Aſſiſtants in any capital Offence, if two in five, or three in ſeven, or the like Proportion diſſent from the Majority, there lyes an Appeal to the next General Court.

Appeals to be recorded at the charge of the Appellant, and certified to the Court to which they are made, the Reaſons of them, without any Reflecting Language, to be given in Writing under their Hands, or their Attorney's Hands, to the Clerk of the Court from whence they are made, ſix Days before the Court begins to which they are made.

Appellants not proſecuting their Appeals, to pay, beſide their Bonds to the Party, 40*s.* to the County.

No Perſon who ſate as Judge, or voted in the inferiour Court, ſhall have a Vote in that Court to which the Appeal is made in the ſame caſe, but it ſhall be decided by different Perſons.

The Court appeal'd to, ſhall judge the caſe according to the former Evidence, and no other Court may reverſe Judgment, or abate, or increaſe Damages, *Anno* 1654.

Appeals from the Aſſociation-Courts of *Portſmouth* and *Dover*, are to the next County Court, and not to that of Aſſiſtants at *Boſton*, as formerly, *Anno* 1670.

Appearance. No one to be puniſh'd for Non-Appearance, if hinder'd by Providence. This Law not to prejudice any Perſon in his coſts or damages in civil Actions, *Anno* 1641.

Arreſts. None to be arreſted, or put in Priſon for Debt, if the Law finds any Means of Satisfaction from his Eſtate, except in ſpecial contracts, *Anno* 1641.

The Perſon arreſted to be in Priſon at his own charge, unleſs the Court determine otherwiſe, but not to continue there, unleſs there is an Appearance of ſome Eſtate conceal'd, *Anno* 1641.

The

The Priſoner ſwearing before a proper Magiſtrate that he has no Eſtate, is to be releas'd, but is to make Satisfaction by Service, though not to be ſold to any beſides the *Engliſh*, *Anno* 1647.

In civil Actions, the Priſoner ſwearing he is not worth 5*l.* the Plaintiff muſt maintain him in Priſon, levying by Execution his Expence, if he can find Effects.

No Priſoner to go at Liberty, without Licenſe of the Court, or Creditor, if he does, the Keeper to be fin'd at Diſcretion, and pay the Debt.

Attachments. A Foreigner can't attach an Inhabitant, without giving Security to proſecute his Account, and pay coſts, if caſt.

The Suit not to proceed, unleſs legal Notice be given of Attachments of Goods, or Lands, by writing left at the Place of Abode of the Defendant.

If the Defendant be out of the Juriſdiction of the Court where the Attachment lyes, the cauſe goes on, but Judgment is not to be enter'd 'till the next Court, nor Execution granted, 'till the Plaintiff gives Security to the Defendant to be reſponſible, in caſe he reverſes Judgment within a Year, or ſuch longer Time as the Court directs.

If the Plaintiff does not expreſs in whoſe Name or capacity he ſueth, Exception may be taken, and the Plaintiff muſt pay coſts.

Tho' the Law directs the Attachment to Conſtables, where no Marſhal lives, yet a Marſhal may ſerve it any where in the Juriſdiction of the Court where he is an Officer, but he is to be paid no more than a Conſtable, *Anno* 1662.

B.

Bakers, ſee Bread.

Ballaſt. No Ballaſt to be taken out of any Town, Slough, without Leave of the ſelect Men, under Penalty of 6*d.* a Shovel-full, except it be what they laid there themſelves.

No Ballaſt to be caſt out to the Prejudice of any Harbour, under Penalty of 10*s.* *Anno* 1646.

Barratry. The Court may reject the Cauſe of a common Barrater, that vexes others with unjuſt Suits, and may puniſh him for his Barratry, 1641.

Baſtardy. The Father of a Baſtard convict ſhall maintain it, or allow the Mother what the Court thinks fit.

The Oath of the Woman alone makes him liable to this charge, though not to any Puniſhment due by the Law in caſes of Fornication and Adultery; but if circumſtances render the Fact doubtful, the Court may acquit him.

Beſtiality. If a Man or Woman lye with a Beaſt, the Beaſt to be ſlain and buried, and the Perſon put to Death.

Benevolence. No Benevolence to be granted, but in foreign Occaſions, and when publick Debts are paid, and there is Money in the Treaſury.

The County-Court may take Notice of Gifts and Legacies to publick Uſes, and if they ſee cauſe, may appoint Feoffees of Truſt to ſettle and manage them.

Bills Aſſigned. Bills, or other Specialties may be aſſigned, and the Right of Account ſhall be in the Aſſignee, ſo that he may ſue for them in his own Name, or by Attorney, provided the Aſſignment be indors'd on the Back of the Bill.

Blaſphemy. Blaſphemy againſt the Holy Name of God, the Father, Son, or Holy Ghoſt, either in expreſs Words, or by an obſtinate Denial of the true God and his Worſhip, ſhall be puniſh'd with Death.

Bond-Men. None to be bought, or ſold for Slaves but thoſe who are taken in War, or made ſuch by Authority, and theſe to have the ſame Liberties, as thoſe under the Law of *Moſes*.

Bounds of Lands. The Bounds of every Town are to be ſet out within a Year after they are granted.

The Marks of thoſe Bounds to be renew'd every three Years, by three, or more Inhabitants choſen by the ſelect Men, who together with the adjacent Towns, ſhall go the Bounds, and renew the Land-Marks.

The Time for this muſt be in the firſt or ſecond Month; Notice to be given of it by the moſt ancient Town; the Bounds muſt be a Heap of Stones, or a Trench.

The

The Town that neglects to renew them ſhall forfeit 5 *l.* The Men appointed for this to be under the Direction of the ſelect Men, and paid by the Towns.

Thoſe who have Lands in common, muſt viſit their Bounds once a Year, or pay 10*s.* for every Day they neglect it after they are requeſted to do ſo.

Breach of the Peace. If one Man beats or hurts another, he ſhall pay to him, or the County, or both, what the proper Judge determines, who may fine him according to the circumſtances of the Offence.

To keep Poſſeſſion of any Thing, or to endeavour to regain it by Force after Execution upon Judgment obtain'd, is a Breach of the Peace; the Officers of Juſtice are to aid the Plaintiff, and commit the Offender and his Abettors, who are to anſwer for it at the Court where the Judgment was obtain'd, and to be puniſh'd as the Court thinks fit.

Bread. The Baker is to mark his Bread, and to make it up according to the following Aſſizes.

When Wheat is at

s.	*d.*		White. *Ou.*	White. *qr.*	Wheat. *Ou.*	Wheat. *qr.*	Houſhold. *Ou.*	Houſhold. *qr.*
3	0	per Buſhel, each Penny-Loaf muſt weigh	11	1	17	1	23	0
3	6		10	1	15	1	20	2
4	0		9	1	14	0	18	2
4	6		8	1	11	3	16	2
5	0		7	3	11	2	15	2
5	6		7	0	10	2	14	0
6	0		6	2	11	0	13	0
6	6		6	0	9	2	11	2

Two Perſons in every Market-Town choſen annually, and ſworn at the next County-Court, or neareſt Magiſtrate, have Power with, or without a Conſtable, to enter any Houſe where they are inform'd that Bread is made for Sale, and weigh the Bread, and ſeize what is under Weight, a Third for themſelves, and the reſt for the Poor.

Brewers. None may brew for Sale or Shipping, but ſuch as are known to be skilful in that Art.

If the Beer they ſell for Sea proves unfit for Uſe, through their Fault, Damages may be recover'd of them by Action.

Bridges. Bridges to be made in ſuch Places, and repair'd, as the County-Court, or a Committee appointed by them directs, at the charge of the County, to be levy'd upon the Towns according to the County Rates.

If any Bridge or Highway be defective, and any Perſon in paſſing it loſe his Life, after legal Preſentment of it to the County-Court, the County or Town ſhall pay 100 *l.* to the neareſt Relation of the Deceaſed.

If any Perſon loſe a Limb, break a Bone, or receive a Bruiſe, or if any Damage happen to any Team, or their Lading, the Party may recover double Damages, if due Notice have been given, as before.

Any Magiſtrate may iſſue out Warrants to Conſtables, to preſs Men, Horſes, or Carts, for repairing a Bridge or High-way, who ſhall be paid for their Work by ſuch Towns, or Perſons to whom the Bridge belongs.

Burgeſſes. Burgeſſes muſt be Members of ſome Church, gathered by conſent of the Eſtabliſh'd Churches of the Country.

They may chooſe out of their Body ordinary Judges of their ſeveral Towns, and Deputies, who join'd with the Governour and his Aſſiſtants, conſtitute the General Court.

Burglary and Robbery. Burglary and Robbery on the Highway ſhall be puniſh'd for the firſt Offence, with burning in the Forehead, with the Letter *B.* and the Loſs of an Ear, if on the Sabbath; for the ſecond, with Burning and Whipping; and the Loſs of t'other Ear, if on the Sabbath; for the third, with Death.

C.

Cask. All Cask to be of *London* Aſſize, and of good Timber, to be gaug'd, and mark'd by Gaugers, who are to have 4 *d. per* Ton.

Every Cooper that ſets not his Mark on his Cask, to pay 20 *s.*

Bad Cask expos'd to Sale forfeited to the Informer, and the Owner to be fin'd 10 *s. per* Ton.

A Gauger to be choſen, and ſworn annually, and to pay 40 *s.* if he refuſes to officiate; the Town that neglects to chuſe one, forfeits 40 *s.*

The

The Gauger is to ſee that Goods are pack'd in Casks of true Aſſize, and to pay 10*s.* for every defective Cask, half to the Informer, and half to the County.

He is alſo to view Victuals, and to receive 4*s. per* Ton, if 'tis defective, if otherwiſe, but one.

All Goods expos'd to Sale without the Gauger's Mark forfeited, half to the Informer, half to the County.

Hogſhead-Staves are to be 3 Foot 2 Inches in Length, Barrel-Staves 31 Inches, Heading for Pipe-Staves 28 Inches in Length, and for Hogſheads and Barrels ſuitable to the Staves.

Cattle. The Cattle of every Town muſt be mark'd with a diſtinct Mark, or pay double Damage, if they treſpaſs.

The Mark of ſuch Cattle as feed in open common without Keeper to be on the Shoulder, or home left Buttock, and the Clerk of the Writs in every Town to keep a Copy of the Marks.

No unruly Beaſt to feed in common, or Ground next to Corn-Fields, or any fenced Ground without Fetters.

The Party aggriev'd by Treſpaſs, may bring his Action, or refer his Damage to two Neighbours, which the Owner of the Beaſt ſhall pay.

But if he diſapproves of the Judgment, the Parties by conſent may nominate each of them a Man to review the Damage, who may ſet aſide the former Judgment, provided they agree upon it the ſame Day.

Cattle taken in another's Ground may be impounded, 'till Notice given to their Owner, who may replevy them, or the other may return them, and bring his Action.

In caſe of involuntary Treſpaſs, the Treſpaſſer tendring full Damage before Suit commenced, ſhall not pay Coſts, though the other ſues him.

Whoever receives Damage from Cattle by his own Fault, ſhall recover nothing.

If Goats damage any one, the Owner ſhall pay double Damage, and the Perſon damnify'd ſhall keep and milk them 'till he has receiv'd Satisfaction.

Whoever takes another's Beaſt, and works it without Leave, ſhall pay treble Damages, or 10*s.* if the Plaintiff demands it; if they can't pay it, they ſhall be otherwiſe puniſh'd, as the Magiſtrate ſees cauſe.

Drift Cattle may be fed in any open Land, not appropriated to any Uſe.

Charges of the publick. No Governour, Deputy-Governour, Aſſiſtant, Aſſociate, Grand or Petty Juryman, Deputy for the General Court, or Commiſſioner for military Diſcipline, ſhall ſerve the Publick at their own Expence.

Every Perſon to be aſſeſſed by the Country Rates for all Charges in Church and State, their Lands in the Towns where they lye, and their Perſons where they dwell. The Money to be levy'd on Defaulters by Diſtreſs: If nothing is found, they are to be impriſon'd 'till the County Court, or 'till Security given.

The Treaſurer every *July* ſhall ſend his Warrant to the Conſtables of every Town, to ſummon the Inhabitants to chuſe a Commiſſioner for Aſſeſſments, who with the ſelect Men ſhall in *Auguſt* take a Liſt of all male Perſons above ſixteen, and a Survey of their Eſtates, and aſſeſs them 20 *d. per* Head, (except Magiſtrates, and Elders of Churches), and their Eſtates at a Penny *per* Pound.

The Eſtates of Traders are to be rated at the Diſcretion of the Aſſeſſors, but they may complain, if overrated, to the General Court. None to pay for Lands in *England*.

A Bull or Cow of 4 Years old, is to be rated at 3 *l.* Value, of 3 Years old, at 2 *l.* 10 *s.* of 2 Years, at 2 *l.* of 1, at 1 *l.* An Ox of 4 Years, at 5 *l.* A Horſe, or Man of 3 Years, at 5 *l.* of 2 Years, at 3 *l.* of 1, at 1 *l.* 10 *s.* A Sheep of 1 Year, at 10 *s.* A Goat, at 8. A Hog, at 20 *s.* An Aſs, of 1 Year, at 2 *l.* Cattle under a Year, Corn and Hay in the Farmers Hands exempted.

Tradeſmen and Artiſans to be rated by Eſtimation of their Profits, unleſs diſabled.

Parents and Maſters ſhall be tax'd for Children and Servants taking no Wages.

The Commiſſioners to meet in the Shire-Town the firſt *Wedneſday* in *September*, to ſign ther Liſt and Aſſeſſment, and give it to the Treaſurer, or be fin'd 40 *s.* who is to levy it by the Conſtables before the 20th of *November* every Year.

Every

Every Perſon is to pay the Conſtable where he is aſſeſs'd, who is to remit the Money to *Boſton*, if the Treaſurer deſires it, at the publick Expence.

Eſtates not laid to any Town to be aſſeſs'd in the neareſt.

Cows ſhall be taken in Payment, if no Price be ſet by the General Court, at a Price currant, judg'd by the Commiſſioners of *Eſſex*, *Middleſex*, and *Suffolk*.

Conſtables charg'd with Collections, ſhall clear Accounts before the firſt of *May*, on Penalty of 5 *l.*

The Treaſurer ſhall diſtrain on the Conſtables for Non-Payment, or anſwer it himſelf to the County: If nothing is to be found on the Conſtable, he may diſtrain on any able Man in the Town, who upon Petition, ſhall have Warrant to collect the Rates over again, with reaſonable Damages.

Conſtables charged with collections, may continue to finiſh their collections, and deſtrain for Non-Payment, after their Office is expired.

A Foreigner arriving with Goods to ſell, the ſelect Men may aſſeſs them according to Value, and iſſue a Warrant for levying it.

Miniſters are excus'd from all Taxes.

Children. All Parents to teach their Children to read, and all Maſters to acquaint their Families with the capital Laws, on Penalty of 20 *s.* and to catechiſe them once a Week.

The ſelect Men may examine Children and Apprentices, and admoniſh Parents and Maſters, if they find them ignorant, and with the conſent of two Magiſtrates, or the next County-Court, put them into better Hands.

Children ſo removed by the Magiſtrate, ſhall ſerve the Maſters they are plac'd with, Males 'till 21, Females 'till 18 Years of Age.

'Tis Death for any Child, above 16 Years of Age, and of ſound Underſtanding, to ſtrike, or curſe his Parent, unleſs provok'd by extreme correction, or in their own Defence.

A Son of 16, accus'd by Parents of Rebellion, and other notorious crimes, ſhall be put to Death.

Magiſtrates may puniſh diſorderly Children or Servants on complaint, by Whipping, or otherwiſe, as they

ſee

ſee cauſe, and bind them over to the next County-Court.

Whoever entices away, or entertains Children or Servants, to pay 40*s.*

Whoever gives credit, or lends Money to any under 21, ſhall loſe his Money, and anſwer for the Miſchief his doing ſo occaſion'd.

Children to be redreſt by the Magiſtrate, if deny'd convenient Marriage.

No Orphan to be diſpos'd of without conſent of ſome Court, the Majority of ſelect Men aſſenting, ſufficient in caſe of Marriage.

Women Minors 'till 16.

Chirurgeons and Midwives. No Surgeon, Midwife, or Phyſician, ſhall practiſe on any, without conſent of the Perſon, or neareſt Relation.

Civil Cauſes petty. Any Magiſtrate may ſummon, by the Conſtable, Parties and Witneſſes, and determine any cauſe without a Jury, Damages not exceeding 40*s.*

The County-Court may appoint three Inhabitants to determine them, where no Magiſtrate dwells, who muſt ſwear to be faithful, but may not commit to Priſon in any caſe.

If the Cauſe concerns the Magiſtrate, or any one of the Commiſſioners, the ſelect Men ſhall determine it.

Theſe little Cauſes ſhall not lye before the County Court, but by Appeal, unleſs in caſe of Aſſault, or Defamation.

The Freemen of *Boſton* may preſent ſeven to be ſworn by the Court of Aſſiſtants, as Commiſſioners for that Town, any three of which with a Magiſtrate, or five without, may determine any Civil cauſes under 10*l.* ariſing within the *Iſthmus*, or *Nottles-Iſland*, or in which either Party ſhall be an Inhabitant.

The Commiſſioners of *Boſton* ſhall keep Records, and publiſh their Court-Days; they may appoint their Clerks, and demand of the Plaintiff, in Actions under 40*s.* 3*s.* 6*d.* for others, 10*s.* and accuſtomed Fees.

They may take cognizance of Riots and criminal Miſdemeanors, not fining more than 40*s.*

They are to have their Commiſſions under the Hand of the Secretary of the General Court, and all Conſtables and Inhabitants are to aſſiſt them.

None

None to be admitted into this Office that are not faithful to their Country, and inoffenſive in their converſations; an Appeal lyes from them to the Court of Aſſiſtants.

Clerks. Clerks of the Writs are to be nominated by every Town, and and allow'd by the County Court.

They are to grant Summons, Attachments, and Replevies, and to take Securities for Proſecution of Suits.

Their Fees are, 2 *d.* for a Warrant, 3 *d.* for an Attachment Replevin, 4 *d.* for a Bond for themſelves; and 3 *d.* for the Mareſchal-General for Attachments.

Condemned Perſons. None to be executed 'till 4 Days after condemnation, but in caſe of martial Law, or ſome ſpecial cauſe, nor to remain unburied 12 Hours, but in caſe of Anatomy.

The Dead Warrant to be ſign'd by the Secretary of the General Court.

Conſpiracy. Conſpiracy againſt the Commonwealth, by attempting an Invaſion, Inſurrection, Rebellion, or by attempting to ſeize any Towns or Forts, to be puniſh'd with Death.

Conſtables. Conſtables ſhall execute the Sentence on Criminals, or get one to do it.

They are to collect Rates, and Aſſeſſments, convey Offenders they are charg'd with before ſome Magiſtrate, receive and forward all Hue and Cries after Offenders, and even iſſue them when no Magiſtrate is near.

He may ſearch for Offenders in publick Houſes, and apprehend them without Warrant; but if employ'd, he muſt have a Warrant.

Whoever refuſes to aſſiſt the Conſtable, muſt pay 10 *s.* to the Country, to be levy'd by Warrant, if he does it contemptuouſly, he muſt pay 40 *s.*

Every Conſtable muſt have a black Staff 5 Foot long, tipt at the upper End 5 Inches with Braſs, as the Badge of his Office, when he acts.

If the Conſtable refuſes to forward a Hue and Cry, he ſhall pay 40 *s.*

The Conſtables may arreſt, and ſerve Summons and Attachments, where no Marſhal lives.

The Charge of Hue and Cry after a Priſoner muſt be

be paid by the Treaſurer of the County; after others, by thoſe who procure them.

Conveyances. No Alienation of Lands, but by Deed ſign'd and deliver'd, and Poſſeſſion given by the Seller, or one authoriz'd by him. The clauſe of Conveyance to be in theſe Words: *To have and to hold the ſaid Premiſes reſpectively to the Party, or Grantee, his Heirs and Aſſigns for ever:* If the Eſtate be entail'd, in theſe Words: *To have, and to hold, &c. to the Party or Grantee, and to the Heirs of his Body lawfully begotten between him, and ſuch a one his Wife.* This Form not neceſſary in granting Town-Lands.

Former Deeds remain good, though not in the Methods now preſcribed.

Deeds obtain'd by Violence are void, fraudulent Conveyances ſhan't defeat a Man of his Claim to juſt Debts, Licences, or Lands.

No Grants, Sales, or Mortgages ſhall be in Force, except againſt the Grantee, himſelf, or Heirs, unleſs own'd before a Magiſtrate, and recorded.

All Grants before *October* 1640, to be recorded, in a Month, or to be null, except againſt the Grantee; if he refuſes to own the Grant, when requir'd, the Magiſtrate may commit him, and the Grantee enter a Caution with the Recorder of the County-Coutt, which ſhall ſecure his Intereſt.

The Clerk of the County-Court to enter all Grants, Sales, *&c.* with the Names of Granter and Grantee, with the Date, and Particulars of the Eſtate.

If the Granter be not in the Juriſdiction, he muſt enter within three Months after his Return.

General Court. The General Court made up of Magiſtrates and Deputies, hath Power to tax the Country, and to give, and confirm Properties of publick Lands. It hath the Supreme Legiſlative Power, and the Power of Judicature, and of redreſſing the Grievances of the People; the Deputies muſt take the following Oath.

I Do ſwear by the moſt great and dreadful Name of the ever-living God, that in all Caſes wherein I am to deliver my Vote or Sentence againſt any criminal Offence, or between Parties in any Civil Caſe, I will deal uprightly and

and juſtly, according to my Judgment and Conſcience, and I will according to my Skill and Ability, aſſiſt in all other publick Affairs of this Court faithfully and truly, according to the Duty of my Place, when I ſhall be preſent to attend the Service.

The Magiſtrates and Deputies in this Court muſt ſit and act apart, and Laws and Orders muſt be tranſmitted from one Houſe to another; not to be in Force 'till paſſed by a Majority in both Houſes, and engroſſed.

They are to be read the laſt Day of the Seſſion to the whole Body united.

In caſe of Difference, 'tis to be decided by the Majority of both Houſes met together.

This Court to be call'd by Governour, Deputy-Governour, or Court of Aſſiſtants on any Occaſion, but to be diſſolv'd, or adjourn'd only by themſelves.

It aſſembles by Warrant once a Quarter, or oftner.

It may call the Governour or any Magiſtrate to Account, and cenſure them, as the caſe requires.

It may determine cauſes without Appeal, and cite thoſe depending in other Courts.

The Governour to have the caſting Vote in this, as the Moderator in other Civil Aſſemblies.

County Court. The County Court conſiſts of Magiſtrates of the County, and others appointed by the General Court at the Nomination of the Freemen, five of them with one Magiſtrate may hold a Court.

They may determine cauſes not extending to Life, Member, or Baniſhment, appoint Clerks, and other Officers, and ſummon Juries for the ſeveral Townſhips.

Courts of Aſſiſtants. Courts of Aſſiſtants conſiſt of Governour, Deputy-Governour, and Magiſtrates of *Boſton*, who are to meet at *Boſton* the firſt *Tueſday* in *March* and *September*.

They determine Actions of Appeal, capital cauſes, and cauſes of Divorce: They may be called by the Governour, or his Deputy, as Occaſion requires: Seven muſt be preſent, of which the Governour, or his Deputy, to be one, except in caſes of neceſſity.

Courts Special. The Governour or Deputy, with two Magiſtrates, or any three Magiſtrates may call a ſpecial Court for the ſake of a Stranger.

The

The Records of it to be enter'd in the Court of Aſſiſtance, at the Expence of the Party caſt.

Courts in General. Any Court may receive an Action from a Stranger, againſt any one not an Inhabitant, and proceed to Judgment on Proof of legal Summons.

All criminal Caſes to be try'd at the next Court that hath cognizance of them.

No Court is to transfer a Caſe to another, but they may ſtate the Caſe and preſent it to the General Court for their Opinion, and proceed to Judgment according to that Opinion.

Every Court may admit Freemen, if Church Members, and give them their Oath, and the Clerk muſt ſend their Names to the General Court.

Any one Magiſtrate may adjourn the Court, and all Parties concern'd are bound without freſh Summons to attend again.

Clerks and Recorders of Courts muſt be ſworn to be faithful.

Cruelty. No Court can puniſh with above Forty Stripes.

No Man muſt correct any under him with Cruelty, or be cruel to a Beaſt.

D.

Debts. No Debt not acknowledged for ſix Years pleadable in any Court, unleſs prov'd or recorded in ſome Court; the Evidence of ſuch muſt be ſuch as the Court approves, the Debtor to have a Year to diſprove it.

Deputies. The Deputies for the General Court are choſen by Ballots of Freemen.

They may confer about Buſineſs, and prepare it for the Court.

No Town can ſend more than two; and a Town not having 20 Freemen, ſends but one.

Freemen of a Plantation under 10, vote in the next Town.

They may chuſe any one that is free, and lives within the Juriſdiction.

A Town not having 30 Freemen, may ſend Deputies, or let it alone.

Diſputes about Elections decided by the Deputies in the General Court.

No Man to be a Deputy, who is not ſound in the main Points of Religion, regular in his Converſation, or faithful to the Government; whoever Votes knowingly for ſuch, pays 5 *s.*

The Conſtable to return the Perſon choſen, and the Time for which, on forfeiture of 20*s.*

They are not to be continued above a Year.

They muſt attend the Court, or pay 20*s.* a Day, if not excus'd by the Houſe.

No Attorney in an Inferior Court to ſit in the General Court.

Diſtreſs. Things ſubject to preſent Decay, as Corn, *&c.* not liable to Diſtreſs, unleſs Security be given to make good the Damages.

Dowry. Wives not endowed by Jointure before Marriage, have a Right to a Third of the Husband's Eſtate for their Life, unleſs barr'd from it by her Conſent in Writing, own'd before a Magiſtrate.

The Heir at Law is to aſſign her Thirds within a Month, or ſhe may bring a Writ of Dowry in the County Court.

They muſt leave the Eſtate aſſign'd them, in repair.

E.

Elections. Aſſiſtants are choſen by Freemen putting a Bean againſt the Perſon, or a Grain of Corn for him.

Whoever puts in one or more Beans that is not Free, pays 10 *s.*

Any one may ſeal up his Vote before the Conſtable or Deputy, and ſend it to the Court of Elections at *Boſton.*

The Governour, his Deputy, Major-General, Treaſurer, Secretary, and Commiſſioners of the United Colonies are elected by Papers ſent open with their Names.

Magiſtrates for Towns are to be choſen by Freemen ſummoned in the ſecond Week of *March.*

He

He that gives more than one Vote in any Election, to pay 10*s.*

The Votes for the Aſſiſtants are to be ſent from each Town to the Shire-Town, and thence to *Boſton* to be open'd before a Magiſtrate the ſecond *Tueſday* in *April*; and the 18 that have moſt Voices, are to be Magiſtrates and Aſſiſtants.

The Commiſſioner who brought the Votes, to return the Names of thoſe choſen to the Conſtables, and they to the Freemen.

Whoever performs not his Duty in Elections, pays 10*s.*

No Quaker or Diſſenter from the Publick Worſhip has a Vote.

Eſtheates. Where there is no Heir, the Eſtate is to be in the Treaſury till a legal Claim be made.

F.

Falſe-Witneſſing. 'Tis Death to attempt another's Life by witneſſing falſely, wittingly and willingly.

Farms. Farms within the Bounds of a Town, are part of that Town, *Meadford* excepted.

Fees. Whoever impleads another, in County-Court, or Court of Aſſiſtants, pays 10*s.* before the *Cauſe* be entered.

Ten Shillings muſt be paid for every Action before the Commiſſioners of *Boſton* that's above 40*s.* 3 *d.* and 4*d.* for one under it, either before them or any Magiſtrate, or the three Commiſſioners for ſmall Cauſes.

The Court may excuſe Fees.

Fifteen Shillings muſt be paid, where Damages are recovered above 10 *l.* 20*s.* where 20 *l.*

All Fees to be allow'd in the Judgment levy'd by the Marſhal, and accounted to the reſpective Treaſurer.

Fences. Every one to fence according to his Proportion of the Corn-field in common, and not to put in Cattle while any Corn remains.

If they can't agree, ſelect Men to determine, or the Freemen where there are none.

Whoever won't ſtand to their Determination muſt incloſe his own Part.

Select

Select Men may order the Fences within their Bounds in Farms under 100 Acres, and impoſe Fines on Defaulters under 20 *s.*

If they neglect the Fences, to pay 5 *s.* to the Town *per* Month.

They may appoint two or more yearly to view the the Fences, and give Notice to the Owners to repair them, and if they do it not in ſix Days, the Surveyor may do it, and recover double Wages, to be levy'd by the Conſtable, having a Warrant from the ſelect Men.

If any one fences his Lands, his Neighbour is not to pay half of the Charge till he alſo incloſes.

The firſt Incloſer is not to lay open his Neighbour's Land, tho' he may his own, but may demand the Value of half the Party-fence to be ſet by two, each chuſing one, and purchaſe it.

This holds good in caſe of a Town-Common, but not of Houſe-Lots, under 10 Acres; if ſuch are improv'd, the Neighbour pays half the Party-Fence, whether he improves or not.

If a Perſon receives Damage from Cattle becauſe his Fence was faulty, he cannot recover it.

Ferries. No Paſſenger to be tranſported but by authoriz'd Ferry-men, who can only take up at their own Ferry Place, tho' they may land at anothers.

No Canoe to be us'd by them, on Forfeiture of the Canoe or Value of it, unleſs in caſe of Neceſſity.

Perſons may paſs in their own or Neighbours Boats.

Paſſage at *Weymouth-Ferry* 2 *d.* after Day-light is over 4 *d.*

Magiſtrates and Deputies paſs free with a Servant and Horſe, except where Rent is paid to the Country.

Whoever preſſes into a Ferry-boat, without conſent of Ferryman or Paſſengers, he may be thruſt out, or pays 10 *s.*

If the Ferryman admits one againſt the Conſent of any Magiſtrate, Deputy or Elder, or Majority of the Paſſengers, he pays 20 *s.*

Perſons to be tranſported in their Turn, except Publick Officers, Phyſicians, and ſuch-like, who are to be taken firſt.

Fines. Perſons are to ſtay in Priſon till they pay their Fines, unleſs the Judge or Court reſpite them.

The Clerk of the Court is to give a Copy of Fines and Dues to the Treaſurer, who muſt iſſue his Warrant to the Mareſchal to levy them.

The ſelect Men are to receive Fines in caſe of Elections for the uſe of the poor.

Firing. Whoever kindles a Fire in a Wood, ſo as to hurt Corn, before the 30th of *April*, or on *Saturdays* or *Sundays*, pays the Damage, and half ſo much to the Country.

If not able to pay, is to be whipt with Twenty Stripes.

Whoever ſets fire to any thing, to pay double Damage and be whipt, if Ten Years old.

If it be a Houſe or ſuch-like, 'tis Death, with the Forfeiture of what makes Satisfaction.

Perſons ſuſpected of this, to be impriſoned without Bail till the next County Court.

Fiſh. Fiſhermen may uſe Harbour or adjoyning Land for cuting their Fiſh, and take what Timber or Fire-wood they want, paying the Proprietor.

A Surveyor of Fiſh muſt be choſen by Buyer and Seller; what he ſays is merchantable, the Buyer muſt take, he muſt be ſworn before one appointed to take his Oath by the General Court; he is to have a Penny *per* Quintal, to be paid, half by the Buyer, and half by the Seller.

All Fiſh ſalted with *Sucktood*, Sun burnt, Salt burnt dry Fiſh, Fiſh pickled, is unmerchantable.

No one to kill Cod-fiſh, Hake, Haddock or Polluck for ſale in *December* or *January*, or Mackarel to barrel in *May* or *June*, on the Penalty of 5 *s.* for every Quintal, and the Mackarel forfeited.

The Garbage not to be thrown near the Banks.

Fiſhermen diſobeying Orders, or getting drunk, to pay for the firſt Offence 20 *s.* for the ſecond 40 *s.* and to be impriſoned three Months for the third.

Forgery. Forgery is puniſh'd with the Pillory, double Damages, and being diſabled to give Evidence or Verdict.

Fornication. Puniſh'd by compelling Marriage, Fines, or as the Court ſees fit.

Freemen. All *Engliſhmen*, Members of Churches found

ſound in Faith, regular in Life, Free-holders, rateable at 10 *s.* being 24 Years old, may be made free.

Not exempted from Offices, tho' they take not up their Freedom.

The County Court adminiſters the Oath of a Freeman, to any admitted by the General Court.

Galloping Horſes. No one to gallop a Horſe in *Boſton*, on Penalty of 3 *s.* 4 *d.*

Gaming. Whoever games for Money, pays treble the Value, half to the Treaſurer, half to the Informer.

No playing at Shuffleboard or Bowls at a Publick Houſe, on Penalty of 20 *s.* to the Maſter, and 5 to the Player.

No Dancing in Publick Houſes, on Penalty of 5 *s.*

No Feaſts or Feſtivals to be obſerv'd, or Cards or Dice to be us'd, on Penalty of 5 *s.*

None to bring Cards or Dice into the Country, or to have any in their cuſtody, on Penalty of 5 *l.* half to the Treaſurer, half to the Informer.

Whoever delivers them up is excus'd; whoever games, and informs of himſelf, is excus'd; he may witneſs againſt others, but has no Benefit from informing againſt them.

Judges may change the Fine into corporal Puniſhment.

H.

Hereſy. Whoever denies the Immortality of the Soul, the Reſurrection of the Body, or the Evil done by the outward Man is Sin, or that Chriſt gave himſelf a Ranſom for Sins, or that we are juſtified by his Righteouſneſs or the Morality of the 4th Command, or the baptizing of Infants, or the Ordinance of Magiſtracy, or their Authority to make War, or puniſh Offenders againſt the firſt Table; whoever denies any of theſe, or ſeduces others to do ſo, muſt be baniſh'd the Juriſdiction.

Whoever profeſſing the *Chriſtian Religion*, and being 16, denies any Book of the Bible to be the Word of God, is to be impriſon'd till the County Court, and fin'd or puniſh'd, as the Court thinks fit.

If he recants before Sentence, not to be fin'd above 10 *l.*

If he offends afterwards, he is to die or be baniſh'd, as the Court thinks fit.

The blaſphemous Books of *Veers* or *Muggleton* to be deliver'd up to the Magiſtrate and burnt, on Penalty of 10 *l.*

Whoever knowingly brings a Quaker or Heretick, is impriſon'd till he pays or gives Security for 100 *l.* and carrying him away again.

Whoever conceals ſuch, to pay 40 *s.* an Hour, or lie in Priſon till he does.

Whoever goes to a Quaker's-Meeting, pays 10 *s.* and 5 *l.* if he preaches.

Whoever diſperſes or conceals their Books, pays 5 *l.* for every Book.

Whoever reviles Magiſtrates or Miniſters, pays 5 *l.* or is to be whipp'd.

Defamers of Magiſtrates or Judges, for what they do in Court, are to be puniſh'd as the Crime deſerves.

The Publiſher of any Error to be cenſur'd as he deſerves by the County Court.

Quakers not Inhabitants, to be impriſon'd till the Court of Aſſiſtants, and then baniſh'd; not to return on Pain of Death.

If Inhabitants, they are to give Security for appearing next General Court, and to be baniſh'd if they don't recant.

If he returns, to be baniſh'd again, not to return on Pain of Death.

Vagabond Quakers are whipt through the Towns, not exceeding three, and convey'd out of the Juriſdiction; if they return after three Times, they are to be in the Houſe of Correction till County Court, branded with the Letter *R* on the left Shoulder, and whipp'd, as before; if they return after this, to be baniſh'd on Pain of Death.

If any turn Quakers, they are to be baniſh'd the Juriſdiction, and ſerv'd as Vagabond Quakers, if they return.

The Magiſtrate ſigning the Warrant for Whipping, muſt mention the Towns and Number of Stripes, and the Conſtable ſee it executed at the Expence of the County.

Hides.

Hides. No raw Hides, Skins, *&c.* to be expoſed, except thoſe which have been imported, or the Skins of wild Beaſts, on Penalty of the Goods or Value.

Highways. Highways muſt be kept in Repair by the Publick.

New Roads are to be laid out by three Men of the next Towns appointed by the County Court, without pulling down Houſes, or laying open Gardens, and to be 10 Rods wide where the Ground is wet or rocky.

The Town pays the Damage done to improv'd Lands, as valu'd by thoſe who lay out the Road; thoſe aggriev'd may appeal to the County Court.

If it be without cauſe, they muſt pay Charges and a Fine.

The ſelect Men to lay out private Roads, ſo as no Damage be done, without any Recompence.

Gates or Rails in the Road may be pull'd up by the County Court, paying Damages to the Owners.

Horſes. No Horſe to be ſold to an *Indian*, on Penalty of a 100 *l.* or taken on Board a Veſſel, without being enter'd in the Toll-Book, with the Colour, Mark and Age of the Horſe, with the Name of the Perſon of whom bought, and Proof that he was the Owner of it, on Penalty of 4 *l.* half to the Informer.

No Stone-Horſe above two Years old to run at large, unleſs view'd and allow'd of by the ſelect Men, on Penalty of 20 *s. per* Month.

If they neglect to view the Horſe or levy the Fine, they pay 20 *s.*

I.

Jaylors. Jaylors may take Bail in Civil Caſes, after Commitment.

Idle Perſons. Idle Perſons are to be preſented and puniſh'd, as the Court ſees fit.

Jeſuits. No Jeſuit or Prieſt to abide in the Juriſdiction.

Whoever can't clear himſelf from Suſpicion to the Court of Aſſiſtants, to be baniſh'd, not to return on Pain of Death, unleſs by Shipwreck, or in Company

with any upon Buſineſs, with whom they are to return.

Whatever Prieſt reſiding there, did not depart before *November* 1700, he was to be impriſon'd for Life, and to die if he broke Priſon.

Whoever conceal'd ſuch, to be Pillory'd, or pay 200 *l.* half to the Informer.

Any Juſtice may commit one ſuſpected, in order to a Trial, and he may be ſeiz'd by any, without Warrant.

If a Prieſt is driven on the Coaſt, he muſt go to one of the Council, obſerve his Orders, and depart as ſoon as poſſible

Impoſts. Wines and Strong Waters not coming from *England*, are to be enter'd, on Forfeiture of the Goods; the Duty of ſuch Goods to be paid in kind, as the Owner can agree with the Officer.

The Cuſtomer may employ Deputies to wait or ſearch Wines.

Wines of *Fyal* or *Weſtern Iſlands*, pay 5 *s.* *per* Pipe; of *Madera* 6 *s.* 8 *d.* Sherry, Sack or Canary, Muſkadel, Tent, Malmſey, *Alicant*, or others from the Streights, 10 *s.* *French* 5 *s.* Strong Waters 40 *s.*

Conſtables muſt aſſiſt Officers in ſearching for conceal'd Wines, in order to ſeize them, on Forfeiture of 10 *s.*

Debts due for Cuſtom, where Wines and Strong Waters are not to be had, are recoverable by Action.

Ships not fraught in *England*, pay 6 *d.* *per* Ton, and 10 *s.* *per* Ship to maintain Fortifications, thoſe fraught in *England*, 10 *s.* *per* Ship, if above 100 Ton, if under, 6 *s.* 8 *d.* *per* Ton.

Publick-Houſes to pay 2 *l.* 6 *d.* *per* Hogſhead for Syder, Ale and Beer, and 5 *s.* for Mum to the Treaſurer, before whom he is to ſwear to what he ſells, or pay treble Duty, or loſe his Licenſe.

All imported Goods, except Fiſh, Sheep, Wool, Cotton, Salt, pay 1 *d.* *per* Pound Value, to be rated at 20 *per Cent* above prime Coſt.

The Maſter, before he breaks Bulk, muſt report his Lading faithfully, on Penalty of 20 *s.* *per* Ton, and the Officer enter the Goods with the Owners Names, as far as they can lawfully be diſcover'd, and the Owner ſhall ſhew his Invoyce, and diſcover the Value of them to the Collector,

Collector, who muſt levy the Duty, and Diſtrain in caſe of Non-payment, taking 2 *s. per* Pound for his Labour.

If the Invoyce be ſatisfied, the Collector, with the ſelect Men rate the Goods.

Cattle brought into this Juriſdiction, to be ſold, kill'd or tranſported, to be paid for according to the Law mention'd, Tit. *Charges of the Publick*, on Forfeiture of the Beaſt or Value, half to the Informer.

Goods brought by Land, to pay 1 *d. per* Pound in Money, before Sale or Exportation.

The County Treaſurer is to ſee this Law executed.

No Goods paid for by this Law, are rateable again the ſame Year.

The Treaſurer may apply to the Council for Direction in doubtful Caſes.

Maſters of Ships bringing rateable Goods, muſt have Orders from the Treaſurer to deliver them, or pay the Rate; the Seal of his Office is (*TM*).

Impreſs. One Magiſtrate and the Overſeer may Impreſs any Labourers for publick Work, authorized by the General Court for a Week, paying them Wages, unleſs they have ſome Incapacity.

A Perſon may be forc'd to go out of his Juriſdiction only in Caſe of a defenſive War, enter'd upon by the General Court.

No Man's Cattle or Goods to be Impreſs'd without Warrant, and paying reaſonable Prizes, and making good all Damage.

Impriſonment. No one to be Impriſon'd, but in ſuch Caſes as the Law allows of.

Indians. *Indians* have a Right to Lands ſubdu'd and improv'd, deſiring to live among the *Engliſh*.

They ſhall have Allotments of Lands, according to Cuſtom, and have Relief in Courts, if diſpoſſeſs'd of what is theirs, as the *Engliſh*.

Lands in the Juriſdiction not improv'd by *Indians*, is the Property of the *Engliſh*.

None to buy Land of *Indians*, without Leave from the General Court, on Forfeiture of the Lands.

None to ſell to the *Indians*, or to any Perſons inhabiting out of the Juriſdiction, Guns, Powder, Ball, Armour

or Weapon, on Forfeiture of 40*s.* for a pound of Lead or Shot, 5 *l.* for every pound of Powder, and 10 *l.* for Gun, Armour or Weapon.

No Perſon not in the Juriſdiction may Trade with any *Indian* within this Juriſdiction for any Goods, without forfeiting them.

They may be ſeiz'd by any without Warrant, half for their own Uſe.

He that ſells any ſort of Peltry to the *Indians*, without Leave from the General Court, pays 100 *l.* 10 *l.* for the Informer.

Whoever ſells them any ſtrong Liquors, pays 40 *s.* a Pint; a Third to the Informer.

Trucking Houſes not allow'd by the General Court, are to be demoliſh'd.

Phyſicians may preſcribe in Liquors forbid to the *Indians*, with Licenſe of a Magiſtrate.

None to ſell the *Indians* a Boat, Skiff or Canoe, on Forfeiture of 50 *l.*

Damage done their Corn, to be recompenc'd by thoſe whoſe Cattle did it.

Thoſe whoſe Cattle may damage their Plantations, muſt help them to fence, and they muſt ſell them Tools to do it.

If they refuſe to fence, they can't have Damage.

They muſt fence Lands granted or purchaſed, at their own Charge.

If the *Indian* Cattle damage the *Engliſh*, they muſt make Satisfaction.

Laws reſpecting them, muſt be made known to them once a Year, by one appointed by the General Court.

Civiliz'd *Indians* living under the Government, ſhall have an *Indian* Commiſſioner, and Conſtables and Marſhals in their Plantations, and the Power of a County Court to determine Cauſes, provided an *Engliſh* Magiſtrate appoint the Time and Place, and conſents to all Judgments.

Indians not to profane the Sabbath, or to have ſtrong Liquors.

If Drunk, they muſt pay 10 *s.* or be whipp'd with Ten Stripes, confeſs where they had the Liquor, or ſtay in the Houſe of Correction, till they pay the Fine of the Liquor they drank.

The

The Accuſation of an *Indian* will be good againſt any that purgeth not himſelf by Oath.

Thoſe who have Licenſe to ſell Peltry to the *Indians*, may alſo ſell Arms and Ammunition to thoſe not in Hoſtility, paying to the Treaſurer every half Year 6 *s.* *per* pound of Powder: 6 *d.* for 10 pound of Shot: 3 *s.* *per* Gun and *per* dozen of Sword-Blades, and give a true account upon Oath of what he ſells on Penalty of 5 *l.* for every pound of Powder; 5 *l.* for every 10 pound of Shot; 10 *l.* for every Gun or dozen of Sword-Blades; this to be in Force while the Court pleaſes. 1668.

Indictments. The Indictment muſt be within a Year after the Offence, except in capital Offences, Crimes that concern Life, or Member, or Baniſhment, Treaſon, Conſpiracy or Felony, above 10 *s.* or Civil Right or Cauſe of Action at Law.

Inn-keepers. None to keep a Publick Houſe without Licenſe from the County Court, on penalty of 5 *l.* or Impriſonment during Pleaſure.

Merchants not to Retail under three Gallons of Wine or Syder, and a Quart of Strong Waters.

Publick Houſes muſt have a Sign within three Months, or forfeit their Licenſe.

And ſell Beer at 2 *d.* *per* Quart, 4 Buſhels of Malt to the Hogſhead, on penalty of 40 *s.*

If they brew with any thing inſtead of Malt, to pay 5 *l.*

They muſt ſuffer none to be drunk, or to have above half a pint of Wine, or to ſit above half an Hour, or after Nine at Night, on penalty of 5 *s.*

If they conceal a Drunkard, or ſend not for the Conſtable, they pay 5 *l.*

Whoever is drunk, pays 3 *s.* 4 *d.* for drinking too much; 2 *s.* 6 *d.* for ſtaying more than half an Hour; and 5 *s.* for ſitting after Nine at Night; to be impriſon'd till he pays, or ſit in the Stocks 3 Hours.

If he abuſes the Conſtable, or ſtrives to Eſcape, he may commit him till he pays, or till Order from the Magiſtrate.

Licens'd Houſes may entertain Travellers or Seafaring Men in the Night.

Private Perſons pay 20 *s.* or ſit in the Stocks for the firſt Offence, in permitting People to tipple in their Houſes;

Houſes; 5 *s.* for the ſecond; to be bound to better Behaviour or committed for the third.

Merchants of Wine to pay 10 *s.* if any drink to Exceſs in their Cellars.

Drunkards forfeit double for the ſecond Offence, and treble for the third; if not able to pay it, they muſt be whipp'd with ten Stripes.

They muſt be committed for the fourth Offence, or find Sureties for their good Behaviour.

Perſons keeping a Publick Houſe, ſhall be diſabled from keeping one for ever, if they offend in this *Point* the third time.

Whatever Victualler is not provided to entertain Strangers Horſes with Stable Room and Attendance, pays 2 *s.* 6 *d.* and double Damages.

Retailers pay 5 *s. per* But of Wine, and 2 *d. per* Quart of Strong Waters to the Country; the Duty to be accounted for, and an account of what the Retailer buys to be given every ſix Months to the Treaſurer, or the Wine is forfeited, half to the Treaſurer and Informer.

They muſt not ſell Wine above 6 *d.* a Quart more than what it coſt them *per* Butt.

The Treaſurer may appoint Officers to collect this Duty, and take it in Wines or other Goods; he is to have 2 *s.* in the pound.

Whoever ſells Drink, except to a Stranger, in Time of a Lecture, pays 5 *s.*

Offences againſt this Law determin'd by one Magiſtrate, who may warrant the Conſtable to levy the Fines.

One Confeſſing, is good Witneſs againſt another.

Conſtables may ſearch for Offenders on Lord's-Days and Lecture-Days; they forfeit 10 *s.* for any Neglect.

Licenſes muſt be renewed every Year, on penalty of 5 *l.*

This does not extend to Vintners under Contract with the Publick.

Perſons diſturbing the Houſe where they drink, pay 5 *s.* if the Maſter ſuffers it, his Licenſe ſhan't be renew'd.

Thoſe who are with them are Guilty, unleſs they teſtify their Diſlike.

Thoſe who are addicted to Tippling, and warn'd by ſelect

ſelect Men not to frequent Taverns, ſhall pay 5 *s.* if found in a publick Houſe.

Keepers of publick Houſes muſt have a Licence, not to entertain ſuch Perſons: if they do, to pay 20 *s.*

Judges. No Perſon is to ſit as Judge in a Cauſe when his Relation is concern'd.

Judgments. If a Judgment or Execution be ſold it is void in Law.

If the Party dyes before he has had Satisfaction, his Executor ſhall renew it.

Judgment confeſs'd before two Magiſtrates is good, the Clerk may receive a Shilling Fee.

If a Perſon whoſe Goods are taken in Execution owns what is not his own, he makes it good, and pays double Damages.

If other Perſon's Goods be ſeiz'd in Execution, they muſt be reſtor'd, and another Execution granted, as if no Goods had been ſeiz'd at all.

Juries. The Clerk in Court muſt ſend a Warrant to Conſtables to ſummon Jurymen, in proportion to the Inhabitants.

He muſt give Notice to the Freemen to chuſe and return thoſe choſen.

None muſt be warn'd from *Salem* to *Ipſwich*, or *Ipſwich* to *Salem*.

In ſpecial Courts Jurymen have 4 *s.* a Day from thoſe who deſir'd that Court.

The Juries at the Court of Aſſiſtants are choſen in *Suffolk* and *Middleſex*.

Jurors ſworn are to find the Fact according to Evidence, the Judge to determine Matter of Equity.

Caſes of Life or Baniſhment try'd in inferior Courts, only by ſpecial Jury.

Grand Juries ſummoned once a Year to preſent Miſdemeanors.

No Juror ſhall diſcover a Crime, when under Tye of Conſcience to the contrary, except the publick would ſuffer, or legal Teſtimony is requir'd.

Every Grand Juryman is to have 3 *s.* a Day out of the Perquiſites of the Court.

The Jury may bring in their Verdict ſpecial, and then the Court determines.

Ju-

Jurors may find in their Verdict as much as they can, if they can't find the main Iſſue.

If the Court and Jury differs, the caſe iſſues in the Court of Aſſiſtants.

They may there bring new Pleas and Evidence.

If the Plaintiff purſues not his Cauſe there, the Defendant is to have Coſts the next County Court.

Any Juror not ſatisfy'd, may openly in Court conſult with any Man.

No Juror is forc'd to ſerve above one ordinary Court in a Year, except ſummoned, in caſes of Life, or Baniſhment.

Grand Juries muſt ſerve two Courts together at leaſt.

Plaintiffs or Defendants not appearing, are nonſuited, and to pay Coſts to him who does appear.

The Parties may agree to try it afterwards, the Plaintiff paying half Fees for a new Entry.

Any preſented by the Grand Jury, or ſummon'd by the Magiſtrate, muſt be proceeded againſt for Contempt, if they don't appear.

In all Civil Caſes the Verdict of the Jury muſt be accepted. But upon apparent corruption, the Party aggriev'd may attaint the Jury, and have Execution reſpited, upon his being bound to proſecute at the next Court of Aſſiſtants, and the Clerk ſummons a new Jury of 24, to try the Action of Attaint.

If they find for the Plaintiff, the former Defendant pays Damages, if corruption be found in the Jurors, the Court fines, or impriſons; if they are acquitted, the Plaintiff pays double Damages, the former Judgment is good, and Execution iſſued.

L.

Lands. All Lands are Freeholds, and ſubject to no Fines upon Alienations, nor Harriots, Wardſhips, Eſcheats, or Forfeitures, on the Death of Parents, or Anceſtors for ever.

Leather. None but Tanners are to tan, on Forfeiture of 6*s.* 8*d.*

Whoever cuts the Hide in fleaing, pays 1*s.* for every cut.

Lea-

Leather badly tann'd is forfeited, if expos'd to Sale.

Tanners having their Fatts in improper Places, or putting Leather in warm Moors, pay 20 *l.*

Curriers not to dreſs Leather badly tann'd, but to curry Leather well, on Forfeiture of the Hide that is prejudic'd.

Every Town muſt appoint Perſons to view the Leather, to ſeal what is good, and ſeize what is otherwiſe.

If the Owner ſubmits not, it is to be view'd by four skilful Perſons, who are to make their Report to the next County Court.

The Officer's Fee for Sealing is 1 *d. per* Hide for Parcels under five, and 6 *d.* for every Dickar above.

If he is not faithful, he forfeits the Value of the Leather.

Fines are paid, a Third to the Shire, a Third to the Town, and a Third to the Seizer.

Liberties. Any Perſon may come into Court, or Council, and move for any thing in a decent Manner.

Every Houſholder has free Fiſhing and Fowling, in any River, Bay, *&c.* within the Precincts of the Town where they dwell, ſo far as the Sea ebbs and flows, unleſs it be appropriated by the Freemen.

No Town to appropriate to one Perſon above ten Acres.

Lands adjoining have the Property to Low-water mark, but no Proprietor to hinder the Paſſage of Boats where the Sea ebbs and flows.

Any may paſs thro' another's Lands, not treſpaſſing on Corn, or Meadow.

Any one may remove himſelf out of the Juriſdiction.

Lying. Whoever publiſhes a Lye to the Prejudice of the publick, or any private Perſon, pays 10 *s.* or ſits in the Stocks two Hours for the firſt Offence, for the ſecond, 20 *s.* or whipp'd ten Stripes, for the third, 40 *s.* or fifteen Stripes; every new Fault increaſes 10 *s.* or five Stripes.

Fines to be levy'd, or Puniſhment inflicted by the Marſhal.

The Offender may appeal to the County Court.

If without Cauſe, he pays double Fine.

Perſons muſt correct their Children or Servants under Age for this Fault before the Officers.

Walk.

M.

Malt. Malt muſt be in good Condition, on Penalty of 1 *s. per* Buſhel.

No Wheat, Barley, Biſcuit, Beef, Flower, to be imported, on Penalty of Confiſcation.

Marſhals and Conſtables may ſeize wherever they find it, and have a fourth Part.

Manſlaughter. If any one ſhall kill another in defending himſelf, or one who attempts to rob, or murder, or break into a Dwelling Houſe, he ſhall be blameleſs.

Manſtealing. Whoever ſteals a Perſon, is to be put to Death.

Marriages. Whoever ſtrikes his Wife, or her Hosband, is fin'd not exceeding 10 *l*, or otherwiſe puniſh'd, as the Court directs.

None are to be marry'd 'till it has been publiſh'd in the Meeting, where they dwell three Times, or affix'd to the Meetinghouſe Doors for 14 Days.

None are to court a Maid, without Conſent of her Parents, 5 *l*. for the firſt Offence, 10 *l*. for the ſecond, Impriſonment for the third, 'till releas'd by the County Court.

Marry'd Perſons muſt live together, unleſs the Court of Aſſiſtants approve of the Cauſe to the contrary.

None are to marry Perſons but the Magiſtrate.

None may marry the Siſter of a former Wife.

Marſhals. Every Court ſhall have a Marſhal to execute Writs, Summons, *&c.* and to levy Goods by Warrant, which he is to deliver to the Plaintiff, or make him Satisfaction.

Executions muſt be return'd to the Clerk that granted them, with an Account, and if the Plaintiff is not ſatisfy'd, the Clerk may grant Execution for what remains.

The Marſhal is to ſerve and return Attachments, to levy Fines by Warrant, or to pay 2 *s. per* Pound for what is not collected or return'd.

He is to be no Clerk nor Recorder.

His

His Fees are for Fines, 1 *s. per* Pound, for Attachments within a Mile 1 *s.* 3 *d.* for Executions 1 *s. per* Pound, for Sums under 10 *l*; 6 *d. per* Pound more, for all under 40 *l*; 3 *d.* more, for all under 100 *l*; 1 *d.* more, for all above, out of the Eſtate of the Defendant.

If his Fees anſwer not his travelling Charges, he has 6 *d. per* Mile.

He is to pay to the Marſhal-General 3 *d.* in 15 *d.* of Attachments, and 3 *d.* in 12 *d.* of Executions, who is alſo to have 2 *d. per* Quart of ſtrong Waters retail'd, the Benefit of importing them, and 50 *s.* of thoſe who ſell them without Licenſe, if he informs.

The Marſhal in levying Fines, *&c.* may after demand, break Doors, Locks, *&c.* and require Aſſiſtance.

He may levy Fines for whatever extraordinary Charges he is at.

He muſt not ſeize Bedding, Apparel, Tools, Arms, or what's neceſſary to Life.

No Officer is oblig'd to ſearch for any Man's Eſtate, but at the Place of Abode, he may take the Perſon, if he will not direct him to his Goods.

If he does any one an Injury, he may be ſu'd.

Maſters, Servants. Servants can't ſell any thing without Licence.

Workmen muſt work the whole Day; Time to be allow'd for Food and Reſt; the Freemen may ſettle the Rates of Labour and Time, and Men muſt work according to ſuch Rules.

If any Difference ariſe about it between Towns, the County Court decides it.

Servants running away may be brought back again by Force.

Wages may be paid in Corn, valued by two Freemen choſen; if theſe don't agree, the Magiſtrate or Conſtable chuſes a Third, who decides it.

Whoever flies from a cruel Maſter to a Freeman, may be harbour'd, giving Notice to the Maſter and Magiſtrate.

None are to be turn'd over for above a Year, but by Conſent of ſome Court.

If a Servant is hurt he goes free, and the Maſter recompences as the Court determines.

Faith-

Faithful Servants not to be ſent away empty, unfaithful not unpuniſh'd.

Militia. The Militia is commanded by a Major-General, that of *Suffolk*, *Middleſex* and *Eſſex* by the Serjeant-Major of each, that of *Norfolk* by the Major of *Eſſex*.

The Serjeant-majors are choſen by the Freemen and Houſholders, by a Warrant from the Major-General.

They muſt exerciſe their Regiments once in three Years, and have 20 *l.* for it out of the Treaſury.

They may fine and levy upon Delinquents, with Conſent of their Officers.

Houſholders and Freemen choſe the Officers, to be confirm'd by the County Court.

Towns chargeable with 64 Soldiers ſhall chuſe all Officers, and form a Company, others only Serjeants and Corporals, the Major joyning ſmall Towns into a Company.

Officers muſt have their Commiſſion from the General Court, and take Care of the Equipage of their Companies, and exerciſe them ſix Times a Year, and puniſh Diſorders corporally, or by Fine, under 20 *s.*

Soldiers and all Inhabitants are to be furniſh'd with Arms, on Penalty of 20 *s.* and Males above ſixteen to attend Exerciſes, on Penalty of 5 *s.* except Magiſtrates, Deputies, Officers of Court, Elders and Deacons, thoſe of *Harvard*-College, School-maſters, Phyſicians and Surgeons, Treaſurers, Surveyors-General, publick Notary, Maſters of Ships above 20 Ton, Fiſhermen at fiſhing Seaſons, conſtant Herdſmen, one Servant of a Magiſtrate and teaching Elder, the Sons and Servants of the Major General, and thoſe who are infirm.

The Clerk of every Company muſt keep a Liſt, take Notice of Offenders, view Arms and Ammunition twice a Year, and give an Account to the Captains, and levy Fines, and lay them out for Trophies, Colours, Drums, Halberds, or Arms and Ammunition for the poorer Sort.

A Committee ſhall have Power in every Town to appoint a Watch.

The Committee of *Boſton*, *Charles-Town*, *Salem* and *Ipſwich* conſiſts of the chief Officer of Horſe, and a chief Officer of every Company of Foot.

Every

Every Committee is requir'd to give Notice of every Alarm to the Magiſtrate and Major.

On the Major's Death, the oldeſt Captain ſucceeds till Orders from the Superior.

Commiſſions take their Seniority from that of the Town they ſerve for, except thoſe of *Boſton*, who have their Seniority from the Date of their Commiſſions.

Commiſſioners of Militia alone, are to Impreſs Soldiers, and take care of Fortifications and Artillery.

Watches are ſet half an Hour after Sun-ſet; and none to fire a Gun afterwards, on penalty of 40*s.*

They may detain any they ſuſpect till Morning.

If any reſiſt a Centinel in time of War, he may fire on him, and give the Alarm.

Smiths are to repair Arms brought to them immediately, in Time of War; and within 10 Days in Time of Peace, on penalty of 10*s.*

Every Town muſt have a Magazine, on penalty of 10*s.*

The ſelect Men muſt provide a Quintal of Powder, a Quintal and half of Muſket-Ball, and 28 pound of Match to every 50 Men, and renew it, on penalty of five pound.

The Horſe are commanded by the Majors of the Counties, and every Company chuſe their Officers.

Every Trooper is to have a good Horſe, with Furniture, on penalty of 10*s.* and not to change it, or diſband himſelf without Leave, under penalty of a Fine not exceeding 50*s.* at the Diſcretion of the Officer.

He muſt attend ſix Days Exerciſe every Year, or pay 5*s.* on every Default.

The Clerk of the Troop has the ſame Employment with him of a Company, only he is to have Marſhal's Fees for Travelling, and to levy no Fines within a Month after default.

In caſe of Alarm, all muſt repair to the Guard, or pay 5 pound.

None ſhall be liſted a Trooper, that is not rated 100*l.* in a ſingle Rate, or his Children.

Diſobedience of Orders puniſh'd as uſual, at the Diſcretion of the Officer.

All Perſons liable to ſerve in Conſtable's Watches, are ſo in Military.

Officers to obey the Major General.

All liſted in the Militia or extraordinary Troops, are ſubject to *Marſhal Laws*.

Majors or Officers may march out of their County to annoy the Enemy; tho' not elſe; the chief Officer of a Place to be defended, is to command thoſe poſted in it, unleſs the Major is preſent, or the General Court or Council order it otherwiſe.

The Commiſſioners of War are not to paſs a Debenture of the Time a Man has ſerv'd, without a Note of the Committee whence he came, certifying whether the Arms were his own, or are return'd.

If a Man is ſlain, the Certificate of a Captain will do.

The Committees may fortify their Towns, and appoint Garriſons, and oblige the Inhabitants to work, on penalty of 5 *s. per* Day.

They may diſpoſe of or augment their Magazines, and aſſeſs the Town for it.

Fines not levy'd within a Month by the Clerk may be levy'd by the Marſhal on the Clerk himſelf for the Captain.

The Clerk is to account for all Fines with the Captain in ſix Weeks.

Millers. Millers muſt weigh all Corn, and take a 16th part for grinding.

Mines. Whoever diſcovers a Mine in this Juriſdiction, enjoys the Profits thereof, with a fit Proportion of 21 Years; he may buy the Intereſt of *Indians* in the Land where 'tis, but not enter on another's Property.

If he diſcovers it in his own Land, 'tis his own for ever, except a fifth of the Oar.

Miniſters. Every Town muſt chuſe a Miniſter, and pay him according to Agreement; if not the Juſtices may rate them according to their Ability.

If they are without one ſix Months, the Quarter-Seſſion gives them three Months to ſupply themſelves.

If they ſtill neglect it, they chuſe for them, and oblige them to pay him.

Every Town having 50 Houſe-holders, ſhall provide a School-maſter to teach to write and read; if it have 100, it ſhall have a Grammar-School, the ſelect Men to ſee them paid; whatever Town neglects it, pays 10 *l.*

Every

Every gather'd Church ſhall chuſe its Miniſter, and if the major part of the Inhabitants concur with the Church's Act, he ſhall be maintain'd by the Town.

The Town of *Boſton* was left by this Act to their own Cuſtoms.

Where no Church is gather'd, the rateable Inhabitants chuſe, with the Advice of three neighbouring Miniſters, giving 15 Day Notice.

If any refuſe to pay his proportion, he is fin'd by the Quarter-Seſſion, 40 *s.* for the firſt Offence, and 4 *l.* for every other.

If the Majority of the Inhabitants refuſe a Miniſter choſen by the Church, the Elders and Meſſengers of three or five Neighbouring Churches are call'd; if they approve of him, he is the Miniſter of the Town, and muſt be maintain'd.

Thoſe who voted as Church-members, may alſo vote as Inhabitants.

A Town neglecting a School, pays 20 *s.* every Maſter muſt be approv'd by the Miniſter, or two neighbouring Miniſters.

No Miniſter is to be a School-maſter.

The Quarter-Seſſions may appoint Men to aſſeſs and raiſe what is due to the Miniſter by Contract or Allowance ſettled by them, the Inhabitants to name the Aſſeſſor.

But if they won't act, the ſelect Men muſt.

Money. No Coin to be current, except *Engliſh*, or coin'd here of Silver of the Alloy of *Engliſh* Money, 2 *d. per* Shilling leſs Value than *Engliſh* Money.

Officers of the Mint are to have One Shilling in Twenty, every Shilling to weigh 3 Drams *Troy Weight*; other Pieces in the ſame proportion.

No one to carry more than 20 *s.* out of the Country, on penalty of the whole of his Eſtate, a Third to the Informer.

Monopolies. No Monopolies but of profitable Inventions, and for a ſhort Time.

Murder. Wilful Murder is puniſh'd with Death.

O.

Oaths, Subscriptions. No Oaths or Subscriptions are to be impos'd, but those appointed by the General Court.

The County Court, or any Magistrate out of Cavit, is authoriz'd to require an Oath of Fidelity of all Inhabitants who have not taken it, and of Strangers after two Months Abode; if they refuse, they forfeit 5 *s.* for every Week, or must give Security for their Fidelity.

P.

Payments. All Contracts must be paid in the Specie bargain'd for.

Petitions. All Petitions to the General Court, on common Occasions, pay 2 *s.* 6 *d.* to the Clerk on Delivery.

Petitions for Abatement of Fines, Mitigation of Penalty, Gratuities, Debts, Controversies, 10 *s.*

Petitions of Magistrates or Deputies either for themselves or the Country exempted. The Clerks discount what is paid to them for Petitions in their Salary.

None are to be presented to the General Court, after four Days of the Court of Elections, or the first Week of other Sessions.

Pipe-staves. The select Men are to view Pipe-staves before shipp'd, and to throw by those that are any way defective, and to have 2 *s. per* Thousand.

Those offer'd to be shipp'd unsearch'd, are forfeited.

Masters taking such on Board, pay 5 *l.*

Refuse-staves may be sold or shipp'd, if as such, and not as merchantable.

Poor. The County Court, or two Magistrates, determine about Provision for the *Poor*, with an Appeal to the Court of Assistants.

Three Months Residence is a Settlement, except the select Men warn them away, and complain to the County Court, if they stay.

Porters.

Porters. The ſelect Men appoint *Porters*, and adjuſt their Wages.

Poſſeſſion. Poſſeſſion for five Years gives a Property.

Pound Breach. Every Village or Town muſt maintain a Pound.

Whoever impounds a Beaſt, muſt give Notice to the Owner, or cry them at the two next Markets or Lectures, and the Owner muſt pay Damages, tho' the Cattle eſcape.

Reſcuing Cattle going to pound, is fin'd 40 *s.* breaking the pound 5 *s.* to anſwer all Harm done, and to be whipp'd, if not able to make Satisfaction.

Powder. The Captain of the Caſtle is to notify to all Maſters coming into the Bay, and the Conſtables to thoſe coming into other Ports, that they are to give an account of the Ammunition they bring to the Notary within a Month, with the Names of the Perſons to whom it is conſign'd, on penalty of 5 *l.*

No Gun-powder to be exported, without Licenſe, on penalty of Forfeiture.

The County Court may appoint Searchers to prevent it.

The Undertakers of the Powder-mill may have a Warrant to impreſs Men for publick Work.

Priſons. Malefactors are to be convey'd to *Priſon* at their own Charge, if they are able to bear it.

The County Court is to appoint a Houſe of Correction in every County, and a Maſter for it.

The ſelect Men are to provide Materials for Work, the Profit is the Maſter's, he allowing to the Offenders mean Food, or half what they earn.

Every one muſt be whipp'd at his Entrance, under 10 Stripes, and then employ'd by Task till diſcharg'd.

If they won't work, the Maſter muſt correct and abridge them of Food, and not diſcharge them without Warrant.

Whoever helps a Priſoner to eſcape, ſhall anſwer for him; and ſuffer beſides, as the Court determines.

The Goaler is to ſuffer what the Priſoner deſerv'd, if he eſcapes thro' his Neglect.

Goalers muſt give to the Courts from time to time true Liſts of their Priſoners.

The Courts determine what they are to be paid for their Maintenance, and by whom.

The Plaintiff in Civil Cauſes muſt give Security for Food and Phyſick, or the Priſoner ſwearing he is not worth 5 *l.* may be diſmiſs'd.

The ordinary Allowance is 2 *s.* 6 *d. per* Week for each Priſoner.

Proteſtation. Whoever diſſents from the Majority of the Court, may have his Proteſt enter'd, but without Reaſons.

Puniſhment. None to be twice puniſh'd for one Offence.

Corporal Puniſhments not to be Inhumane.

None to be whipp'd who can pay Fines, except the Caſe is extraordinary, and his Life ſcandalous.

None to be rack'd, unleſs it appears there are Confederates, and he won't diſcover them.

R.

Rape. Rapes are puniſh'd with Death, or ſome grievous Puniſhment the Court appoints inſtead of it.

Whoever has Carnal Knowledge of a Child under 10 Years of Age, ſuffers Death.

Records. All Judgments are to be recorded, and Evidences kept.

The Jury muſt deliver up the Writings committed to them when they give their Verdict.

Clerks of the Writs in every Town muſt record Births and Burials, and return a Copy to the Recorder of the County Court, paying a Penny for every Birth or Burial.

All Parents, or Maſters, or Executors, muſt notify to the Clerk every Birth or Death, and pay 3 *d.*

Every married Man ſhall notify to him his Marriage, under the Hand of the Magiſtrate who married him, and be enter'd paying 3 *d.* this alſo to be return'd as the other; Perſons not doing this, pay 1 *s.*

Clerks

Clerks not making their Annual return, pay 5 *l.* and 5 *s.* for omitting any particular Perſon.

Any Man may record Teſtimonies before two Magiſtrates, Deeds, or Evidence legally confirmed.

Any one may ſearch Records, or have Exemplifications.

Whoever defaces Records, pays treble Damages, and ſuffers otherwiſe, as the Court thinks fit.

Replevin. Perſons may replevy their Goods, except upon Execution or Fine, giving Security to proſecute the Replevin, and anſwer what ſhall be recover'd at Law.

S.

Sabbath. Whoever profanes the Sabbath after Admonition, pays for the firſt Offence 5 *s.* for the ſecond 10 *s.* to be bound over to the County Court for the third; Governours of Youth under ſeven Years to ſuffer for them.

Drinking or ſporting on Saturdays after Su n pays 5 *s.* Perſons refuſing to pay, muſt ſuffer Corporal Puniſhment, as the Court determines.

No Work to be done on the Sabbath, on Penalty of 10 *s.* for the firſt Offence, to be doubled for every following one.

To travel to a Meeting not allow'd by Law, is a Profanation of the Sabbath.

Sailors. No Retailer can recover Money of a Sailor, due for ſtrong Liquors.

Salt. Salt muſt be meaſured by an Officer in every Maritime Town, who is to have 17 *d. per* Hogſhead.

Seal. The Governour or Deputy muſt affix the publick Seal to all Commiſſions or publick Writings, without Fee.

The Secretary muſt write and get it ſeal'd for 1 *s.*

Self-murther. All Self-murtherers muſt be buried in the High-way, with a Load of Stones on their Grave.

Schools, See **Miniſters.**

Sheep. Any Man may keep what Sheep he pleaſes on a Common not ſtinted, belonging to the Town where

he lives, on a Common ſtinted, he may uſe his Share, accounting five Sheep to a Cow.

The ſelect Men are to clear the Commons of Bruſh and Wood, and to ſet the Fines for putting Rams to the Flock.

Whoever moleſts Sheep, pays 5 *s.* and double Damages.

If a Dog kills or hurts Sheep, the Owner muſt hang him, or pay double Damages; if after Warning, he muſt do both.

Sheep muſt be waſh'd, and not put into dirty or ſandy Ground between that and ſheering, on penalty of 1 *s. per* Sheep.

No ſhort Locks or Lumps of Dirt or coarſe Tails to be wound in the Fleeces, on Penalty of 1 *s.*

Ship. The Owner or Builder of any new Ship muſt give Notice of it to the Governour, or his Deputy, or any two Magiſtrates before they plank, that Officers may view it, on penalty of 10 *l.*

The Surveyors may cauſe bad Materials to be chang'd; if the Builder and they differ, two Shipwrights ſwearing to be Faithful, muſt determine it, and be paid by him in Fault.

No Health to be drank on Board any Ship in Harbour, or Gun to be fir'd after Sunſet, or on the Sabbath, on penalty of 20 *s.* for every Health or Gun.

All Ships above 20 Tun, except thoſe whoſe Owners are Inhabitants, pay half a pound of Gun-powder for every Ton.

No Perſons are to trade with any Ship till it comes to Anchor, and under command.

Spinning. All Hands not employ'd, are oblig'd to ſpin.

The ſelect Men may aſſeſs Families at one fourth, half or whole Spinner, or more.

Every whole Spinner is to ſpin 3 pound *per* Week of Wollen, Cotton, or Linnen, for 30 Weeks in a Year, on penalty of 1 *s. per* pound ſhort.

Sodomy. Sodomy is puniſh'd with Death, if one of the Parties was forc'd, or under 14, ſhall not die, but be ſeverely puniſh'd.

Strangers. Chriſtian Strangers flying from Tyranny and Oppreſſion to be maintain'd by the publick 'till otherwiſe provided for.

Men-

Men-Strangers upon their Arrival are to give an Account of themſelves before the Governour, or his Deputy, or two Magiſtrates, and to have the Benefit of, and to be ſubject to the Laws, as well as the Inhabitants.

None to be entertain'd above three Weeks without Licence, if the Conſtables know they are, they muſt return their Names to the County Court.

Strayers. Beaſts taken up ſtraying muſt be given to the Conſtable, and cry'd three Times, if worth 20 *s.* at the two next Markets, or meeting Houſes.

If the Finder gives no Notice in a Month, or records not the Goods found in three Months in the County Court, he forfeits the Value.

The Owner may claim in a Year, paying Charges, if no Claim be made, the Goods are half to the Finder, and half to the Country.

If they put not a Whith about the Neck of the Beaſt found ſtraying for a Month, they loſe the Charges of taking and keeping; if it be taken off by the Owner, he loſes the Value to the Finder.

No Beaſt is to be taken up as ſtraying, from the firſt of *April* to the 20th of *December*, unleſs it treſpaſs in Incloſures.

Sureties. Sureties for Appearance ſhall not be diſcharg'd 'till the Principal be ſurrendred, or the Execution ſatisfied, unleſs it be delay'd above a Month after Judgment.

Goods attached are held 'till Judgment is ſatisfied.

If Bond for Appearance is forfeited, the Court proceeds to Hearing and Judgment, and if the Plaintiff have a Verdict, Judgment is granted, and Execution iſſued againſt Defendants and Sureties.

Swearing. Whoever curſes or ſwears, pays 10 *s.* or ſits in the Stocks, if more than once, the Penalty is doubled.

Any Magiſtrate may determine this Cauſe.

Swine. The ſelect Men are to ſettle Orders, to prevent Miſchief by Swine, or to pay 40 *s.*

Satisfaction is to be made for the Damage they do, if the Fences were as the ſelect Men order'd.

If impounded, and not own'd for three Days, he may give three Days Notice to the two next Towns,

if

if within five miles, and ſell them by Outcry, or have them apprais'd, and keep them.

If the Owner appears, he may have the Overplus after Charges and Damages are defray'd.

T.

Tile-Earth. Tile-Earth muſt be dug before *November*, and turn'd once a month, on Penalty of half the Tiles made of that Earth.

Tobacco. None to ſmoak ſo near to a Houſe, Barn, *&c.* as to endanger firing it, on Penalty of 10 *l.* and Damages, if they happen.

None to ſmoke in a publick Houſe, ſo as to offend the maſter or gueſts, on Penalty of 2 *s.* 6 *d.*

Tolling of Cattle. All Cattle tolled muſt be tolled in the Clerk of the Writs Book, at 3 *s.* a Head, at the Peril of the Buyer.

The Seller enters his Name with two Vouchers, who are to make good the Damage, if the Cattle are challeng'd.

Any one who has loſt Cattle, may ſearch the Toll-Book without Charge.

Township. The Freemen may make Laws for their Town, except in Criminal Caſes, and impoſe Fines under 20 *s.* and chuſe their ſelect men, not exceeding 9.

Any Houſholder aged 24, rated at 8 *l.* Eſtate, having taken the Oaths to the Government, may be a ſelect man, Juror, or Conſtable, though not free, provided the majority of ſelect men are ſo.

Every Town may fine one refuſing to ſerve as Conſtable 5 *l.* the Town of *Boſton* 10 *l.*

No Cottage or Dwelling-Houſe to be admitted to the Privilege of Common, but by the Towns Conſent.

Conſtables muſt ſerve the Warrants of the ſelect men, and levy their Fines.

Treaſurers. The County Treaſurer muſt keep exact Accounts, and not make any Payment to any indebted to the Country, without deducting the Debt.

All Fines ariſing in County Courts, or order'd by one Magiſtrate or Commiſſioner in Criminal Caſes are paid to him, the Treaſurer is choſen annually by the Freemen.

The

The Secretaries of Courts ſhall give an Account of all Dues coming to them within 14 Days after the Court ends, who is to warrant the Conſtable to levy them within a Week.

He is to give in his Account to the General Court every Year, and to have 1 *s. per* Pound for all Fines, and to be free from all Rates.

If he has not enough to defray publick Expences, the County Court muſt rate the County for the Deficiency.

He is to preſent the Names of negligent Conſtables to the County Court.

Tryals. All Tryals are by Bench and Jury, unleſs where the Law has order'd it otherwiſe.

An Offender may challenge any of his Jury, with ſhewing Cauſe.

Children and Ideots to have all reaſonable Allowances.

V.

Vagabonds. Vagabonds are to be carried before the Magiſtrate, and corrected, and ſent from Conſtable to Conſtable, 'till they come home, if they won't tell their Home, they go to the Houſe of Correction.

Votes. Every Freeman call'd to vote, may do it according to his Conſcience; if he is ſilent, he muſt be deem'd as a Negative.

If the Preſident of any Aſſembly will not put the Queſtion, the majority may, and puniſh him for refuſing.

Uſury. No man ſhall be adjudg'd for Forbearance of a Debt above 8 *per Cent. per Annum*, Bills of Exchange excepted.

W.

Watching. The Conſtable's Watch begins the firſt of *May*, and continues 'till *October*.

It muſt conſiſt of able men, and be order'd by the Conſtable, unleſs the ſelect men appoint otherwiſe.

All warn'd upon the Watch muſt ſerve, or pay 5 *s.* except remote Farmers, Magiſtrates, Deputies, Elders of Churches, Officers of the Country, or Militia.

The Watch muſt examine all in the Streets after 10, and ſecure them 'till morning, if they don't give a good Account of themſelves.

If

If any are found in Debauchery or Drunkeneſs, they are kept till the Law is ſatisfied.

Weights and Meaſures. The Treaſurer muſt provide, at the County's Charge, ſeal'd Meaſures and braſs Weights and Standards.

The Conſtable of every Town muſt get a Set try'd by theſe, and ſealed by the Treaſurer, or his Deputy.

He is to deliver them to the ſelect men; who are to chuſe an Officer to be ſworn in the next County Court, to whom all the Inhabitants are to bring their Weights and Meaſures to have them try'd, and ſeal'd the ſecond month in every Year.

The Conſtable, ſelect Men or Sealer pay 40 *s.* if they neglect their Duty, the Inhabitants 3 *s.* 4 *d.*

The ſelect Men muſt appoint one to be ſworn for meaſuring Corn, Wood, or Boards.

None are obliged to receive theſe Commodities, unleſs meaſur'd by him.

Wharfage. Goods are to pay Wharfage according to ſettled Rates, only where the Wharfs are made and maintain'd.

Weighty Goods muſt be ſet on End, or 7 Foot from the ſide, on Penalty of double Wharfage, none to lye on the Wharf above 48 Hours.

The Wharfinger may take his Wharfage out of the Goods, if not otherwiſe paid.

None to caſt Anchor, or do any thing elſe in, or near the *Cove* at *Boſton*, that may endanger other Veſſels, on Penalty of 10 *s.* beſides Damages.

None to caſt into the *Cove* any thing to fill it up, or annoy the Inhabitants, on Penalty of 40 *s.*

Wills. Wills muſt be recorded in the County Court, or Adminiſtration taken out within 30 Days after Demiſe.

Whoever enters upon, or embezzels the Eſtate of the Deceas'd, before he proves, and records the Will of the Deceas'd, or takes out Adminiſtration, pays all Debts of the Deceas'd, whether Aſſuits be prov'd, or not, and 5 *l. per* Month, 'till the Will is prov'd, or Adminiſtration taken out.

If an Executor refuſe to act, or Friends refuſe to adminiſter, the Clerk of the Writs in the Town, notifies it to the County Court, on Penalty of 40 *s. per* Month, and the Court takes Care of the Eſtate. Two

Two Magiſtrates with the Clerk of the County may take a Probate of Wills atteſted by two Witneſſes, or grant Adminiſtration, giving Notice of, and recording it in the next County Court.

The County Court divides the Eſtate of an Inteſtate among the Wife and Children; Daughters are to be Coheirs, and eldeſt Sons to have a double Portion.

Witches. Witches ſuffer Death.

Witneſſes. None to die but by two Evidences, *Viva Voce*.

Any Magiſtrate or Commiſſioner may take Evidence from one above 14, but it is not good in Court, unleſs the Perſon is preſent to be farther examin'd, except he live above 10 miles off, or is hindred by ſufficient Cauſe.

He who ſummons Witneſſes muſt pay their Charges, 2 *s. per* Day to thoſe 3 miles diſtant, and who are to paſs a Ferry, except that between *Charles-Town* and *Boſton*; 18 *d.* to others.

Whoever on the Tender of this refuſes to give in Evidence, pays the Party's Damages.

Witneſſes in Criminal Caſes are paid by the Treaſurers, and theſe by the Delinquents.

Wolves. Whoever kills a Wolf within 10 miles of a Plantation, contributing to the publick Charge, has 40 *s.*; 20 *s.* from the County, 10 *s.* from the Country, and 10 *s.* from the Town.

Wood. Wood brought by Water is aſſiz'd, at the Rate of three Load *per* 4 Ton.

Cordwood muſt be 8 Foot long, 4 high, and 4 broad, 1647.

Worſhip falſe. Idolatry is puniſh'd with Death after legal Conviction.

Wrecks. If any ſuffer Shipwreck, whether Friends or Enemies, their Perſons are to be harbour'd, and their Goods preſerv'd 'till farther Orders.

Whales, or other ſuch Fiſh driven on Shore, if they can't be kept ſhall be improv'd by the Townſhip, or Owners of the Land where they come on Shore, and an Account given to the next General Court.

Writs. All Writs, *&c.* are iſſued, and proceeded upon in the Name of the King, or Queen of *England*.

NUMB. V.

A List of the Council *and* General Assembly *of the Province of the* Massachuset-Bay *for the Year* 1719.

WEDNESDAY the 27th of *May*, being the Anniversary Day appointed by the Royal Charter for chusing His Majesty's Council of this Province; the Great and General Court or Assembly elected the following Gentlemen for the ensuing Year; and all that were present being sworn, took their Places at the Board, having been first approved by His Excellency.

SAMUEL SHUTE, Esq; Governour.

MEMBERS of the COUNCIL.

Those that have this (*) Mark, are new ones.

Wm. Dummer, Esq; L.G.
Samuel Sewall, Esq;
Penn Townsend, Esq;
John Appleton, Esq;
Nathaniel Byfield, Esq;
John Higginson, Esq;
Samuel Partridge, Esq;
Edward Bromfield, Esq;
Isaac Winslow, Esq;
Nathaniel Paine, Esq;
John Cushing, Esq;
Nathaniel Norden, Esq;
John Otis, Esq;
John Wheelwright, Esq;
William Tailer, Esq;
Benjamin Lynde, Esq;
Addington Davenport, Esq;
Thomas Hutchinson, Esq;
John Clark, Esq;
Samuel Brown, Esq;
Thomas Fitch, Esq;
Edmund Quincey, Esq;
Jonathan Belcher, Esq;
Jonathan Dows, Esq;
Joseph Hammond, Esq;
Paul Dudley, Esq;
* *Samuel Thaxter*, Esq;
* *Charles Frost*, Esq;

In all 28.

The Members of the House of *Representatives* for the several Towns, are as follow. Those that have this (*) Mark, are New ones.

Boston, * Elisha. Cooke *Esq*; * Oliver Noyes *Esq*; *Mr.* Isaiah Tay * *Mr.* Willm. Clark
Roxbury, Willm. Dudley *Esq*;
Dorchester, *Major* Thomas Tilestone
Hingham, *Col.* Sam. Thaxter
Braintrey, * *Major* John Quincey.
Dedham, * *Capt.* Sam. Guild
Medfield, *Mr.* Henry Adams
Weymouth, * *Mr.* John Torrey.
Milton,

Milton, *Mr.* Ephr. Tucker
Wrentham, * *Mr.* Thomas Bacon.
Mendon, Joſiah Chapin *Eſq*
Brooklin, ———
Woodſtock, * *Mr.* Sam. Paine
Needham, ———
Salem, { *Mr.* Tim. Lindal; * *Capt.* John Gardener
Ipſwich, { *Capt.* Matthew Whipple; * *Mr.* Michael Farley
Lynn, John Burril, *Eſq*, *Speaker*
Newbury, { *Capt.* Richard Kent; * *Mr.* Nathan. Coffin.
Marblehead, John Cawley *Eſq*;
Andover, * *Mr.* Nehemiah Abbot
Bradford, * *Mr.* Thomas Kimbal
Beverley, * *Mr.* Samuel Balch
Wenham, *Mr.* William Rogers
Rowley, *Mr.* Joſeph Jewet
Salisbury, *Captain* John Wadleigh
Haverhill, * John White, *Eſq*
Amesbury, * *Mr.* Joſ. Brown
Gloceſter, *Captain* Nathaniel Coit
Topsfield, * *Mr.* James Perkins
Boxford, *Mr.* Tho. Pearley
Mancheſter, ———
Cambridge, * *Mr.* Andrew Bordman
Charles-Town, { Charles Chambers *Eſq*; John Foye, *Eſq*
Watertown, *Mr.* Samuel Stearns
Newton, * *Mr.* Ebenezar Stone
Concord, * *Mr.* Benjamin Whittemore
Woburn, * *Mr.* Samuel Walker
Reading, * *Mr.* John Brown
Sudbury, * *Mr.* Peter Haynes
Marlborough, Thomas How *Eſq*;
Malden, *Mr.* Jacob Wilſon
Chelmsford, * *Mr.* Stephen Pierce
Billerica, * Oliver Whiting *Eſq*;
Sherburn, * *Mr.* William Rider
Grotton, *Capt.* John Shipley
Lancaſter, *Mr.* John Houghton
Framingham, Joſ. Buckminſter *Eſq*;
Medford, * *Mr.* Thomas Willis
Lexington, * *Mr.* Thomas Blegget
Weſton, Francis Fullam *Eſq*;
Stow, ———
Springfield, Luke Hitchcock *Eſq*;
Northampton, John Stoddard *Eſq*;
Hadley, * *Mr.* John Naſh
Hatfield, *Mr.* John Dickinſon
Suffield, *Mr.* John Auſtin
Weſtfield, * John Aſhley *Eſq*;

En-

Enfield, ——————
Deerfield, *Mr.* Thomas Wells
Brookfield, * *Capt.* Tho. Baker
Plymouth, * *Mr.* John Foſter
Scituate, * *Mr.* John Barker
Bridgwater, *Mr.* Richard Davenport
Marſhfield, Iſaac Little *Eſq*;
Duxbury, * *Mr.* Samuel Scaberry
Rocheſter, *Mr.* John Hammond
Pembrook, * *Capt.* Thomas Barker
Plympton, * *Mr.* Benoni Lucas
Middleborough, * *Capt.* Ja. Thompſon
Barnſtable, * Joſ. Lowthorp *Eſq*;
Eaſtham, *Mr.* John Paine
Sandwich, * *Mr.* John Chipman
Yarmouth, * *Mr.* John Hedge
Harwich, * *Mr.* William Mirrick
Truro, * Thomas Paine *Eſq*;
Briſtol, *Captain* William Throop
Taunton, * Seth Williams *Eſq*;
Dartmouth, *Mr.* Jonathan Delano
Rehoboth, * *Mr.* Daniel Carpenter,
Little Compt. Tho. Church *Eſq*;
Swanzey, * *Mr.* John Thomas
Tiverton, *Mr.* Gerſhom Woodel
Attleborough, * *Mr.* Jerem. Whipple
Dighton, * *Mr.* Ebenezar Pitts
Norton, * *Mr.* Nicholas White
Barington, * *Mr.* Zechariah Bicknel
Freetown, * *Mr.* Samuel Forman
York, * Abraham Prebble *Eſq*;
Kittery, * Charles Froſt *Eſq*;
Wells, *Capt.* Joſeph Hill
Falmouth, * *Mr.* William Scales
Berwick, * *Captain* Samuel Plaiſted
Biddiford, * *Mr.* Humphrey Scammon
Edgar-Town, *Mr.* John Norton
Chilmark, *Tisbury*, } Pain Mahew *Eſq*
Nantucket, George Bunker *Eſq*;

In all 103.

The Repreſentatives of *Hingham* and *Kittery* being choſen of His Majeſty's Council, Writs are iſſued forth to elect two others in their Room.

FINIS.

INDEX.

BRITISH MUSEUM

INDEX.

A.

ACADIA deſcrib'd, 452. Taken by Sir *William Phips*, 458.

Adventurers in *England* diſcourag'd from Trading with the *Planters*, 109. They ſell their Shares in the Plantation, 110.

Afflicted. Vid. Witchcrafts.

Aldin, (Capt. *John*) his Examination for Witchcraft, 524. Eſcapes out of the Province, 527. Surrenders himſelf, and is acquitted, *ib.*

Alexander Sachem of the *Wompanoags* ſurprized, and carried Priſoner to *Plimouth*, 335.

America. Conjectures of learned Men about its firſt Inhabitants, 1. Diſcovered by *Columbus*, 10. Several Voyages of the *Engliſh* to the Northern Parts of it, 13.

Amidas, (Capt. *Philip*) his firſt Voyage to North *America*, 13.

Anabaptiſts ſeparate from the *New-England* Churches, 278. Their Sufferings, 279. A Law made againſt them, 284. A Letter of the Diſſenting Miniſters of *London*, in their Favour, 354. A villainous Contrivance to render them odious, 356. Character of the preſent *Anabaptiſts* of *Boſton*, 589.

Andros (Sr. *Edmund*) Governor of *New-England*, 420. Marches againſt the *Indians* with an Army of 1000 Men, 427. Is depoſed, and ſent Priſoner to *England*, 432. His Male-Adminiſtration, 433.

Annapolis Royal deſcribed, 577. Surrender'd to the *Engliſh* by the Treaty

a of

of *Utrecht*, *ib.*

Antecoſta, a deſolate Iſland, on which Capt. *Rainsford* and his Crew being Shipwreck'd, liv'd a whole Winter, 465.

Antinomians, their Riſe in *N. England*, 165. Their turbulent Behaviour towards the Government, 170. They are condemn'd by a Synod, 172. And their Leaders baniſh'd, 175.

Apology for the Behaviour of the Magiſtrates of *New-England* towards the Quakers, 322.

Aſſembly General of the *Maſſachuſet* Bay, their Number, and Powers, 605.

Avery (Rev. Mr.) loſt by Shipwreck, 145.

B.

Bancroft, (A. Biſhop) his Conduct towards the Puritans, 71.

Baptiſm, Determinations of a Synod about the Subjects of it, 336.

Barrow (Henry) his Account of the Sufferings of the *Browniſts*, 64. His Sufferings and Death, 67.

Baſtwick (Dr.) his Sufferings, 150.

Bay of the *Maſſachuſets* deſcrib'd, 585. Of *Boſton*, 587.

Beaſts of *New-England*, an Account of ſome of them, 573.

Bellamont (Earl of) Governor of *New-England*, 561. But reſides at *New-York*, 562.

Bellingham (Mr. *Rich.*) his Death and Character, 373.

Bible tranſlated into the *Indian* Tongue, 239.

Biſhop (Bridget) her Tryal for Witchcraft, 506. Her Death and Character, 513.

Boſton built, 134. Its Situation, 585. Deſcrib'd, 587. Number of Inhabitants in it, 588. And of Churches, *ib.*

Bradford (Mr. *William*) choſen Governor of *Plimouth* Colony, 91. His Death and Character, 297.

Bradſtreet (Mr. *Simon*) ſent Agent to the Court of *England*, 332. His Death and Character, 557.

Brewſter (Mr. *William*) puts himſelf at the Head of the firſt Colony for *New-England*, 79. His Death and Character, 211.

Briſtol (New) deſcribed, 594.

Browniſts, their Opinions, 61. Their Sufferings, 63. Several of them remove to *Holland*, 69.

Brown (Robert) his Life and Character, 58.

Bulkly (Mr. *Peter*) his Death and Character, 302.

Burroughs (Reverend Mr. *George*) his Trial for Witchcraft, 501. His dying Behaviour, 515.

Burton (Mr.) his Sufferings, 150.

C.

Cambridge (*N.E.*) deſcribed, 582. The Univerſity, 181, 184, 374, 583.

Canada deſcribed, 459. Sir *William Phips*'s unfortunate Expedition againſt it, 460. Another Expedition, 603.

Canoe (*Indian*) deſcrib'd, 26.

Canonicus, Sachem of the *Narrhaganſets* defies the *Engliſh*, 93.

Cape Breton yielded to the *French*, 577.

Carrier (*Martha*) executed for Witchcraft, 518.

Carver (Mr. *John*) firſt Governor of *Plimouth*, 83. His Death and Character, 90.

Caſco ſurpriz'd by the *Indians*, 466.

Caſtle Iſland with the Fort deſcrib'd, 585.

Cattle (neat) firſt brought into *New-England*, 106.

Charles Town deſcribed, 584.

Charter for *Plimouth* obtain'd by Mr. *Winſlow*, 105. Charter of the *Maſſachuſet* Bay, 617. Charters of the ſeveral Provinces taken from them, 415. The *Maſſachuſet* Agents ſollicit the Reſtoration of theirs, 474. They obtain a new one 477. The old and new Charter compared, 478.

Catechiſm abſtract of a Popiſh one for the *Indians*, 266.

Chauncey (Rev. Mr. *Char.*) his Death and Character, 371.

China. Some Parts of *America* peopled from thence, 8. Reaſons for it, 9.

Chriſtiſon (*Wenlock*) condemn'd for Quakeriſm, but pardoned, 314.

Chub (Capt.) Governor of *Pemmaquid* Fort, 550. Surrenders it to the *French* 551.

Church the Method of the firſt Planters forming one, 126. Of their Admiſſion of Members, 128. The Number of Churches in *Boſton*, 589. Their Church Covenant, 126.

Church Diſcipline. The Platform abridged (Appendix Numb. 2.) wherein the preſent Clergy differ from it, 273, 274.

Cod (Cape) deſcribed, 16.

College (*Harvard*) its Foundation, 181. The Method of Education, and of taking

king Degrees, 185. The Duty of the Preſident and Fellows, 184. New College built, 374. The preſent State of the College, 583.

Colony (*vid.*) *Planters.* The Riſe of the firſt *Plimouth* Colony, 76. Their Voyage to *N. England*, 80. The firſt Colony of the *Maſſachuſet* Bay, 125. The ſecond Colony, 132. Their Hardſhips, 133.

Columbus his Voyage to *America*, 10.

Confederation. Articles between the four grand Settlements of *New-England*, 203.

Confeſſion of Faith of *Ponampam* an *Indian* Convert, 237. *Savoy* Confeſſion approved by the *New-England* Synod, 410.

Confeſſion of a Wizard, 530.

Congregational Principles, 73. Their Platform of Diſcipline (Append. Num. 2.)

Connecticut, the firſt Settlement, 146. The Hardſhips they ſuffer'd the firſt Winter, 147. United with *Newhaven*, 341. Deſcription of both Colonies, 596.

Corn (*Indian*) the manner of planting it, 569.

Cory (*Giles*) preſs'd to Death, 522. His Wife executed for Witchcraft, 521.

Cotton (Rev. Mr. *John*) arrives at *New-England*, 138. Choſen Aſſiſtant at *Boſton*, *ib.* Is ill treated by the *Antinomians*, 168. His Death and Character, 285.

Covenant (Church) of the firſt Planters, 126. Of the converted *Indians*, 235.

Council of *New-England*, their Powers, 604.

Cradock (Mr.) firſt Governor of the *Maſſachuſet* Colony, 124.

Croſs in the Banner; its Lawfulneſs diſputed, 142.

Cudworth (Capt. *James*) his Letter concerning the Governments Proceedings againſt the Quakers, 317.

Cuſtoms and Manners of *New-England*, 613.

D.

Davenport (Rev. Mr. *John*) his Death and Character, 369.

Declaration of the Gentlemen at *Boſton* at the head of the Revolution, 433.

Deerfield Fight, 386.

Degrees conferr'd by the College, 186.

Dennis (*William*) executed for *Browniſm*, 68.

Diamond (*John*) tortur'd to Death by the *Indians*, 486.

Diſcipline (vid.) *Church.*

Dudley (*Tho.*) Eſq; Sen. his Death and Character, 288.

288. *Dudley* (Jun.) Governor of *New-England*, 420.

Dummer (Mr. *Shubael*) ſhot dead at his own Door, 483.

Dunſtan (*Hannah*) her Bravery, 553.

Dunſtar (Mr. *Henry*) Preſident of *Harvard* College reſigns, 289.

E.

Earthquakes in *N. England*, 181, 339.

Eaſtham built, 212.

Eaſty (*Mary*) executed for Witchcraft, 519. Her moving Letter to the Court, 520.

Eaton (*Theoph.*) his Death and Character, 299.

Eliot (Rev. Mr. *John*) arrives at *N. England*, 135. Attempts the Converſion of the *Indians*, 222. His great Labours in the Miſſionary Work, 230, 239. His Death and Character, 470.

Endicott (Mr.) ſent to *N. England* to prepare a Settlement for the *Maſſachuſet* Planters, 124. His Death and Character, 346.

Engliſh (vid.) *Colony* and *Planters*) three *Engliſh* hang'd for the Murder of one *Indian*, 180. Their Wars with the *Indians* (vid.) *War*. The Number of the *Engliſh* in *N. England*, and their Military Strength, 600. Their Trade, 696. Religion, 608. Cuſtoms and Manners, 613. Their Loyalty, 616.

F.

Fenwick (Mr.) arrives at *N. England*, and builds *Say Brook Fort*, 148, 149.

Fire in the new Settlement at *Plimouth*, 107.

French make War againſt *N. England*, 424. Supply the *Indians* with Warlike Stores, 546. Take and demoliſh Fort *William* and *Henry*, 551. A Squadron of *French* Men of War alarm the Coaſt, 555. Are included in the Peace of *Ryſwick*, 559.

G.

Gardiner (Sir *Chriſtoph.*) his Story, 135.

Good (*Sarah*) executed for Witchcraft, 513.

Gorges (Capt.) ſettles in the *Maſſachuſet* Bay, 103. But breaks up, 105.

Gorton (*Sam.*) his Story, 179.

Goſnold (Capt. *Barthol.*) his Voyage to North *America*, 15.

Goſpel (vid.) *Society*,

Government of *N. England*, the Revolution of it, 429. The Alterations it underwent by the new Charter, 478. The Civil Government at preſent, 604.

Grave, Deſcription of an *Indian* Grave, 29.

Greenſmith (Mrs.) executed for Witchcraft, 339.

Greenville (Sir *Rich.*) his Voyage to North *America*, 14.

Greenwood (Mr.) his Sufferings and Death, 67.

Grievances of the People of *N. England* under the Adminiſtration of Sir *William Andros*, 433.

H.

Hampſhire new planted, 153. Deſcribed, 578.

Hiaccomes, an *Indian* Convert, his Courage and Conſtancy in the Chriſtian Faith, 244.

Higginſon (Rev. Mr. *Francis*) arrives at *New-England*, 125. His Death and Character, 130.

Hingham, the Commotions there, 213.

Hoar (Dr. *Leonard*) Preſident of *Harvard* College reſigns, 373.

Hobamock, an *Indian* comes to live among the *Engliſh*, 92.

Hobamocko, an *Indian* Deity, 33.

Hooker (Rev. Mr, *Tho.*) his Death and Character, 270.

Hopkins (*Edw.*) his Death and Character, 300.

Hunt (Capt.) his Treachery to the *Indians*, 20.

Hutchinſon (Mrs.) her ſingular Opinions, 166. Occaſions a Faction in the State, 167. Her Examination and Behaviour before the Magiſtrates, 176. She is baniſh'd, 177. And retiring to *Hebgate*, is murder'd with her whole Family by the *Indians*, 178.

I.

Jacobs (*George*) Sen. executed for Witchcraft by the Evidence of his Grand-Daughter, 517. She recants, ib.

James I. King of *England* his Behaviour towards the Puritans, 70.

Japan. *America* peopled from thence, 8.

Impropriations, the buying them ſuppreſs'd by A. B. *Laud*, and the Money adjudged to the King, 119.

Independants, their Principles, 73. Their Platform of Diſcipline (Appendix Numb. 2.) their manner of gathering

gathering Churches, 126. Their Church Covenant, 127. Their ancient manner of admitting Members into their Churches, 128. Their preſent Method, 275, 589.

Indians deſcribed, 24. Their Dreſs, 16, 17, 87, 88. Their Diſpoſition and Way of living, 25. Their Houſes, Food, the Diſeaſes that are moſt fatal to them; their Method of curing the ſick, 26, 27, 28. Their Funerals, 29. Their Mournings, 30. Their diviſion of Time, *ib.* Their Religion, 31. Their Marriages, 38. Their Civil Conſtitution, 39. Their Language, 44. Their manner of ſaluting the *Engliſh*, 96. Commotions among them, 269. They make War with the *Engliſh*, 156, 376, 423. The Weſtern *Indians* ſubdued, 399. The Eaſtern *Indians* ſupported by the *French*, 546. They make Peace, 560. Four of their Kings come to *England*, 602. Their Speech to the Queen, *ib.*

Indian Converts. The Hiſtory of their Converſion, 221. A Body of them being civilized, build a Town, 226. They make Laws for themſelves, *ib.* 229. Their Form of Government, 235. A Confeſſion of Faith of one of them, 237. They are gathered into a Chriſtian Church, 239. An Abſtract of two of their Sermons, 240. Dr. *Increaſe Mather's* Letter to Profeſſor *Leuſden* about them, 251. Their Hiſtory continued to the preſent time, 255. Their Vices, 259. Their Fidelity to the *Engliſh* in their War with *Philip*, 406.

Inhabitants (Engliſh) of *N. England*, their Numbers and Military Strength, 600. Their Trade, 606. Religion, 608. Cuſtoms and Manners, 613. Their Political Intereſts, 615. And Loyalty, 616.

K.

Kichtan, an *Indian* Deity, 92.

L.

Lad (Mr. *Tho.*) proſecuted for being preſent at the Repetition of Sermons in his own Lodgings, 72.

Lathrop (Capt.) killed with his whole Party, 386.

Laud (A. Bp.) Innovations in the Church in his time, 118. His Severity againſt the Puritans, 119, 150.

Laws of the *Indians* when civilized, 228,229. Againſt the Anabaptiſts, 284. Laws againſt the Quakers, 292, 306. Laws of the Country abridg'd, (Appendix Num. 4.)

Leddra (*Will.*) executed for Quakeriſm, 313.

Lee (Rev. Mr. *Sam.*) flies to *N. England*, and dies in his Return, 419.

Leighton Alexander D D.) his Sufferings, 119.

Lenthal (Mr.) recants his Oppoſition to the *N. England* Diſcipline, 179.

Leverett (*John*) his Death and Character, 409.

Liberty of Conſcience, the preſent Magiſtrates and Miniſters of *N. England* for it, 610.

Library at *Cambridge* (*N. E.*) an Account of it, 183, 583.

Long-Iſland deſcribed, with its firſt Inhabitants, 189.

Loyalty of the *N. Engliſh*, 616.

Lyford his Seditious Practices againſt the firſt Planters, 106. He is baniſh'd, 107.

M.

Main (Province of) firſt peopled, 153.

Maquas, K. *Philip* attempts to engage them againſt the *Engliſh*, 394. They ruin his Affairs, 395. Some of their Princes come into *England*, 602.

Marthas (*alias Martin's*) Vineyard planted, 199. The Natives converted by Mr. *Mayhew*, 244.

Martin (*Suſanna*) her Trial for Witchcraft, 509.

Maſſachuſet Bay. derivation of the Name, 580. Capt. *Standiſh* trades with the *Indians* in the Bay, 94. Several unſucceſsful Attempts to make Settlements, 95, 103, 111. The riſe of the preſent Settlement, 122. Abſtract of their Charter, *ib.* Voyage of the firſt Colony; their Strength and Numbers, 125. The Province deſcribed, 579.

Maſſaſoiet (an *Indian* Prince) deſcribed, 88. Entertain'd by the Governor of *Plimouth*, 89. Makes an Alliance with them, *ib.* Entertains Mr. *Winſlow* and *Hopkins* at his Court, 91. Falls ſick and recovers by Mr. *Winſlow's* Medicines 98. His Gratitude, 99.

Mather (Rev. Mr. *Rich.*) ſettles at *Dorcheſter*, 146. His Death and Character, 368.

Mather (*Increaſe* D D.) his Letter to Dr. *Leuſden*, concerning the Converſion of

the *Indians*, 251. Choſe Rector of *Harvard* College, 413. And created Dr. of Divinity, 487.

Mather (*Cotton*) D. D. publiſhes the Trials of the Witches by Command of the Governor, 501. His Account of the Circumſtances of the *afflicted Perſons*, 498. Remarks on his Trials, 512. Acknowledges things were carried too far, 538. He declares againſt all ſorts of Perſecution for Conſcience ſake, 330, 611. His Account of the Sufferings of the Quakers, 364.

Mayhew (Mr. *Tho.*) Sen. obtains a Grant of *Mather*'s Vineyard, 199. Aſſiſts his Son in converting the Natives, 249.

Mayhew (Rev. Mr. *Tho.*) Jun. his Succeſs in converting the *Indians*, 244. His Method of Inſtruction, 247. His Death and Character, 248.

Mayhew (Experience) his Travels among the *Indians*, 256.

Merrimack River deſcribed, 582.

Meteor in *N. England*, 350.

Miniſters. A Liſt of ſuch who being ſilenced by A. Bp. *Laud*, ſettled in *New-England* before the Year 1640, 195. A Liſt of thoſe who came over after the Uniformity Act in 1662, 338 Diſſenting Miniſters of *London*'s Letter in favour of the *Anabaptiſts*, 354. Another in favour of the *Quakers*, 362. Their Method of Ordination in *N. England*, 611.

Miſtick Fort taken by the *Engliſh*, 160.

Mitark, Prince of the Gayhead, his Death and Character, 413.

Mitchel (Rev. Mr. *Jonathan*) his Death and Character, 352.

Money. New *Engliſh* its value, 608. *Indian* Money, 42.

Morton (Mr.) his Villany, 112. Inſtructs the *Indians* in the uſe of Fire-Arms, *ib.* Taken Priſoner by Capt, *Standiſh*, and ſent to *England*. 113.

Moſe, an *Indian* Beaſt deſcribed, 573.

N.

Narrhaganſets, their manner of declaring War, 93. They joyn the *Engliſh* againſt the *Peguots*, 160. They break with the *Engliſh*, 388. Their chief Fort taken by Storm, 389.

Natick, an *Indian* Town deſcrib'd, 234.

Nations, names of ſeveral *European* Nations in *America*, 6. Names of the *Indian*

Indian Nations before the *Engliſh* took Poſſeſſion of it, 22.

New-England its Name, 19. *Indian* Natives, 22. Situation, 563. Climate, 564. Soil, 565. Lakes and Rivers, 566. Product, 567. Deſcription of the moſt conſiderable Towns, 577. Its preſent Inhabitants, 606.

New Hampſhire deſcribed, 578.

Newhaven Settlement, 152. Unites with *Connecticut*, 341. The County deſcribed, 598.

Newman (Rev. Mr. *Sam.*) his Death and Character, 341.

New Scotland (vid.) *Acadia*.

Newyork taken from the *Dutch*, 342.

North. Northern Nations paſs into *America*, 4. And when 8.

Norton (Rev. Mr. *John*) his Death and Character, 340.

Nurſe (*Rebecca*) executed for Witchcraft, 513.

O.

Oakes (*Urian*) his Death and Character, 412.

Oldham his Seditious Practices, 106. Runs the Gauntlet, and is baniſh'd, 107. His Death, 149.

Owen (*John*) D. D. ſhips his Effects for *N. England*, but is the ſtopt by the Court, 338.

P.

Patridge (Rev. Mr. *Ralph*) his Death and Character, 301.

Peace Articles between the *Engliſh* and *Indians*, 491, 560.

Peirce (*William*) his Treachery againſt the Colony, 105.

Peirce (Capt.) cut to Pieces by the *Indians*, with his whole Party, 392.

Pemmoquid Fort deſcribed, 488. Taken by the *French* and demoliſh'd, 551.

Penry (Rev. Mr. *John*) his Sufferings and Death, 65.

Pequots diſturb the *Connecticut* Planters, 149. Their Situation, 156. Their War with the *Engliſh*, 157. They are diſpers'd, and their Territory annex'd to the *Engliſh* Settlement, 163.

Phœnicians, whether they ſail'd into *America*, 2.

Philip Prince of the *Wompanoags* renews his Alliance with the *Engliſh*, 334, 370. The Riſe of the War between him and the *Engliſh*, 376. He begins Acts of Hoſtility, 379. He is beſieg'd, but eſcapes by a Strata-

Stratagem, 382. His Followers desert him, 394. His Death and Character, 399.

Phips (Sir *William*) finds a rich *Spaniſh* Wreck, 420. Petitions K. *James* II. for reſtoring his Country's Charter, 428. His unfortunate Expedition to *Canada*, 460. He is made Governor of *N. England*, 480. His Death and Character, 544.

Plantations (*N. England*) their Equity, 154.

Planters. From whence the firſt Planters came, 76. Their Voyage to *N. England*, 80. They enter into Society, 81. And look out for a Place of Settlement, 83. They skirmiſh with the *Indians*, 85. And fix at *Paluxet* Bay, 86. Their Hardſhips, 87. They palliſado their Town, 93. A Famine among them, 95, 103. Their Numbers before the Year 1640, 193.

Plimouth (New) built, 86. In danger of being burnt, 107. A Deſcription of the Town, as it was in the Year 1624, 108. Diviſion of Land to each Inhabitant, 113. The County deſcribed, 592.

Pocaſſet. Queen drowned, 398.

Powaws, or (*Indian* Prieſts) their Character and Art, 35. Incantations over the Sick, 99. Averſion to the Chriſtian Religion, 233, 247.

Prince (Mr. *Tho.*) his Death and Character, 375.

Priſoners. The *Indians* Cruelty to their *Engliſh* Priſoners, 453.

Procter (*John*) executed for Witchcraft, 516. His Letter to the Miniſters of *Boſton*, 534.

Proteſtants foreign, their Diſpoſition with Relation to the Civil Wars of *England*, 218.

Providence and *Warwick* Plantations. The Manners of the Inhabitants, 595.

Prynne (Mr.) his Sufferings, 150.

Pſalms. New *Engliſh* Verſion, by whom compoſed, 187.

Puritans; their Original, 47. Their Sufferings, 50. Many of their Miniſters deprived, 54, 71. Interceſſions for them without Effect, 55. Their Expectations from K. *James* I. fruſtrated, 69. Their Sufferings under A. Bp. *Laud*, 119, 150. Are prohibited going out of the Kingdom, 151.

Pyrates executed at *Boſton*, 374.

Q.

Quaboag, the *Engliſh* routed

routed there, 384.

Quakers. Their Riſe, 291. Penal Laws againſt them, 292, 296, 304, 306. Their Sufferings and Behaviour under them. 302. Put to Death, 308. The Government's Apology for themſelves, 310, 328. A ſtop put to their Sufferings, 315. Reaſons of the Government's Severity towards them, 322. The Quakers complain to K. *Charles* II. 358. And to the Diſſenting Miniſters at *London*, who write to *N. England* in their Favour, 36. The preſent State of their Caſe, 365.

Quebec deſcribed, 459. Sir *William Phips*'s Expedition againſt it, 460.

R.

Rehoboth deſcribed, 594.

Religion of the firſt Planters, 114. The State of Religion in *England* under the Adminiſtration of A. Bp. *Laud*, 117, 150. The Religion of the preſent Inhabitants, 608.

Revolution of the Government of *N. England*, 429.

Rhode Iſland deſcribed, 178, 595. Planted by *Antinomians*, ib.

Robinſon (Rev. Mr. *John*) ſettles at *Leyden*, 72. His Congregation reſolve to remove to ſome Part of *America* 76, 77. They ſend Agents into *England* to prepare for their Voyage, *ib.* Mr. *Robinſon*'s Farewel Diſcourſe to the Planters, 78. His Death and Character, 110.

Robinſon (*William*) executed for Quakeriſm, 308.

Rogers (*Rob.*) tortur'd to Death by the *Indian*, 454.

S.

Sachems (*Indian*) their Power, 39. Their Averſion to the *Chriſtian Religion*, 231.

Salem deſcribed, 581.

Samoſet (an *Indian*) welcomes the *Engliſh* to *America*, 87. His Dreſs and Entertainment, *ib.*

Savages their Dreſs, 16. *vid. Indians.*

Savoy Confeſſion of Faith approv'd by a *N. Engliſh* Synod, 410.

Sauſaman (*John*) his Death, and the Execution of his Murderers, 377.

Say and *Brook* (Lord) his Title to the Lands about *Connecticut* River, 148.

Scythians deſcribed, 5. They paſs into *America*, 4.

Separation from the Church of *England* it Riſe, 51.

Sheppard (Rev. Mr. *Tho.*) his Death and Character, 277.

Skelton (Rev. Mr.) arrives at *New-England*, 125. His Death, 140.

Small-Pox fatal to the *Indians*, 139.

Smith (Capt.) his Voyage to *N. England*, 19.

Snake Rattle deſcribed, 574.

Society for propagating the Goſpel in *N. England*, their Conſtitution, 261, 263. A Liſt of the Original and preſent Members, 261, 264. Their Eſtate and Method of diſpoſing of their Revenues, 263. Of the Society for propagating the Goſpel according to the Manner of the Church of *England*, 609.

Squanto (an *Indian*) joyns the *Engliſh*, 89. His Sham Plot, 94. His Death and Character, 97.

Standiſh (Capt.) reduces *Coubatant* with 14 Men, and the neighbouring Sachems, 92. His Death and Character, 290.

Stevenſon (*Marmaduke*) executed for Quakeriſm, 308.

Stone (Capt.) murder'd by the *Indians*, 139.

Stoughton (Deputy Governor) proſecutes the War againſt the *Indians*, 545.

Students, their ſeveral Claſſes and Degrees, 185.

Synods, their Nature, according to the Independants, 170. The firſt Synod of *N. England*, 171. The ſecond, 272.

T.

Tartars paſs into *America*, 6.

Thacker (Mr.) preſerv'd from Shipwreck, 145. His Death, 367.

Trade of *N. England*, 606.

Truce concluded between the *Engliſh* and *Indians*, 470.

V.

Vane (Sir *Henry*) Jun. Governor of the *Maſſachuſet* Bay, 144. His Character and Death, 145.

Vdall (Mr) his Sufferings and Death, 65.

Virginia. its Name and ancient extent, 14. Planted, 17. A Maſſacre, 95, 200.

Vniformity, a Liſt of Miniſters that ſettled in *N. England* after its taking place, 338.

Union of the four grand Settlements of *N. England*, 203.

W.

Wardwell (*Samuel*) executed for Witchcraft, 519.

Wars Civil of *England*, their Riſe, 218. They hinder the Growth of the Plantations, 191.

War with the *Pequots*, 157. With *Philip*, 376, 379. With the Eaſtern *Indians*, 401, 423, 450, 546.

Wells beſieged, 483.

Wequaſh (an *Indian* Convert) his Death, 161.

Weſton (Mr.) attempts a Settlement in the *Maſſachuſet* Bay, 95. Is reduced to Miſery, 97. Relieved by Capt. *Standiſh*. But breaks up, 100, 102. His further Misfortunes and Death, 102, 104.

Wheelwright (Rev. Mr.) his Seditious Sermon, 169. He is baniſh'd, 174.

Wheelwright Pond, the *Engliſh* defeated there, 468.

Whitgift (A. Bp.) his Severity towards the Puritans, 53. The Lord Treaſurer's Opinion of his Conduct, 55. His Death and Character, 70.

Willard (*John*) executed for Witchcraft, 516.

Williams (Mr. *Roger*) his Character, 140. His ſingular Opinions, 141. Separates from the new *Engliſh* Churches, and is baniſh'd, 142.

William and *Henry* Fort deſcribed, 488. Taken and demoliſhed, 551.

Wilſon (Rev. Mr. *John*) arrives in *N. England*, 133. His Death and Character, 347.

Winſlow (*Edward*) goes on an Embaſſy to *Maſſaſoiet*, 91. His Reception, 92. His Death and Character, 290.

Winthrop (*John*) Sen. Governor of *Maſſachuſet* Bay, 132. His Speech occaſioned by the Commotions at *Hingham*, 216. His Death and Character, 275.

Winthrop (*John*) Jun. his Death and Character, 468.

Witchcrafts, their Riſe in *New-England*, 495. Circumſtances of the afflicted, 498. Trials of ſeveral of them, 501. The Number of thoſe who were executed, with their dying Behaviour, 512. Several of the accuſed make their Eſcape, 523. Afflicted Perſons ſent for to *Andover* to diſcover Witches, 527. They over-act their Part, which

which opens the Peoples Eyes, 529. Recantation of the confessing Witches, 531. Confessions extorted, 534. Recantation of the Jury and others, 537.

Wren (Bishop of *Ely*) his Severity against the Puritans, 121.

Y.

York (*New*) taken from the *Dutch*, 342. The Town of *York* surprized, and taken by the *Indians*, 481.

FINIS.

MVSEVM BRITAN NICVM

BOOKS *printed for* John Clark, Richard Ford, *and* Robert Cruttenden.

THE Pſalms of *David*, imitated in the Language of the New Teſtament, and applied to the Chriſtian State and Worſhip. By the Rev. Mr. *Iſaac Watts*. The ſecond Edition, 12° Price 1 *s.* 6 *d.*

A Collection of Tunes, ſuited to the various Metres in Mr. *Watts*'s Imitation of the Pſalms of *David*, or Dr. *Patrick*'s Verſion; fit to be bound up with either. To which is added an Introduction to Pſalmody in a new Method; with ſeveral Tunes, never before publiſhed. 12° Price 1 *s.*

Horæ Lyricæ. Poems chiefly of the Lyric kind, in three Books. 1. Sacred to Devotion and Duty. 2. To Virtue, Honour and Friendſhip. 3. To the Memory of the Dead. By *Iſaac Watts*. The third Edition.

A Help to true Spelling and Reading: Or, A very eaſy Method for the Teaching Children, or elder Perſons, wherein moſt of the Words in our *Engliſh* Bible are brought under ſeveral eaſy Rules. By the Help whereof, by God's Bleſſing, Children may be brought on with Delight, and taught in much leſs time than is uſual, diſtinctly to read the Holy Scriptures. By *William Scoffin*. The third Edition.

Preparing for the Preſs

Several valuable Manuſcripts of the late Reverend and Learned *JOHN OWEN*, D. D. ſometime Vice-Chancellor of *Oxford*, and Dean of *Chriſt Church*, never before publiſhed. To which will be added, all his Sermons that have been already printed: Together with ſeveral ſmall Tracts, very ſcarce; as alſo, ſome Memoirs of his Life, and a Preface giving an Account of the whole.

N. B. The Contents of this Work may be ſeen in the *Propoſals* for printing the ſame (in One Volume in *Folio*) which may be had *Gratis* of the Undertaker *John Clark*, at the *Bible* and *Crown* in the *Poultry* near *Cheapſide*.